THE

Palace of Pleasure

ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLTO, CINHTIO, STRAPAROLA,
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,
AND OTHERS

DONE INTO ENGLISH
BY WILLIAM PAINTER

NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME
BY JOSEPH JACOBS

VOL. II.

LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND
MDCCCXC
## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

### VOLUME II.

---

**TOME I.—Continued.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NOVEL</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>XLVII, GALGANO AND MADONNA MINOCIA</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLVIII, DUKE OF VENICE AND RICCIARDO</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XLIX, FILENIO SISTERNO</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L, MULETEER'S WIFE</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LI, KING OF NAPLES</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LII, PRINCESS OF FLANDERS</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIII, AMADOUR AND FLORINDA</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIV, DUKE OF FLORENCE</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LV, FRANCIS I, AND COUNT GUILLAUME</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LVI, LADY OF PAMPELUNA</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LVII, STRANGE PUNISHMENT OF ADULTERY</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LVIII, PRESIDENT OF GRENOBLE</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIX, GENTLEMAN OF PERCHE</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LX, GENTLEMAN THAT DIED OF LOVE</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXI, LADY OF THE FRENCH COURT</td>
<td>113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXII, ROLANDINE</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXIII, THE PRUDENT LADY</td>
<td>135+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXIV, LADY OF TOURS</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LXV, DOCTOR OF LAWS</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

***TOME II.***

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TITLE</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>DEDICATION</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CONTENTS</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AUTHORITIES</td>
<td>154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. AMAZONS</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOVEL</td>
<td>PAGE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------------------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. ALEXANDER AND SISIGAMBIS</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. TIMOCLIA OF THEBES</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. ARIOBARZANES</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. ARISTOTEMUS THE TYRANT</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. TANAQUIL</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. SOPHONISBA</td>
<td>236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. PORIS AND THEOXENA</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. LADY OF HIDRUSA</td>
<td>256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. EMPRESS FAUSTINA</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI. TWO MAIDS OF CARTAGE</td>
<td>264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. LETTERS OF TRAJAN</td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. LAMIA, FLORA, AND LAIS</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. ZENOBIA</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV. EUPHEMIA AND ACHARISTO</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVI. MARCHIONESS OF MONFERRATO</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVII. ANSALDO AND DIANORA</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVIII. MITHRIDANES AND NATHAN</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIX. KATHARINE OF BOLOGNA</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XX. THORELLO AND SALADIN</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXI. ANNE OF HUNGARY</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXII. ALEXANDER DE MEDICI</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE PALACE OF
Pleasure Beautified
adorned and well furnished
with pleasing Histories and
excellent Novels, selected out
of divers good and commendable Authors

By William Painter, Clarke
of the Ordinance and Armorie

 작품 perused corrected
and augmented

1575
IMPRINTED AT LONDON
by Thomas Marthe.

VOL. II.
The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FORTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

A gentleman called Galgano, long time made sute to Madonna Minoccia: her husband sir Stricca (not knowing the same) divers times praised and commended Galgano, by reason whereof, in the absence of her husband, she sent for him, and yielded herself vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her husbande had spoken of him, and for recompence he refused to dishonest her.

In the Citie of Siena in Italie there was a rich yong Gentleman called Galgano, borne of noble birth, actiue, and wel trained in al kinde of exercife, valiaunt, braue, stout and curteous, in the maners and orders of all countries verye skilfull. This Galgano loued a Gentlewoman of Siena named Madonna Minoccia, the wyfe of sir Stricca a comely knight, and wore in his apparell the colour and deuifes of his Lady, bearing the same vpon his helmet and armour, in all Iuistes, Tourneyes and triumphes, observing noble feaftes and banquettes for her fake. But for all those costly, sumptuous and noble practises, this Lady Minoccia in no wyse would giue eare vnto his sutes. Wherfore Galgano at his wittes ende, was voyde of aduise what to do or faye, seing the great crueltie and rigor raigning in her breste, vnto whom hee dayle prayed for better succeffe and fortune than to himselfe. There was no feaft, banquet, triumph, or mariage, but Galgano was there, to do her humble seruice, and that daye his minde was not pleased and contented, wherein he had not seene her that had his louing harte in full possession. Very many times (like a Prince
that coueted peace) he fente Ambaffadours vnto her, wyth presents and messages, but she (a proude and scornefull Princeffe) dayned neither to heare them or receiue them. And in this state stode this passionate Louer a longe time, tormented with the exceeding hote Loue and fealtie that he bare her. And many times making his reuerent complaints to loue, did say: "Ah Loue, my deare and fouereaigne Lorde, how cruel and hard harted art thou, how vnmercifully dealeft thou with me, rather how deaf be thine eares, that canst not recline the fame to my nightly complaintes, and dailye afflictions; How chaunceth it that I do in this maner confume my joyfull dayes with pining plaintes? Why doest thou suffer me to Loue, and not to be beloved?" And thus oftentimes remembringe the crueltie of loue, and his ladies tyrannye, hee began to dye in maner like a wight replete with defpaire. But in fuite, he determined paciently to abide the good time and pleafure of Loue, still hoping to finde mercie: and dailye gaue himfelfe to practife and frequent thofe things that might be acceptable and pleafant to his Lady, but shee ftill persisted inexorable. It chaunced that Sir Stricca and his fayre wyfe, for their folace and recreation, repaired to one of their houses hard by Siena: and upon a time, Galgano paffing by with a Sparhauke on his fitte, made as though he went on Hauking, but of purpose onely to fee his lady. And as he was going by thehoufe, sir Stricca espied him, and went forth to meete him, and familiarly taking him by the hand, prayed him to take parte of his fupper with his wyfe and him: for which curtesie Galgano gaue him thanckes, and faid: "Sir, I do thancke you for your curtesie request, but for this time I pray you to hold me excufed, because I am going about certaine affayres very requifite and necessary to be done." Then fayde sir Stricca: "At leafe wife drinke with mee before you depart." But giving him thanckes he bad him farewell. Maifter Stricca feing that she could not caufe him to tary, toke his leaue, and retourned into his houfe. Galgano gone from maifter Stricca, fayd to himfelfe: "Ah, beaft that I am, why did I not accept his offer? Why should shamefaftnes let me from the fight of her, whom I loue better than all the world besides." And as he was thus pensife in complaints his fpaniells sprong a Partrich, wherat he let flee his
Hauke, and the Partrich flying into Sir Stricca his garden, his Hauke pursued and seaffed vpon the same. Maister Stricca and his Ladye hearinge that paftime, ranne to the garden window, to see the killing of the Partrich: and beholding the valiante skirmifhe betweene the foule and the hauke, the lady asked whose hauke it was: her husband made aunfwere that he knew well inouthe the owner, by the goodnesse and hardines of the fame. "For the owner of this hauke (quoth hee) is the trimmef and moft valiaunt gentleman in all Siena, and one indued with befte qualities." The lady demaunde what he was? "Maister Galgano (faid her husband,) who euen now paffed by the gate, and I prayed him very earnestly to supper, but hee woulde not be intreated. And truly wyfe, he is the comliest gentleman, and mofte vertuous perfonage, that euer I knewe in my life." With thofe wordes they wente from the windowe to supper: and Galgano, when he had lured his Hauke, departed awaye. The Lady marked thofe words and fixed them in minde. It fortuned within a while after, that Sir Stricca was by the state of Siena fent in ambaffege to Perugia, by reafon wherof, his Lady at home alone, fo fone as her husband had taken his journey, fent her moft decrete and truffie maide, to intreat maifter Galgano, to come and speake with her. When the meffage was done to Galgano, (if his heart were on a merie pinne, or whether his spirits dulled with continuall sorrowe were againe reuied, they knowe that moft hauel felte the painefull pangues of Loue, and they alfo whose flefh haue beene pearced wyth the amorous arrows of the little boy Cupide:) he made aunfwere that hee would willingly come, rendringe thancke both to the maiftrefle maide, and the one for her paine, and the other for her good remembrance. Galgano underftanding that Sir Stricca was gone to Perugia, in the eueninge at conuenient time, repaired to the house of her whose fight he loued better than his owne eyes. And being come before his Lady, with great submiflion and reuerence hee saluted her, (like thofe whose hartes do throb, as foretellinge the poiffeffion of good tournes and benefites, after which with longe fute and travaile they haue aspired) wherewith the Lady delighted, very pleasantly took him by the hande, and imbracing him, faid: "Welcome mine owne sweet Galgano, a hundred times I say wel-
come.” And for the time with kisses, makinge truice with their affections, the lady called for confidence and wyne. And when they had dranke and refreshed themselues, the lady toke him by the hande and said: “My sweete Galgano, night beginneth to passe awaye, and the time of sleepe is come, therefore let us yeld our selues to the service and commandment of our very good Ladye, madame Cytherea, for whole fake I intreated you to come hither.” Galgano aunswered, that he was very wel contented. Being within the chamber, after much pleasure take and loving discourse betwene them, the Lady did put of her clothes, and went to bed. Galgano being somewhat bashfull, was percyued of the Lady, vnto whom she said: “Me thincke, Galgano, that you be fearful and flamefaft. What do you lacke? Do I not please you? Doth not my personage content you? Have you not the thing which you defire?” “Yes madame,” said Galgano: “God himself could not do me a greater pleasure, than to suffer me to be cleped within your armes.” And reasoning in this fort, he put of his clothes also, and laide himself by her, whom he had couetted and desired of long time. Being in the bed, he said: “Madame, I befeech you graunte me one resquest.” “What is that, Galgano?” (quoth she.) “It is this, madame,” said Galgano: “I do much maruell, why this night aboue all other, you have sent for mee: considering how long I haue bin a futer vnto you, and although I haue prosecuted my fute, by great expence and travaile, yet you would never yelde before now: what hath moued you now thus to do?” The Lady answered: “I wil tell you sir: true it is, that not many daies agoe, passing by this houfe, with your Hauke on your fitle, my husband told me that fo fone as he faw ye, he wente oute to mee te ye, of purpose to intreate you to supper, but you would not tarrie: then your Hauke pursued a Partrich, even into my garden, and I feing the Hauke fo egerly feasing vpon the fame, demaunded of my husband whose Hauke it was. He told me that the Hauke did belong to the moft excellent yong man of all Siena: and that he neuer in all his life knewe a gentleman better accomplishe with all vertues and good qualities, and therewithall gaue vnto you singuler prayse and commendacion. Whereupon hearing him in such wife to prayse you, and knowing
righte well your affectionate minde and disposition towards mee, my hart attached with loue, forced me to fende for you that I mighte hereafter auoyde diſdaine and other scornefull demeaner, to im-peache or hinder your loue: and this briefly is the caufe.” “Is this true?” said Galgano. “Moft certaine and true,” aunſwareed the Lady.” “Was there no other occasion?” “No, verely:” said the lady. “God defend,” (quoth Galgano,) “that I fhould re-compence the curteſie and good will of fo noble a gentleman (as your husband is) with reproch and villany. Is it meete that good turnes fhould be requited with vnkindnes? If euer man had caufe to defende the honor of his vnknowen frende, caufe haue I right good and apte. For now knowinge such a frende, that would by vertuous reportes haue aduaunced me to higher matters, than wherof I am in poſſeſſion, fhould I reward with pollucion of his flocke and wife? No, no, lady! my raginge fute by loue, is by vertue quenched. Vertue onely hath ftaunched the flames of vile affections. Seeke another frende, to glut your lecherous minde. Finde out some other companion, to coole thy difordinate loue. Shal I be diſloyal to him, that hath been faithfull vnto me? Shall I be traytor to him, that frendly hath commended me? What can be more required of humane hearte, or more defired of manlike mind, but wilfull bente, and fixed to do him good, that neuer erft by iuſte defert deferued the fame.” With which wordes fodenly hee lept out of the bed, and when he had furnifhed himſelfe againe with his apparell, hee alſo put vpon him vertuous friendſhip, and takinge his leaue of the Lady, neuer after that time he gaue himſelf to matters of Loue. And maifter Stricca he continually obſerved both with fingular loue and dutiful friendſhip: whereby it is vnſcertaine whether was moſt fingular in him, his continency at the very instante by refrayning that vehement heate of loue, which fo long time with great travaile and coſſe he had purfued, or his regard of friendſhip to fir Stricca vpon wordes of commendacion fpoken behinde his backe. Both no doubt be fingular vertues meete for all men to be obſerved: but the fubduing of his affections furmount-ed and paſſed.
THE FORTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Bindo a notable Architect, and his sonne Ricciardo, with all his familie, from Florence went to dwell at Venice, where being made Citizens for divers monuments by them done there, through ineordinate expences were forced to robbe the Treasure house. Bindo beinge slaine by a policy devised by the Duke and state, Ricciardo by fine subtelties deliuereth himselfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke (by his owne confeffion) understandinge the fleightes, giueth him his pardon and his daughter in marriage.

In the goodly citie of Venice there was once a duke, that was a noble gentleman and of greate experience and wisedome, called Valeriano di meffer Vannozzo Accettani. In the chiefeft Churche of which Citie called San Marco, there was a steple, very faire and sumptuous, and of greatest fame of any thinge at that time that was in Venice, which steple was like to fall downe by reason of certaine faultes and decayes in the foundacion. Wherfore the Duke caufed to be searched thorow out all Italie, some cunning workeman that would take in hand the reparacion and amendemente of the fame; with promife of so much money as he would demaund for doing thereof. Whereupon an excellent Architect of Florence, named Bindo, hearing of this offer, determined to go to Venice for the accomplismente of that worke, and for that purpose with his onelye sonne and wyfe, hee departed Florence. And when he had seene and furueyed the steple, he went straight to the Duke, and told him that he was come thither to offer his service for repayringe of the same, whom the Duke courteously intertayned and prayed him, that he would so fone as he coulde begin that worke. Whereunto Bindo accorded, and wyth great diligence and small time he finisshed the fame, in better forme and surety than it was at the first: which greatly pleased the Duke, and gane Bindo so much money as he demaunded, making him besides a Citizen of Venice, for the maintenaunce of whose state, hee allotted him a sufficient stipend:
afterwards the Duke called him unto him, and declared that he would have a Treasure house made, wherein should be disposed and layde vp all the Treasure and common ornamentes for the furniture of the whole Citie, which Bindo by and by toke vppon him to do, and made it of such singular beautie, as it excelled all the monuments of the Citie, wherein all the said Treasure was bestowed. In which worke hee had framed a stone by cunninge, that mighte be remoued at pleasure, and no man perceiue it: meaning thereby to goe into the Chamber when he liste: whereunto none in all the world was priuie but himselfe. When this Palace and Treasure house was done, he causd all the furnitures of Silkes, hanginges, wrought with Golde, Canapees, clothes of state, riche Chayres, Plate, and other Ornaments of Golde and Siluer to be caried thither, whiche he called La Turpea del Doge, and was kept vnnder fuen keys: whereof four were deliuered to foure of the chiefe Citizens, deputed to that office, which were called Chamberlaynes of the Treasure house, and the fift keye the Duke himselfe did kepe, so that the Chamber could not be opene excepte they were all fuen presente. Nowe Bindo and his famelie dwelling at Venice, and beinge a citizen there, beganne to spende liberallye and to liue a riche and wealthye life, and hys sonne Ricciardo confumed disordinatelye, whereby in space of time, they wanted Garmentes to furnish their bodies, whiche they were not able to maintaine for their inordinate expences: wherefore the father vpon a night calling his sonne vnto him, got a ladder, and a certaine yron instrumente made for the purpofe, and taking also with him a little lime, went to the hole, which Bindo artificially had made, who taking out the stone, crept in, and toke out a faire cup of gold, which was in a closet, and afterward he wente out, cowching the stone againe in due place. And when they were come home, they brake the cup and causd it to be solde by piece meal, in certaine Cities of Lombardie. And in this forte, they maintayned their disordinate life begunne. It chaunced not long after, that a Cardinall arriued at Venice, about affayres with the Duke, and the state, who the more honorablie to receiue him, opened the Treasur e house to take oute certaine furnitures within, as plate, clothes
of state, and other thinges. When the dore was opened, and had taken out the saide necessaries, they founde a cuppe leffe than oughte to be, wherewith the Chamberlaines contended amonge themselues, and wente to the Duke, telling him that there wanted a cuppe: whereat the Duke marueiled, and saide that amonges them it must needs be gone. And after many denialls, and much talke, he willed them to faye nothing, till the Cardinall was departed. When the Cardinall was come, he was receyued with honorable interteignemente, and beinge departed, the Duke sente for the foure Chamberlaines, to consull about the losse of the cup, commaundung them not to departe the Palace before the fame was found, laying that amonge them it muste needes be stolen. These four perssons beinge together, and debating how and by what meanes the cup shoulde be taken away, were at their wittes ende. At length one of them saide: "Let vs consider whether ther bee anye comminge into the Chamber beides the doore." And viewinge it they could not perceiue anye entrée at all. And to prove the fame more effectuallye, they strawed the chamber aboute with fyne fifted chaffe, fetting the fame on fier, which done, they shutte faust the windowes and doores, that the smoke and smoulder might not goe out. The force of which smoke was futche as it ifued through the hole that Bindo made, whereby they perceiued the way howe the robbery was committed, and went to the Duke to tell him what they had done. The duke vnderstanding the faé, wylled them to faye nothing, for that he woulde deniife a pollicie howe to take the theefe: who causd to be brought into the chamber a caldron of pitche, and placed it directly vnder the hole, commaundung that a fyre shoulde be kept daye and night vnder the caldron, that the fame might continually boyle. It come to passe that when the money was spent which the father and sonne had receiued for the cup, one night they went agayne to the hole, and removing the stone, the father went in as he did before, and fell into the caldron of pitche (which continually was boyling there) vp to the waste, and not able to liue any longer, he called his sonne vnto him, and sayde: "Ricciardo myne owne sweete sonne, death hath taken me prysoner, for halfe my body is dead, and my breath also is
ready to departe. Take my head with thee, and burie it in some place that it be not known, which done, commend me to thy mother, whome I pray thee to cherish and comforte, and in any wyfe take hede that waryly and circumpectely thou doe departe from hence: and if any man do aske for me, say that I am gone to Florence about certaine businesse.” The sonne lamentably began to lament his father’s fortune, saying: “Oh deare father, what wicked furie hath thus cruelly deuised sodaine death.” “Content thy selfe, my sonne,” sayd the father, “and be quiet, better it is that one shoulde dye, than twoo, therefore doe what I haue tolde thee, and fare well.” The sonne tooke vp his father’s head, and went his waye, the reste of his bodye remayned in the caldron, like a block without forme. When Ricciardo was come home, he buried his father’s head so well as he could, and afterwardes tolde his mother what was become of his father, who understanding the maner of his death, began piteously to cry out, to whom her sonne holding up his hands, sayd: “Good mother holde your peace, and geue ouer your weeping: for our life is in great perill and daunger, if your outerie be heard. Therefore good mother, quiet yourselfe, for better it were for vs to liue in poore estate, than to die with infame, to the vtter reproche and shame of all our familie.” With whiche woordes he appeased her. In the morning the bodye was founde and caried to the Duke, who maruelled at it, and could not deuise what he should be, but sayd: “Surely there be two that committed this robberie, one of them we haue, let vs imagine how we may take the other.” Then one of the foure Chamberlaines sayd: “I haue found out a trap to cattche the other, if it will pleafe you to heare mine aduise, which is this: Impossible it is, but this theefe that is dead, hath either wife, children, or some kinismen in the citie, and therfore let vs caufe the bodie to be drawn throughout the streates, and geue diligent hede whether anye perfone doe complaine or lament his death: and if any such be found, let him be taken and examined: which is the next way as I suppose, to finde out his companion.” Which being concluded, they departed. The body was drawn throughout the citie with a guard of men attending vpon the same: as the execu-
tioners paffed by the houfe of Bindo, whose carcasse laye vppon
the hurdle, his wyfe ftole at the wyndowe, and feing the body
of her husband fo vfed, made a great outcrie. At whiche noyfe
the fonne fpake to his mother and fayde: “Alas, mother, what
do you?” And beholding his father’s corps vppon the hurdle, he
toke a knife and made a great gafe into his hande, that the
bloud aboundingly iffued out. The guarde hearing the noyfe
that the woman made, ran into the houfe, and asked her what
she lacked. The fonne anfwered: “I was earuing a peece
of ftole with this knife, and by chaunce I hurt my hande, which
my mother feeyng cryed out, thynking that I had hurt myfelfe
more than I haue.” The guarde feeing his hande all bloudy and
cut, did believe it to be true, and from thence went round about
the liberties of the Cittie, finding none that feemed to lament or bewayle
that chaunce. And returning to the Duke, they tolde him howe
all that labour was imployed in vayne, whereupon he appointed
them to hang vp the dead body in the market-place, with
fecret watche in like maner, to efpie if any perfon by day or night,
would come to complaine or be forrowefull for him. Which
body was by the feete hanged vp there, and a continuall watche
appointed to kepe the fame. The rumor hereof was bruted
throughout the Cittie, and euery man reforted thither to fee it.
The woman hearing tell that her husbandes carcasse should be
hanged vp in the market-place, faide diuerfe times to her fonne,
that it was a very great shame for him to fuffer his father’s body
in that shameful fort to be vfed. To whom her fonne made
anfwere, fayding: “Good mother, for God’s fake be contented, for
that whiche they do is for none other purpofe, but to proue me:
wherefore be pacient a while, till this chaunce be paff.” The mother
not able to abide it any longer, brake out many times into thefe
words: “If I were a man as I am a woman, it should not be
vndone now: and if thou wilt not aduenture thy felfe, I will one
night giue the attempt.” The yong man feeing the froward
nature of his mother, determined to take away the body by this
policie. He borrowed twelve friers flockes or cowles, and in the
euening went downe to the hauen, and hired twelue mariners, and
placed them in a backe houfe, giuing them fo much meate and

drinke as they would eate. And when they had well whitled and tipped themselfes, he put vpon them those friers cowles, with vifards vpon their faces, and gaue euery of them in their hands a burning torch, making them to feme as though they had ben Diuels of hel: and he himself rode vpon a horfe al courered with blacke, beft rounde about with monfrous and vglie faces, euerye of them hauinge a burnyng candle in his mouth, and riding before with a vifarde of horrible shape vpon his head, sayde vnto them: "Doe as I doe:" and then marched forward to the market-place. When they came thereto they ran vp and downe with roaring voyces crying out like Deuils being then past midnight and very darke. When the watche sawe that strange figh fight they were affrayde, thinking that they had bene Deuils indeede, and that he on horfbacke in that forme had ben the great Deuill Lucifer himfelfe. And feing him runne towards the gibet, the watche toke their legges and ran away. The yong man in the shape of the great Deuill toke downe the body and layd it before him on horfbacke, who calling his companie away, roode before in poste. When they were come home, he gaue them their money, and vncauing them of their cowles fent them away, and afterwardes buried the body fo fecretly as he could. In the morning newes came to the Duke that the bodye was taken awaye, who fent for the guarde to knowe what was become thereof. To whome they sayde these wordes: "Pleafeth your grace, about midnight laft past there came into the market-place a companie of Deuils, among whom we sawe the great deuill Lucifer himfelfe, who as wee fuppoft did eate vp the bodye, which terrible figh and vision made vs to take our legges." The Duke by those wordes perceived euydently that the fame was but a praftife to deceiue them of their purpoſe, notwithstanding he determined once again to deceiue fome meane in the ende to knowe the truthe, and decreed a constitucion that for the space of xx dayes no fresh meate shoulede be folde in Venice: at which decree all the citie marueiled. Afterwardes he caufed a verie faire fatte calfe to be folde, felling the price of euery pounde at a fiorino, which amounteth to a French crowne or thereaboutes, and willed hym that folde it to note and marke them that bought it: thinking with himfelfe, that he which is a theefe is licorous of mouth delicate
in fare and would not stick to gene a good price, although it coft him a French crown for every pound: making proclamation, that he which would buye any frefh meat should reft to the marketplace where was to bee folde. All the Marchaunts and Gentlemen repaired to bye fome of the veale, and vnderstanding that every pound would not be folde under a Frenche crowne, they bought none at all. This falf and the price was bruted in all places, and came to the knowledge of the mother of this yong man, who faid vnto her fonne: "I haue a minde to eate fome of the veale, now folde in the market." Ricciardo aunfwered: "Mother make no haftie to buye it, firft let it be cheapened by other, and at length I will deuife a meane that you fhall have it: for it is not wysedome for vs to be the firfte that fhall defire it." The mother like an ignoraunt and vnfkillfull woman, was importunate to have it. The fonne fearing that his mother would fende for fome of the veale, by other, caused a Pie to be made, and prepared a flagon full of wyne, both which were intermixed with thinges to caufe fleepo, and taking bread, the fayd Pie, and the flagon of wyne, when it was night, putting on a counterfeit beard, and cloke, went to the fhall where that veale was to bee folde, which as yet was whole and vnboought. And when he had knocked at the fhop dore, one of the guard afked who was there. To whom Ricciardo faid: "Can you tel me wher one Ventura doth kepe his fhop?" Of whom one of them demaunded what Ventura? "I know not his furname," fayde Ricciardo, "that I would he had bene hanged, when I came firft to dwell with him." "Why who fent thee?" faid one of the guarde. "His wyfe (quod Ricciardo) who bade me cary him this meate and wyne for his supper: but I pray you (fayde Ricciardo,) let me leaue the fame with you, till I goe home to know better where he kepeth his fhall. And maruell not, my maifters, though I know not where his fhop is, for it is not long fithens I came to dwell in this Citie." And fo leaving behind him the Pie, and the bread with the flagon of wyne, he made haftie to departe, and tolde them that he wold come againe by and by. When he was gone, one of them toke the flagon and drancke, and afterwaRES gaue it to his companion, and faid: "Drinke, for thou neuer diddest taft of better wyne in all thy life." His companion dranke, and merily communing of
this matter, they fel a sleepe. Ricciardo loking in at a hole of
the dore, feing them a sleepe, went in, and toke the calfe, and caried
it home whole as it was, and faide to his mother: "Hold, mother,
there is your luffe, cut it out:" and by and by the cut out a great
pece. The duke so fone as he heard that the calfe was ftole, and
the maner howe, did wonder very mucche, purpoing yet to
knowe what hee was: and caufed a hundred poore people to come
before him, whose names being written, he faid vnto them: Get
ye to all the houses in Venice, vnder colour to begge almes.
And marke if you fee in any house fleffe dreffed, or any peece in
making ready to be eaten at the fier, which if you doe, ye muft be
importunate in begging, till they gie you either flefh or broth.
And he among all you that shal bring me the firit newes, I wil
gie him xx crownes." These beggers diferfed themfelues into
every corner of the Citie, crauing their almes, amongs whom
one of them asked his almes at the house of Ricciardo, and
approching nere, epied openly fleffe at the spit, and befought a
morfell thereof for God's fake: to whom the vndifcrete woman
feeing that she had plentye, gae a little pce. The poore man
thanked the good wife, and prayed God to faue her life. And
as hee was going down the steps of the dore, Ricciardo met
him with the flefh in his hand. Wherewithall afonned, he willed
him to retourne, and fayde he would gie him more. The begger
 glad of that, went in againe, whome Ricciardo caried into his
chamber, and when he was Within, he ftrake fuche a full blowe
vpon his head with an axe, as he killed hym, and threw him
into a iakes, futting the doore after him. In the euening, thefe
poore men retourned to the duke, according to their promife,
and fayde they coulde finde nothing. The Duke caufed them by
their names, and compting the number founde one leffe than he
had fent, whereat he mariuelled. And after he had well aduised with
himfelfe, what should become of hym that lacked, he fayde:
"Certainly the poore man is Slayne." Then caufing the councell
to be afsembled, he declared what he had done: and yet fayde
that it were meete the party were knowne. Whereunto one of
the Senatours fayde: Your grace hath duely made search by the
belly and mouth, to finde out this verlet: I thinke it nowe neces-
farie that triall be made by lechery, whiche commonly accom-
panieth licorous mouthes.” Then it was concluded that the moste
riotous and lecherous yong men, suche as the Duke had in greatest
suspicion, to the number of xxv. shoule be warned to appeare
before him: whiche accordingly was done, amonges whome was
this Ricciardo. These yonge roifters assembled in the palace,
euery of them maruelled wherefore the Duke had caused them
to come thether. Afterwarde the Duke commaunded xxv. beddes
to be made in one of his great chambers, to lodge euery of the
sayd xxv. persons by hymself, and in the middes of the chamber
he commaunded a riche bed of estate to be set vp and furnished,
wher was appointed to ly his owne daughter, which was an exceed-
ing faire creature. And in the night when these yong men were
layde in their beddes, manye gentlewomen attendant vpon the
Lady, came in to bryng her to her lodging: and her father deliuered
to her a fawcer full of blacke dye, or stayning, and faide vnto her:
“If any of these yong men that doe lie here by thee, doe offer
to come to thy bedde, looke that thou marke him in the face with
this faining colour, that he may be known.” At which wordes
all the yong men maruelled and therefore durste not attempt
to goe vnto her, but faide one to another: “Surely this com-
maundement of the Duke hath some secrete misiterie in it.”
Notwithstanding Ricciardo determined about midnight to go to
her bedde: and when the candle was out being a wake of purpofe,
he rofe vp and went to the gentlewoman’s bedde and began
to imbrace and kiffe her. The maiden when she felt him,
foadainly dipped her finger in the colour and flained his face,
not perceiued of him. When he had accomplisht the thing
he came for, hee retourned to his place: and then began to
imagin vpon the Duke’s wordes, and for what policie he spake
them. And lying a little while still musing vpon the same, he
went againe to the gentlewoman’s bedde, having thoroughly disposed
himself to the pleasures of this paradife lambe: and perceiuing
her to dippe her finger in the fawcer and rubbe his face, Ric-
ciardo toke away the fawcer from the bedde’s fide, and round
about beflowed the colour vpon the faces of his felowes, who
were so faste a sleepe that they did not fele him. Some he marked
with two spottes, some with fix and some with x. himselfe he painted but with foure besides those wherewith already he was berayed by the gentlewoman: whiche done he set the faucer agayne by the bedde's side, and when he had bidden her farewell, faire and softly he returned againe to his bedde. In the morning betimes, the damosels of the chamber came in to helpe the ladye to make her readeye, which done they wayted vpon her to the duke, who askd her how the matter stode. She aunswered well, for she had done his commaundement: and tolde him howe one came vnto her three times, and euery time she gaue him a tainte in his face. The duke by and by fent for them that were of his counfell. To whome he faid: “Sirs, I haue founde out this good fellow, and therfore I haue fent for you, that we altogether may goe to see him.” They went all into the chamber, and viewing them round about, they perceiued all their faces coloured, whereat they fell into a great laughter: then one of them fayde to another: “Suerly this fellowe hath the subtilefles head that euer was knowne:” and concluded that one of the company had set that colour in their faces. The yong men beholding one another paitned in that forte, brake into great sporte and pastime. Afterwarde the duke examined euery of them, and seeing that he was not able by any meannes to vnderstande by whome it was done, he determined to knowe the man before he departed, and promifed to him that should confesse the truthe, to giue his daughter to him in mariage, and with her a very great dowrie, and a generall pardon. Wherefore Ricciardo vnderstanding the duke's minde, toke him afyde, and tolde hym the whole matter particularly from the beginning to the ende. The duke imbraced hym, and gaue him his pardon, and with great ioye and triumphe he solemnized the mariage betwene hym and his daughter. Wherewithall Ricciardo encouraged, proued a very fyloute and valiaunt man in suche wyfe almooste as the affaires of the whole state pased through his handes.

And liued a long time after, with the loue and good wyll of the whole cominaltie of Venice.

VOL. II.
THE FORTY-NINTH NOUELL.

Philenio Sisterno, a Scholler of Bologna, being mocked of three faire Gentlemewomen, at a baxket made of set purpose he was revenged on them all.

At Bologna, whiche is the noblest citie of Lombardie, the mother of studies, and accomplished with al things needfull and requisite for futch a flourishing state, there was a yong scholler, a Gentleman of the countrie of Crete named Philenio Sisterno, of very good grace and behauioir. It chanced that in his time, there was a great feast made in the citie, wherunto were bidden the sayrefl: dames, and befte of reputation there: there was likewise many Gentlemen and Schollers of Bologna, amonges whom was this Philenio Sisterno: who followyng the manner of young men, dallying sometime with one, sometime with another, and perceiuing them for his purpofe determined to daunce with one of them: and comming to one whiche was called Emerentiana, the wyfe of Sir Lamberto Bentiuoglia, hee prayed her to daunce: who, beyng verie gentele and of no lefs audacitie than beautiful, refused not. Then Philenio leading forth the daunce very softly, sometymes wrynging her by the hand, spake somewhat secretly vnto her these wordes: "Madame, your beautie is so great, that without doubt it surmounteth all that ever I fawe, and there is no woman in the world to whome I beare fo great affeccion, as to your perfone, whiche if it were correpsondent to me in Loue, I would thinke myself the beste contented man in the world, otherwise I shal in shorte tyume bee depryned of life, and then you shall be the caufe of my death: and louing you (Madame) as I doe, and as my dutie requireth, you ought to take me for your seuaunt, vng me and those little goodes whiche I haue as your owne: and I doe affure you, that it is imppossible for me to receiue greater fauour from heauen, then to see myselfe subiecete to futch a gentlewoman, as you be, whiche hath taken me in a nette lyke a byrde." Nowe Emerentiana, whiche earnestly had marked those sweet and pleasaunt worordes, like a wyfe gentelewoman, femed to geue no care thereunto, and made him no aunfwere at all. The daunce ended, and Emerentiana being
fet down in her place, this young scholler went to take another gentlewoman by the hand, and began to daunce with her: whiche was not so done begonne, but thus he said vnto her: "It nedeth not Madame, that by woordes I doe expresse the servaunt Loue which I beare you, and will so doe, so long as my poore spirite shall gouerne and rule my members: and if I could obtaine you for my Maistreffe and singuler Ladye, I would thinke myself the happiest man alieue. Then louing you as I do, and being wholly yours, as you may eafely vnderstand, refue me not I befeche you for your humble servaunt, fithe that my life and all that I haue depended vp- on you alone." Theyong gentlewoman, whose name was Panthemia, percieuing his meaning, did not aunfwere him any thing at that time: but honestly proceded in her daunce: and the daunce ended, smyling a little, she sat downe with the other dames. This done, amorous Philenio refed not vntil he had taken the thirde by the hand, (who was the gentleft, fairest, and trimmeft dame in all Bologna,) and began to daunce with her, romyng abrode, to shewe his cunning before them that came to behold him. And before the daunce was finished, he said thus vnto her: "Madame, it may fo be, as I shall feme vnto you very malapert to manifest the secret Loue that I haue and doe beare you at this instant, for which you ought not to blame me but your beautie, which rendreth you excellent above ali the rest, and maketh me your [bl], and pryfoner. I speake not of your commendable behauour, of your excellent and maruellous vertues, which be such and of fo great effeft, as they would make the gods defcend to contemplate the fame. If then your excellent beautie and shape, fo well founed by nature, and not by art, may feme to content the immortall Gods, you ought not to be offended, if the fame do con- straine me to loue you, and to inclofe you in the priue cabane of my harte: I befeeehe you then, gentle Madame (the onely comfort of my life) to haue pitie vpon him that dieth a thoufand times a daye for you. In fo doing, my life shall be prolonged by you, comm- mending me humbly vnto your good grace." This faire gentlewo- man called Simphorofia, vnderstanding the sweete and pleafant woordes vtttered from the very harte of Philenio, could not dis- femble her fighes, but waying her honor, because she was maried,
gaue him no anfwere at all. And the daunce ended, she returned
to her place. Nowe it chaunced, as thefe three ladies did fit toge-
ther iocundely diçpoed to debate of fundrie mery talke, behold
Emerentiana, the wife of Seignior Lamberto, not for any euill,
but in sporting wife said vnto her companions: “Gentlewomen,
I have to tell you a pleauant matter which happened to this
day.” “What is that?” said her companions. “I haue gotten
this night, (faiđ she) in dauncing, a curteous louer, a very faire
Gentleman, and of fo good behaviour as any in the worlde: who
faiđ that he was fo inflamed with my beauty that he tooke no reft
day nor night;” and from point to point, rehearsed vnto them, all
that he had faiđ. Which Panthemia and Simphorofia vnder-
ftanding, anwered that the like had chaunced vnto them, and
they departed not from the feasle before eche of them knewe him
that was their louer: whereby they perceiued that his woordes
proceded not of faithfull Loue, but rather of follie and diffimulation,
in fuche wife as they gaue fo lyghte credite thereunto, as of cus-
tome is geuen to the woordes of thofe that bee ficke. And
they departed not from thence vntill all three with one accorde, had
confpired euery one to giue him mocke. Philenio continuing
thus in Loue, sometime with one, sometime with another, and
perceiuing that euery of them feemed to Loue him, hee deter-
mined with himfelfe, if it were poßible to gather of them the laft
frute of his Loue. But he was greatly deceyued in his defire,
for that all his enterprife was broken: and that done, Emeren-
tiana whiche could not any longer diffemble the loue of the foolifhe
scholer called one of her maydes, which was of a fayre complexion
and a ioly wenche, charging her that she should deuíse meanes
to speake with Philenio, to gene him to vnderftaund the loue
which her maiftreffe bare vnto him: and when it were his pleaure
she willingly would one night haue him at home at her houfe.
Which newes when Philenio heard, he greatly reioyced, and faiđ
to the maid: “Returne to your Maiftreffe, faire maide, and
commend me vnto her, telling her in my behalfe, that I doe praye
her to loke for me this euening, if her husband be not at home.”
During which time, Emerentiana caufed a certaine number of
fagots of sharpe thornes to be made, and to be layd vnder her bedde
still wayting for her minion. When night was come, Philenio
toke his sworde, and went to the house of his enemy, and call-
ing at the dore with the watchworde the same incontinently was
opened: and after that they had talked a little while together,
and banketted after the best maner, they withdrew themselues into
the chamber to take their refte. Philenio had no foner put of
his clothes to goe to bedde, but Seignior Lamberto her husband
came home: which the Maiifrell of the house perceiuing, made
as though he had bene at her wittes ende, and could not tell
whether to conuey her minion, but prayed him to hide himself
under the bedde. Philenio seeing the daunger, wherein both he
and the wife were, not taking with him any other garments, but
only his Shirte, crept under the bed where he was so cruellly prickt
and scratcht with the thornes, as there was no parte of his
body (from the toppe of his head to the sole of his foote) free
from bloud, and the more he fought to defende himselfe in that
darke place, the more sharply and piteously he was tormentted,
and durst not crie for feare least Seignior Lamberto would kill
him. I will leave to your consideracion in what plight this poore
wretche was in, who by reason of his miserable being, as he was
brecheleffe in that terrible purgatorie, even so was he speachleffe
and durst not speake for his life. In the morning when Seignior
Lamberto was gone forth, the poore scharler put on his clothes so
well as he could, and all bloudy as he was, returning to his lodging,
was like to die: but being diligently cured by phisicians, in short
time he recovered his former health. Shortly after, Philenio
began to pursue again his loue towards the other two, that is to
say, Panthemia and Simphorofia, and found convenient time one
euening to speake to Panthemia, to whom he rehearsed his griefes
and continuall tormentes, praying her to haue pitie vpon him.
The subtile and wife wenche Panthemia, fayning to haue compas-
sion vpon him, excused her selfe by lacke of meanes to content
his desire, but in thend vanquished with faire supplications and
maruellous signes, shee made him to come home to her house, and
being vnready, diplayled of all his apparell to go to bed with his
Lady she required hym to go with her into a little closet, wher all
her swete smells and perfumes were, to the intent he might be well
perfumed before he went to bedde. The yong dol not doubting the subtiltie of this wicked woman, entred the clofet and setting his foote vpon a borde vunnayled from the ioyft, fell so depe into a store house where marchauntes vfe to lay there cottons and wolles, as he thought he had broken his necke and his legges, notwithstanding as fortune would he had no hurt. This poore scholler being in that darke place, began to feke for some dare or ladder to go out, and finding nothing for his purpose he curled the houre and time that euer he knew Panthemia. When the dauning of the day began to appeare, the simple fot differed in one place of the storehousse certain ventes in the wall, which gau some light, because they wer old and couered ouer with moffe, in fuch wife, as he began with maruelous force, to pluck out the stones in the moffe decaied place of the wall, and made so great a hole, as he went out. And being in a lane hard by the great streete, barefoote and bare legged, and in his shir, he went home to his lodging vnknownen of any. A litle whyle after Simphorofia vnderstanding of the deceits whiche the other twoo had done to Philenio attempted to gene hym the thirde, whiche was not inferior to the other twayne. And for that purpose, she began a farre of to caffe her amorous lokes vpon him, letting hym to knowe that shee was in great diftresse for his Loue. This poore foule hauing already forgotten his fortune paft, began to walke vp and downe before her houfe, like a man altogether tormented and pained with Loue. Then Simphorofia, feing him to be farre in loue with her, sent hym a letter by an old woman, whereby she aduertified hym, that his beautie and good behauior, fo puifantly did gouerne her affections as she could take no rest night nor day, for the earnest loue that she bare him: wherefore she praied him if it were his pleasurable to come and speake with her. Philenio receiuing that letter, and perusing the contenexes, not considering the deceite prepared for him, ne yet any longer remembering the injuries paft, was more ioyfull and glad then euer he was before: who taking pen and paper, aunswered her againe, that he for his parte suffered no lesse tormentes for her fake, yea and in re- spect of vnfayned Loue, that he loued her farre better than she did hym, and at al tymes when shee pleased, hee woulde be at her
commandeinent to doe her servise: the aunfwere read, and oport-
unitie found, Simphorofia causd him to come home to her houfe,
and after many fallie fighes, she faide vnto him: \textquotedblleft My deare frende Philenio, I knowe none other in all the world, that hath brought me into this state and plighe wherein presently I am, but you, becaufe your beautie, good grace and pleaфaut talke, haue fo fette my harte on fyre as I feele it to kindle and burne like drye woode.	extquotedblright Which talke Maifter scholler hearing, thought assuredly
that she confumed for lobe of him: this poore Nodgecock, con-
truing the time in sweete and pleaфaut woordes, with his dareling
Simphorofia, the time approched that he should go to bed with
his faire lady, who faid vnto him: \textquotedblleft My fwete frend Phi-
lenio, abide a while, and let vs make some banket and collation;\textquotedblright who taking him by the hande, caried him into her clofet adioyn-
ing, wher was a table ready furnifhed with exquifit confects and
wynes of the beft. This gentlewoman had made a compofition
in the wyne, to caufe this yong gallant to fleepe for a certain
time. Philenio thinking no hurte, toke the cup and filled it with
the wyne, and dranke it vp at one draught. His spirits refuued
with this refreshing, after he had bene very well perfumed and
washed in sweete waters, he went to bedde and within a while
after this drinke began to worke, and hee flepte fo foundly, as
canon shot, or the greateft gonnnes of the worlde were not able
to wake hym: then Simphorofia perceiuing the drinke beginne
to worke, called one of her sturdy maides that wel was inftucted
in the game of this pageant: both whiche carrying this poore
fleepy scholler by the feete and armes, and opening the dore very
foftlye, they fayre and well beftowed hym in the middefte of the
feete, a good fone's caffe of from the houfe, where he lay all
the nighte. But when the dawning of the daye dyd appeare, or an
houre before, the drynke loft his vertue, and the poore foule began
to awake, and thinking that he had bene a bedde with the gentlewo-
man he perceiued hymfelf brecheleffe and in his shirt more dead
then alive, through the colde that he had endured, by lying starke
naked vppon the earth. The poore wretche was not able to help
hymfelf fo much as with his armes and legges, ne yet to fiande
vppon his feete without great paine: notwithstanding, through
creping and sprawling, hee got home to his house, vnfeene of anye, and provided so well as hee could for recovery of his health: and had it not been for his youth, which did helpe him at that instant, his finewes had been benommed for euer. In the ende, hauing atteined his former state of health he still remembred the injuries past, and without shewing any signe of anger or displeasure, made as though he loued them all three better then euer he did before, and sometime seemed to be in loue with the one, and sometime with an other: they againe for their part nothing mistrusting the malice of Philenio, yet a good face on the matter, vning amorous cheere and countenance towards him, but when his backe was tourned, with mockes and floutes they toke their pleasure. He being in his brefe secrete despite, was still defrous with his hand to marke them in the face, but like a wise man, waying the natures of women, he thought it woulde redounde to his greate shame and reproche, if hee did them any hurt: and therefore refrayning the heat of his choler vfed pacience. And yet by deuising and practising, how he might be euen with them and reuenged, hee was in great perplexitie. Very shortly after it chaunced that the scholler had inuention a meane, easely to satisifie his desire, and so fone as hee had fully resolued what to do, fortune therunto was favorable: who hyred in the citie of Bologna a very faire house which had a large hall, and comodious chambers: and purposed to make a greate and sumptuous feast, and to inuite many Ladies and Gentlewomen to the same: amoungs whom thesee three were the first that should be bidden: which accordingly was done: and when the feast day was come the three gentlewomen that were not very wise at that instante, repaired thither nothing suspecting the scholler's malice. In the end a little to recreate the Gentlewomen and to get them a stomacke, attendant for supper time, the Scholler toke these his three louers by the hand, and led them friendly into a chamber, somewhat to refreth them. When these three innocent women were come into the Scholler's Chamber, hee shut saft the doore, and going towards them, he sayde: "Beholde faire ladies, now the time is come for me to be reuenged vpon you and to make you suffer the penance of the torment wherwith ye punished me for my great Loue."
The Gentlewomen hearing those cruel words, rather dead than alive, began to repent that ever they had offended him, and besides that, they cursed themselves, for giuinge credit vnto him whom they ought to have abhorred. The Scholler with fierce and angry countenaunce commanded them vpon paine of their lives to strippe themselves naked: which sentence when these three goddeses heard, they began to loke one vpon another, weeping and praying him, that although he would not for their sakes, yet in respect of his owne curtesie and natural humanitie, that he would saue their honor above all things. This gallant rejoicing at their humble and pitifull requestes was thus courteous vnto them, that he would not once suffer them to stand with their garments on in his presence: the women casting themselves downe at his feete wept bitterly, befeeching him that he would haue pitie vpon them, and not to be the occasion of a slander so great and infamous. But he whose hart was hardened as the Diamonde, saied vnto them, that this facte was not worthy of blame but rather of reuenge. The women dispoyled of their apparel (and standing before him, so free from couering as ever was Eve before Adam) appeared as beautifull in this their innocent state of nakednes, as they did in their brauerie: in so much that the yong scholler viewing from toppe to toe, those faire and tender creatures, whose whitenesse surpassed the snow, began to haue pitie vpon them: but calling to his remembrance the injuries past and the danger of death where-in he was, he rejected all pitie and continued his harde and obstinate determination. Then he took all their apparel, and other furnitures that they did weare, and bestowed it in a little chamber, and with threatening words commanded all three to lie in one bed. The women altogether astonned, began to say to themselves: "Alas, what fooles be we? what will our husbands and our frendes say, when they shall understand that we be found naked and miserable flaine in this bed? It had been better for vs to haue died in our cradels, than apprehended and found dead in this state and plight." The Scholler seeing them bestowed one by another in the bed, like husband and wyfe, couered them with a very white and large sheete, that no part of their bodies might be seen and known, and shutting the Chamber
doore after him Philenio went to seeke their husbands, which were dauncing in the hall: and the daunce ended, he intreated them to take the paines to goe with him: who was their guide into the Chamber where the three Muses lay in their bedde, saying vnto them: "Sirs, I haue broughte you into this place to shewe you some pastime and to let you see the fayrest thinges that euer you saw in your liues. Then approching neere the bed, and holding a torch in his hand, he began fayre and softly to lift vp the sheete at the bed's feete, discouerine these fayre ladies euen to the knees. Ye shoud haue feen then, how the husbands did behold their white legs and their wel proporcioned feete, which don he disclofed them euen to the stomack, and shewed their legges and thighes farre whiter than alabaster, which seemed like two pillers of fine marble, with a rounde body so wel formed as nothing could be better: consequently he tourned vp the sheete a little further, and their stomackes appeared somewhat round and plumme, hauing two rounde breasts so firme and feate, as they would haue conffrayned the great God Jupiter to imbrace and kiffe them. Whereat the hufbandes toke so great pleafure and contentmente, as could be deuised: I omitte for you to thince in what plighte these poore naked women weare, hearinge theyr husbands to mocke them: all this while they laye very quiet, and durft not fo much as to hem or coughe, for feare to be knowen: the husbands were earneft with the Scholler to discouer their faces, but hee wifer in other mennes hurtes than in his owne, would by no meanes content vnto it. Not contented with this, the yong scholler shewed their apparel to their husbands, who feing the fame were aſtonued, and in viewing it with great admiration, they faid one to another: "Is not this the gowne that I once made for my wife? Is not this the coyfe that I bought her? Is not this the pendant that she weareth about her necke? be not these the rings that fet out and garnisht her fingers?" Being gone out of the chamber for feare to trouble the feaft, he would not suffer them to depart, but caufed them to tarie supper. The Scholler vnderstandinge that supper was ready, and that the maifter of the house had disposed all thinges in order, he caufed the geftes to fit downe. And whiles they were remouing and placing the
flooles and chayres, he returned into the chamber, wher the three
dames lay, and uncovering them, he sayd vnto them: "Bongi-
orno, faire Ladies: did you heare your hufbandes? They be here
by, and do earnestly tarie for you at supper. What do ye meane
to do? Vp and rife ye dormouses, rubbe your eyes and gape no
more, dispache and make you ready, it is time for you now to
 repayre into the hall, where the other gentlewomen do tarie for
you." Behold now how this Scholer was reuenged by interteign-
ing them after this manner: then the poore defolate women, fearing
leaff their caufe would forte to som pitifull successe, dispayring of
their health, troubled and discomforted, rose vp expecting rather
death than any other thing: and tourning them toward the scholler
they laid vnto him: "Maister Philenio, you haue had sufficient
reuenge vpon vs: the best for you to do now, is to take your sword,
and to bereue us of our life, which is more lothsome vnto vs than
pleasaut: and if you will not do vs that good tourne, suffer vs
to go home to our houses vnknown, that our honours may be
faued." Then Philenio thinking that he had at pleasure vshed their
perfons, delivered them their apparel, and so fone as they were
ready, he let them out at a little dore, very secrelye vnknown of
anye, and so they went home to their houfes. So fone as they
had put of their fayre furnitures, they folded them vp, and layd
them in their cheffes: which done, they went about their houfhol
busines, till their hufbands came home, who being retourned they
founde their wives lowing by the fire side in their chambers: and
because of their apparell, their ringes and iewels, which they had
feene in the Scholler's Chamber, it made them to suspect their
wives, euerie of them demaunding his feueral wife, where she
had bin that nighte, and where their apparell was. They well
assured of themselues, aunswered boldly, that they were not out
of their house all the euening, and taking the keyes of their cofers
shewed them their apparell, their ringes and other things, which
their hufbandes had made them. Which when their hufbandes
saw, they could not tell what to say, and forthwith rejected all
suspcion, which they had conceiued: telling them from point
to point, what they had feen that night. The women vnder-
standing those wordes, made as though they knew nothing and
after a little sport and laughter between them, they went to bed. Many times Philenio met his Gentlewomen in the streets and sayde vnto them: "Which of you was most atraide or worste intreated?" But they holding downe their heads, passed forth not speaking a word: in this maner the Scholler was requited so well as he could of the deceites done against him, by the three Gentlewomen aforesaid.
THE FIFTYETH NOUELL.

The piteous and chaste death of one of the muleters wiues of the Queene of Nauarre.

In the citie of Amboife, there was a muleter that serued the Queene of Nauarre, fitter to king Fraunces the firfte of that name, which was broughte a bedde of a sonne at Blois: to which towne the saide muleter was gone to be paide his quarter's wages: whose wyfe dwelled at Amboise beyond the bridges. It chaunced that of long time one of her husband's seruauntes did so disordinately loue her, as vpon a certaine day he could not forbeare but he muste utter the effect of his loue borne vnto her. Howbeit she being a right honest woman, tooke her man's sute in very ill part, threatning to make her husband to beat him, and to put him away, and vfed him in suche wyfe, that after that time he durst not speake thereof any more, ne yet to make signe or semblance: keeping yet that fier couered within his brest, vntill his Maifter was ridden out of the towne, and that his Maiiftresse was at euenfong at Saint Florentine's, a Church of the Castle, farre from her house: who now being alone in the house, began to imagine how he might attempt that thinge by force, which before by no supplication or seruice he was able to attaine. For which purpose, he brake vp a borde betweene his Maiiftresse chamber and his: but because the curteins of his maifter and maiftresse bed, and of the seruauntes of the other side couered and hid the walles betweene, it could not be perceyued, nor yet his malice differied vntill suche time as his Maiiftresse was gone to bed, with a little wenche of xii. yeares of age: and so fone as the poore woman was fallen into her first sleepe, this varlet entred in at a hole which he had broken, and conuayed himselfe into her bed in his shirte, with a naked sworde in his hande: who so fone as she felt him layed downe by her, lepte out of her bed, perswading him by all possible meanes meete for an honest woman to do: and he indued with beastly loue, rather acquainted with the language of his mulets
than with her honest reasons, shewed himselfe more beastly then
the beasts with whom he had of long time bin connuerfante: for
feing her so oft to runne about the table that he could not
catch her, and also that she was so strong, that twife she over-
came him, in diuipaire that he shoule never enjoy her aliue, hee
gave her a great blow with his sword ouer the raines of the
back, thinking that if feare and force could not make her to
yeld, paine and smart shoule cause her. Howbeit, the contrarie
chaunced: for like as a good man of armes when he seeth his
owne bloud, is more fet on fier to be reuenged vpon his enemies
to acquire honor: even so the chaste hart of this woman, did
reenforce and fortese her courage in double wife, to auoyde
and escape the hands of this wicked varlet, deuising by all
meanes possible by fayre words to make him acknowledge his
fault: but he was so inflamed with furie, there was no place
in him to receiue good counsell. And eftsones with his sword,
he gaffed her tender bodys with diuers and sondry strokes, for
the auoyding wherof, so fast as her legges could beare her, she
ran vp and downe the chamber: and when through want of
bloud she perceived death approche, lifting vp her eyes vnto
heaven, and ioyning her hands together, gave thankes vnto
God, whom she termed to be her force, her vertue, her pacience
and chastitie, humblie beereching him to take in good part the
bloud whiche by his commandemente was sheade in honor of
that precious bloud, which from his owne sone did issue vppon
the Croffe, whereby shee did beleue, firmelye and stedfaftlye
that all her finnes were wiped awaye and defaced from the
memorye of his wrathe and anger, and in fayinge: "Lorde
receiue my foule which was dearely bought and redeemed with
thy bounty and goodnes:" shée fell downe to the ground vppon
her face where the wycked villaine inflicted her bodye with
manifold wounds: and after she had loft her speache and the
force of her body, thys most wicked and abhominable varlet
toke her by force, whiche had no more strength and power to
defende her selfe: and when he had fatisfied his cursed defire, he
fled away in such haft, as afterwards for all the purfute made
after him he could not be found. The yong wench which lay
with her, for feare hid herselфе vnder the bed. But when she perceyued the villaine departed, shee came vnto her Maistrefse and finding her spyeachleffe and without mouing, she cryed out at the window vnto the nexte neighbours to come to succour her: and they which loued her and esteemed her so wel as any woman in the towne, came presently vnto her, and brought diuers surgeons with them, who findinge vpon her body xxv. mortall woundes, they did so much as in them laye to helpe her: but it was imposible. Howbeit shee laye one houre without speache, makinge signes with hir eyes and hands, declaring that she had not loft her vnderstanding: being demaunded by the priеst, of the fayth wherein she died, and of her saluacion, she aunswered by such euident signes, as her liuely speach and communication coulde not haue declared it better, howe that her trust and confidence was in the death of Iesu Christ, whom she hoped to see in the Celestiall cite, and to with a joyfull countenaunce, her eyes erected vp to the heauens, she rendred her chaft body to the earth, and her soule to her Creator: and when shee was shrouded ready to the buriall, as her neighbours were attending to followe her to the Church, her poore hufbande came home, and the first sight he sawe, was the body of his dead wife before his doore, wherof before that instant hee had no newes. And when he vnderstode the order of her death, he then doubled his forrowe, in such wyfe that he was also like to die. In this fort was this marter of chaftitie buried in the church of S. Florentine, where all the honest dames and wiues of the citie endeuoured themselves to accompany her, and to honour her with suche reverence as they were able to do: accomplinge themselves most happie to dwell in that towne, where a woman of such vertuous behauior did dwell. The foolishe and wanton feing the honour done to that deade bodye, determined from that time forth to renue their former life, and to chaunge the same into a better.
THE FIFTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A king of Naples, abusing a Gentleman's wife, in the end did weare the hornes himselfe.

In the citie of Naples when king Alphonfus reigned, in whose time wantonnefle bare chiefeft sway, there was a Gentleman so honest, beautifull and comely, as for his good conditions and wel knowne behauiour an old Gentleman gaue to him his daughter in mariage, which in beautie and good grace was passingly well beloued and comfortable to her husband. The Loue was great betwene them, till it chaunced vpon a fhouetide that the king went a masking into the citie, where euery man endeuoured to intertaine him the beft he could. And when he came to this Gentleman's houfe, he was beft receyued of any place in all the towne, afwell for banqueting, as for musicall fonges, and the Gentlewoman, the fayreft that the king fawe in all the citie to his contentacion. And vpon the end of the banket, she fang a fong with her hufbande, with a grace fo good as it greatly augmented her beautie. The king feeing fo many perfections in one body, coneyued not fo great pleafure in the sweete accords of her hufband and her, as he did howe to deuife to interrupt and breake them: and the difficultie for bringinge that to passe, was the great amitie that hee fawe betweene them, wherefore he bare in his hart that passion fo couert, as he possibily could. But partly for his owne solace and conforte, and partly for good will of all, hee feasted all the Lords and Ladyes of Naples, where the Gentleman and his wife were not forgotten. And because man willingly beleueth that he doth fee, he thought that the lokes of that gentlewoman promifed vnto him some grace in time to come, if the prefence of her hufband were no let therunto. And to prowe whether his conjecture were true, he fent her hufbande in commiffion to Rome, for the space of xv. dayes or iii. wekes. And so fone as he was gone, his wyfe which hitherto had not felt any long abfence from her hufband, made great forrow
for the same, whereof she recomforted by the king, many times by sweete perfwations and by presents and gifts, in such fort, that she was not onely comforted, but contented with her husbands absence. And before the three weekes were expired of his returne, she was so amorous of the king as she was no leffe forowful of his comming home, then she was before for his departure. And to the intent the kings presence might not be loste, they agreed together, that when her husband was gone to his poffessions in the countrie, she shoulde send word to the king, that he might haue safe repair vnto her, and so secretely that his honour, (which he feared more then he did the fact) might not be impaired. Vpon this hope, this Ladie's hart was set on a merie pin: and when her husband was come home, she welcomed him so wel, that albeit he knewe how the king made much of her in his absence, yet he would not beleue that he so did for any dishonest fact. Howbeit by continuance of time, this fier that could not be couered, by little and little began to kindle, in such wife as the husband doubted much of the truth, and watched the matter so neere, as he was almost oute of doubt. But for feare, lest the partie which did the wrong, shoulde do him greater hurt, if he seemed to know it, he determined to dissemble the matter: for he thought it better to live with some griefe, then to hazard his life for a woman that did not loue him: notwithstanding, for this displeasure, he thought to be even with the king if it were possible. And knowinge that many times despite maketh a woman to do that which Loue cannot bring to passe, specially those that haue honourable harts and stout stomachs, was so bold without blushing, vpon a day in speaking to the Queene, to say vnto her, that he had pitie vpon her, for that shee was no better beloved of the king her husband. The Queene which heard tell of the loue betwene the king and his wife: "I cannot (quoth she) both enjoy honour and pleasure together: I knowe well that honor I haue, whereof one receiueth the pleasure, and as she hath the pleasure, so hath not she the honor." He which knewe wel by whom those words were spoken, said vnto her: "Madame, honor hath waited vpon you [euen from your birth, for you be of so good a house, as to be a queene or Empresse, you cannot
augment your nobilitie, but your beautie, grace, and honestie, hath deferred so much pleasure, as he that depriueth you of that which is incident to your degree, doth more wrong to her self then to your perfon. For the for a glory that hath turned her to shame, hath therewithall lost so much pleasure, as your grace or any Lady in the realme may have. And I may saye vnto you (Madame) that if the kinge were no king as he is, I thincke that he could not excel me in pleasing of a woman: being sure that to satisfie such a vertuous perfonage as you be, he might exchange his complexion with mine." The Queene smiling, answered him: "Although the king be of more delicate and weaker complexion than you be, yet the loue that he beareth mee, doth so much content mee, as I efeeme the fame aboue all thinges in the world." The gentleman said vnto her: "Madame, if it were so, I woulde take no pitie vpon you, for I know wel that the honest loue of your hart, would yeld vnto you great contentment, if the like were to be found in the king: but God hath foreseene and prevented the fame, left enioyinge your owne desire, you would make him your God vpon earth." "I confeffe vnto you (faide the Queene) that the Loue I beare him, is so great, as the like place he could not find in no woman's hart, as he doth in mine." "Pardon me, madame (faide the Gentleman) if I speake more francklye, your grace hath not founded the depth of ech man's harte. For I dare be bold to say vnto you, that I do know one that doth loue you, and whose loue is so great, as your loue in respecte of his is nothing. And for so much as he feeth the kinge's loue to faile in you his doth grow and increafe, in such fort, that if your loue were agreable vnto his, you should be recompened of all your losses." The Queene afwel by his words as by his countenaunce, began to perceive, that the talke proceded from the bottom of his hart, and called to her remembranunce that long time he had endeavored to do her service, with such affection, as for loue he was grown to be melancholike, which she thought before, to rife through his wyue's occaision, but now she assuredly beleued that it was for her sake. And thus the force of Loue, which is well discryed when it is not fayned, made her sure of that, which was vnknowen to all the
world. And beholding the gentleman which was more amiable than her husband, and seeing that he was forfaken of his wife, as the of the king, pressed with despite and ialousie of her husband, and provoked with love of the gentleman, began to say with finger in eye, and sighing sobbs: “O my God, must vengeance get and win that at my hand, which Love cannot doe?” The gentleman well understanding her meaning, aunsweredd: “Madam, vengeance is sweet enemie, giueth life to a perfect freinde. I thinke it time that truth doe remove from you the foolishe love, that you beare to him which loueth you not: and that just and reasonable love should expell from you the fear, which out not remaine in a noble and vertuous hart. But now madame, omittinge to speake of the greatnesse of your estate, let us consider that we be both man and woman, the most deceived of the world, and betrayed of them which we haue most dearly loued. Let us now be reuenged (madame) not onely to render vnto them, what they deferue, but to satifie the love which for my part I can no longer beare, except I should die. And I thinke, that if your harte be not harder than flinte, or Diamont, it is impossible but you must perceiue som sparke of fier, which increaseth more than I am able to dissemble: and if pitie of me which dieth for your love, doth not moue you to loue me, at leaft wyse let loue of your selfe constrainne you, which (being so perfect a creature as you be) doth deferue to enjoy the hartes of the noblest and most vertuous of the world. Suffer I say, the contempt and forfaking of him, [to] moue you, for whom you haue disdained all other persons.” The Queene hearing those words, was so ravished, as for fear to declare by her countenaunce the trouble of her spirite, leaping vppon the Gentleman’s arme, went into a garden hard by her Chamber, where she walked a long time not able to speake a word. But the Gentleman seeing her halfe wonne, when he was at the ende of the Alley where none could see them, hee certified her by effect, the love which so long time he kept secrete from her. And both with one consent rejoyced in reuenge, whereof the passion was importable. And there determined, that so oft as shee went into the Country, and the king
from his Castell into the Citie, he should retourne to the Castel
to see the Queene. Thus deceuying the deceyuers, all foure were
partakers of the pleasure, which two alone thought to enjoy. The
accord made, they departed, the Lady to her Chamber, and the
Gentleman to his house, with such contentacion, as they had
quite forgotten all their troubles past. And the feare which either
of them had of the assembly of the king and of the Gentlewoman,
was tourned to desire, which made the Gentleman to go more oft
then he was wonte to doe into the countrye, being not past halfe
a mile of. And so soon as the king knew therof, he sayled not
to visit the Queene, and the gentleman the night following went
to the Castle to salute the Queene, to do the office of the kinge's Lieute-
naunt, so secretly as no man did perceiue it. This voyage en-
dured long time, but the king because he was a publike person,
could not so well diffemble his Loue, but all the worlde did vnder-
stand it, and all men pitied the gentleman's state. For divers
light perions behinde his backe would make horns vnto him,
in signe of mockerie, which he right well perceyued. But this
mockerie pleased him so wel, as he esteemed his horns better
then the king's Crowne. The king and the Gentleman's wife one
day, could not refraine (beholding a Stagge's head set vp in the
Gentleman's house) from breaking into a laughter before his face,
saying, how that head became the house very well. The gentle-
man that had so good a hart as he, wrote ouer that head these
words.

These hornes I weare and beare for every man to view,
But yet I weare them not in token they be trew.

The king retourning againe to the Gentleman's house, finding this
title newely written, demaunded of the gentleman the signification
of them.

Who said vnto him:

"If princesse secret things, be from the horned hart concealed,
Why should like things of horned beastes, to Princes be revealed.
But content your selfe: all they that weare horns be pardoned to
weare their capps vpon their heads: for they be so sweete and
pleaunt, as they vncappe no man, and they weare them so light,
as they thincke they have none at all." The king knew well by
his wordes that he smelled something of his doings, but he never suspected the love betwene the Queene and him. For the Queene was better contented wyth her husbande's life, and with greater ease dissembled her griefe. Wherefore eyther parts lived long time in this love, till age had taken order for dissolution thereof.

"Behold Ladyes (quoth Saffredante) this Historye which for example I have willingly recited to thintente that when your husbands do make you hornes as big as a Goate, you maye render unto him the monstrous heade of a Stagge." "Peace (quoth Emarfuite sfyling) no more wordes, leaft you reuieue some sleeping sweet soule, which without stirwoulde not awake, with any whispring."
THE FIFTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The rashe enterprize of a Gentleman against a Princeffe of Flaunder, and of the shame that he receyued thereof.

There was in Flaunders a Lady of an honorable house, which had two husbands, by whom she had no children that were then living. During the time of her widowhood she dwelt with one of her brothers, that loved her very well, which was a noble man, and had married a king's daughter. This young Prince was much inclined to pleasure, loving hunting, pastime, and the company of fair Ladies, accordingly as youth requireth. He had a wife that was curt and troublesome, whom the detections of her husband in no wise did content and please: wherefore this noble man caused his sister daily to keep company with his wife. This Gentlewoman his sister was of pleasant conversation, and therewithal very honest and wise. There was in the house of this noble man, a Gentleman whose worship, beauty and grace did surpass all the rest of his companions. This Gentleman perceiving the sister of his Lorde and Master to be pleasant and of joyful countenance, thought to prove if the attempt of an honest friend would be vouchsafed, but he found her answer to be contrary to her countenance: and albeit that her answer was such as was meet for a Princeffe and right honest Gentlewoman, yet because she perceiving him to be a goodly personage, and courteous, she easily pardoned his bold attempt, and seemed that she took it not in ill part when he spake unto her. Neuertheless she warned him, after that time, to move no such matter, which he promised, because he would not lose his pleasure, and the honour that she conceived to entertaine her. Notwithstanding, by process of time his affection increased so much as he forgot the promise which he had made her, wherefore he thought good not to hazarde his enterprise by wordes, for that she had to long against his will experimented her wife and discreetest answer: and therewithall he thought if he could
finde her in some conuenient place (becaus she was a yong widow, of luyse yeares and good complexion) it were possible shee woulde take pitie vpon him, and of herself. And that he might bring his purpose to effecte, he said to his Maister that he had besides his owne house very goodlie game, and that if it pleased him to kill three or foure Stagges in the moneth of May, he should see very good pastime. The Lord aswell for the loue hee bare to the Gentleman, as for the pleasure he had in hunting, graunted his request: and went to his house, which was so faire and well furnishe, as the best Gentleman in all the countrie had no better. The gentleman lodged his Lord and Lady in one side of the house, and in the other directly against it her whom he loued better than himselfe. The Chamber where his maistres laye, was so well hanged with tapistrie, and so trimely matted, as it was impossible to perceiue a falling dore, harde by the bed's side, descending to his mother's chamber, which was an old Lady, much troubled with the Catarre and Rume. And because she had a cough, fearing to disese the Princeffe which laye aboue her, she changed her chamber with her sone. And every night the olde Gentlewoman brought conflicts to the Lady for her recreation, vpon whom the Gentleman wayted, who (for that he was well beloued and very familiare with her brothe) was not refused to be present at her riyng and going to bedde. Whereby he daily toke occasioon to increas his loue and affection: in suche sorte as one night, after he had causeth the Ladie to fit vp late, (the being surprised with sleepe) he was forced to depart the chamber, and to reparie to his own. Wher when he had put on the most brauest perfumed shirt that he had, and his cap for the night so trimely dresse, as there wanted nothing, he thought in beholding himselfe, that there was no Lady in the world that would refuse his beautie and comelineffe. Wherefore promisong himselfe a happie succeffe in his enterprize, hee went to his bed where he purposed not long to abide, for the desire that he had to enter into another, whiche should be more honourable and pleasaunt vnto him. And after he had sent his men away, he roze to shut the dore after them, and hearkened a good while, whether he could heare any noyse in the Ladie's chamber aboue. And when he was
sire that every man was at rest, he began to take his pleasaunt journey, and by little and little opened the falling dore, which was so well trimmed with cloth, that it made no noyse at all, and went vp to the Ladie’s bed side, which then was in her first sleepe, and without respect of the bonde and promise that he made vnto her, or the honorable house wherof she came, without leave or reuerence, he laid himselfe down besides her, who felt him betwene her armes before she perceiued his comming. But she which was somewhat strong, unfolded her self out of his handes, and in asking him what he was, began to strike, to bite and scratche, in suche wyse, as he was constrained (for feare least she should crye out) to stoppe her mouth with the couerlet, which was impossible for him to do. For when she sawe him to press with all his force to despoyle her of her honor, she spared no part of her might to defende and kepe her selfe, and called (so loude as she could) her woman of honor, that laye in her chamber, whiche was a very auncient and sober gentlewoman, who in her smock, ran straith to her maistresse. And when the Gentleman perceiued that she was discouered, hee was so fearfull to be knowne of the Ladye, as fone as he could hee shifted himself down by his trapsedore. And where before he conceiued hope and assurance to be welcome, now he was brought in despaire for retourninge in so vnhappy state. When he was in his chamber, he found his glaffe and candle vpon the table, and beholding his face all blody with the scratchings and bitings, whiche shee had bestowed vpon him, the blood wherof ran down his fayre fhyrt, better bloudied then gilted, he began to make his moone in this wise: “O beautie, thou art nowe payed thy defert, for vpon thy vayne promise haue I adventured a thing impossible. And that which might have bene the augmenting of my delight is nowe the redoubling of my forowe. Being assured that if she knewe howe contrary to my promise I have enterprised this foolifhe fact, I shoule utterly forgoe the honest and common conversation whiche I haue with her aboue al other. That which my effimation, beautie and good behauieur doe deferue, I ought not to hyde in darkeneffe. To gaine her loute, I ought not to haue affayed her chaste bodye by force, but rather by seruice and humble pacience, to wayte and attend till
loue did vanquish. For without loue all the vertue and puissance of man is of no power and force." Even thus he paffed the night in such teares, griefes and plaintes, as can not be well reported and vtttered. In the morning, when he beheld his bloody face all mangled and torne, he fained to be very ficke, and that he could abide no light, til the company were gone from his house. The Ladye whiche thus remained victorius, knowing that there was no man in all her brother's Court, that durft attempt a deede so wicked, but her housfe which was so bolde to declare his loue vnto her, knew well that it was he. And when she and her woman of honour had search'd all the corners of the chamber to knowe what he was, and could not finde hym, she sayd vnto her woman in great rage: "Affure your selle it can be none other, but the Gentleman of the housfe, whose villanous order I wyll reueale to my brother in the morning, in such forte, as his head shalbe a witnesse and testimony of my chaftitie." Her woman seing her in that furie, sayd vnto her; "Madame, I am right glad to see the loue and affection which you beare to your honor, for the increafe wherof you doe not spare the life of one, which hath adventured himselfe so muche for the loue that hee beareth vnto you. But many times such one thinketh by those meanes to increafe loue, which altogether he doth diminifhe. Wherefore (Madame) I humbly beche you to tell me the truthe of this facete." And when the Ladie had recompted the same at lengthe, the woman of honour sayd vnto her: "Your grace doth say that he got no other thyng of you, but scratches and blowes with your fistes." "No, I affure you (quod the Ladie) and I am certaine if hee gette hym not a good Surgeon, the markes will be seene to morowe." "Wel Madame (quod the gentlewoman) fithens it is so, me thinketh you have greater occasion to praye God, then to mufe vpon reuenge: For you may beleue, that fithens he had the courage to enterprise so great an exploit, and that despite hath failed him of his purpose, you can denie no greater death for him to suffer, then the same. If you defire to be reuenged, let Loue and shame alone bring that to passe, who knowe better which way to tormente him than your selfe, and with greater honor to your persone. Take heede Madame from falling into such inconvenient as he is in, for in
place of great pleasure whiche he thought to haue gayned, he hath receiued the extremest annoyance, that any gentleman can suffer. And you Madame, by thinking to augment your honor, you may decrease and diminish the fame. And by making complaint, you shal cause that to be known, which no man knoweth. For of his part (you may be assured) there shall never be anything revealed. And when my Lorde your brother at your request shall execute the iustice which you desire, and that the poore Gentleman shall be ready to die, the brute will runne that he hath had his pleasure vpon you. And the greatest nombre will say, that it is very difficult for a Gentleman to doe suche an enterprise, except the Lady minifter some great occasion. Your grace is faire and yong, frequenting your life in pleasant company, there is none in all the Court, but seeth and marketh the good countenaunce you beare to that Gentleman, whereof your selfe hath some suspicition: which will make euery man suppose that if he hath done this enterprize, it was not without some consent from you. And your honor which hetherto hath borne your port a loft, shall be disputed vpon in all places where this historie shall be remembred." The Princesse well waying the good reasons and aduise of her gentlewoman, knewe that she spake the truthe: and that by moste iust cause she should be blamed: considering the familiaritie and good countenaunce which dayly she bare vnto the Gentleman. Wherefore she inquired of her woman of honour, what was best to bee done. Who answered her thus, "Madame, sith it pleafeth you to receive mine aduise, by waying the affection whereof it procedeth, me thinke you ought in your hart to reioyce, that the goodliest, and moste curteous Gentleman that liueth, could neither by loue, or force, despoile you of your greatest vertue and chaflitie. For which (Madame) you are bounde to humble your selfe before God, acknowledging that it is not done by your vertue, bicaue many women walking in a more painefull and more vnpleauant trade then you do, haue humiliated and brought low by men farre more vnworthy of loue, then he which loueth you. And ye ought now to feare more than euer you did, to vfe any semblance and take of amitie, bicaue there haue bene many that haue fallen the second time into daungers and perils, which they haue anoyed at the
first. Remember (Madame) that love is blind, who blaseth mens eyes in such sort, as where a man thinketh the waye moste sure, ther his moste readie to fal. And I suppose Madame, that you ought not to feme to be priie of this chaunce, neither to him, ne yet to any els, and when he remembreth anye thing to you, doe make as though you did not vnderstande his meaning, to auoyde twoo daungers. The one of vaine glorie for the victorie you have had, the other to take pleasure in remembering things, that be fo pleasaunt to the fleth, which the mooste chaffe have had much a do to defend theimselues from feling fome sparkes, although they feke meanes to shunne and auoyde them with all their possible power. Moreover, Madame, to thende that he thinke not by suche hazard and enterprife to haue done a thing agreeable to your minde, my counfell is, that by litle and litle, you doe make your felle ftraunge, and vse no more your wonted grace vnto him, that he may know how much you despife his folly and consider how great your goodneffe is, by contenting your self with the victorie which God hath geuen you, without seeking any further vltion or reuengement. And God graunt you grace (Madame) to continue that honestie which hee hath planted in your hart, and by acknowledging that all goodneffe procedeth from him, you may love him and ferve him, better than euer ye did. The Princeffe determined to credite the counsfayle of her gentlewoman, slepte with so great ioye as the poore gentleman waked with sorrow. On the mowr the noble man ready to depart, asked for his hoste, vnto whom answere was made that he was so sicke, as hee could not abide the light, or endure to heare one speake. Wherof the Prince was fore abashed, and would haue visited him, but that it was told him he was a slepe, and was very loth to wake him. Wherefore without bidding him farewell, he departed, taking with him his wife and fister, who hearing the excuse of the Gentleman that would not see the Prince, nor yet his companie, at their departure, was perfuaded that it was he, that had done her al that torment, and durst not shew the markes which she had sign'd in his face. And although his Maifter did fende oftines for him yet came he not to the Court, vntill he was healed of his woundes, except that whiche love and despite had made in his harte. When he came to the Courte and appeared be-
fore his victorious enemie, he blushed for shame of his ouer throwe. And he which was the stoutest of all the company was so astonned as many times being in her presence, hee could not tell which way to loke or tourne his face. Wherfore she was assured that her suspicion was certain and true, by little and little estrauenging her self from him, but it was not done so sleightly or politikely but that he perceiued well enough, and yet he durst make no semblance, for feare of worse aduenture. Notwithstanding he conferued both loure in his hart, and pacience in his minde, for the losse of his Ladie’s fauour, which he had right well deferued.
THE FIFTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The love of Amadour and Florinda: wherein be contained manifold fleightes and diffimulations, together with the renowned chastitie of the said Florinda.

In the Countie of Arande, in Aragon, a region in Spaine, there was a Ladie whiche in the best time of her youth, continued the widow of the Earle of Arande, with one fonne, and one daughter, called Florinda. The fayde Lady brought vp her children in all vertue and honestie, meete and conuenable for Lordes and Gentlemen, in such forte, as her house was renowned to be one of the moft honorable in all the Region of Spaine. Many times she repaired to Tolledo, where the kinge of Spaine helde his Court, and when she came to Sarragofa, which was harde adjoyning to the court, she continued long with the Queene, and in the Courte, where she was had in so good estimation as any Lady might be. Vpon a time going towards the king, according to her cuftome, which was at Sarragofa, in his castle of Tafferie, this Lady passed by a village that belonged to the Viceroy of Catalongne, who still continued vpon the frontiers of Parpignon, for the great warres that were betwene the Frenche king and him. Howebeit, at that time peace being concluded, the Viceroy with all his captaines were come to do reverence to the king. The Viceroy knowing that the Counteffe of Arrande did passe through his countrie, went to mete her, as well for auncient amitie, as for the honor he bare vnto her being allied to the kyng. Nowe this Viceroy had in his companye diuers honest Gentlemen, whiche through the frequentation and continuance of the long warres, had gotten suche honour and fame, as euery man that might see them and behold them did accompt them felues happy. But amonges all other, there was one called Amadour, who although he was but xviii. or xix. yeares of age, yet he had fuch an assured grace and witte so excellent, as he was demed amonges a thousand perfones worthy to haue the gouernement of a common wealth, whiche good witte was coupled with maruellous naturall beautie, so that there
was no eye, but did content it self ofthose to beholde hym. 
And this beautie so exquisite, was assoociated with wonderfull 
eloquence, as doubtfull to say, whether merited greatest honor, 
either his grace and beautie, or his excellent tongue. But that 
which brought him into best reputation, was his great hardineffe, 
whereof the common reporte and brute was nothing impeached 
or ftaied for all his youth. For in so many places he shewed his 
chiualrie, as not only Spain but Fraunce and Italie, did singularly 
commend and fet forth his vertue: bicaufe in all the warres 
wherin he was present, he never spared him self for any daunger. 
And when his countrie was in peace and quiet, he fought to servue 
in ftraunge places, being loued and esteemed both of his frendes 
and enemies. This Gentleman for the loue of his Captaine was 
come into that countrey, where was arriued the Counteffe of 
Arande, and in beholding the beautie and good grace of her 
daughter, which was not then paft xxi. yeres of age, he thought 
that she was the fairefet and moft vertuous perfonage that euer he 
fawe: and that if he could obtaine her good will, he shoulde be fo 
well fatisfied as if he had gained all the goods and pleafures of the 
worlde. And after he had a good whyle viewed her, for all the 
impossibilitie that reafon could deniue to the contrary, he deter-
mined to loue her, although some occafion of that impossibilitie 
might ryfe through the greatneffe of the houfe wherof she came, 
and for want of age which was not able as yet to vnderftande the 
paffions of loue. But againft the feare thereof he was armed 
with good hope, persuading himfelfe, that time and patience 
would bring happie ende to his trauayle: and from that time 
gentle Loue whiche without any other occafion than by his own 
force was entred the harte of Amadour, promifed him fauour and 
helped by all meanes possible to atteine the fame. And to prouide 
for the greatest dificultie, which was the farre distance of the 
countrie wher he dwelt, and the small occafion that he had there-
by any more to see Florinda, he thought to marry againft his 
determination made with the ladies of Barfelone and Parpignon, 
amonges whom he was fo conuersant by reafon of the warres, as 
he femed rather to be a Cathelan, than a Caftillan, although 
he wer borne by Tollede, of a riche and honourable houfe, yet
becausse he was a yonger brother, he enioyed no great patrimonie or revenue. Notwithstanding, loue and fortune feing him forfaken of his parentes, determined to accomplishe some notable expoyt in him, and gaue him (by meanes of his vertue) that which the lawes of his countrey refued to geue. He had good experience in factes of warre, and was so well beloued of al Princes and Rulers, as he refued many times their goodes, being refolued not to care or efteme the benefites of Fortune. The Countesse of whome I spake, arriveed thus at Saragoffa, was very well intertained of the king, and of his whole Court. The Gouernour of Catalogne, many times came thither to visite her, whom Amadour neuer failed to accompany, for the onely pleaufure he had to talke with Florinda: and to make himselfe to be known in the company, hee went to Auenturade, whiche was the daughter of an old knight that dwelt hard by the house, whiche from her youth was brought vp with Florinda, in fuch familiar forte, as she knewe all the secrets of her harte. Amadour, as well for the bonetise that he found in her, as for the liuing of II.II. ducates by the yeare which she shoule haue with her in mariage, determined to geue her fuch intertainement, as one that was disposed to marry her. Wherunto the gentlewoman did willingly recline her eare: and bicaufe he was poore, and the father of the damofell rich, she thought that her father would neuer accorde to the mariage, except it were by meanes of the Countesse of Arande. Wherupon she went to madame Florinda, and faide vnto her: "Madame, you fee this Castillan gentleman, which fo oftentimes talketh with me, I doe beleue that his pretence is to marry me: you do know what a father I haue, who will neuer geue his consent, if he be not perfuaded therunto by my Lady your mother and you," Florinda which loued the damofell as her selfe, affured her that shee would take vpon her to bring that matter to paffe, with fo earnest travaile as if the case were her own. Then Auenturade brought Amadour before Florinda, who after he had faluted her, was like to fall in a fowne for ioy, and although he were compted the moie eloquent perfone of Spaine, yet was he now become mute and dumb before Florinda, wherat she maruelled much: for albeit she was but xii. yeares of age, yet she vnderstode that there was no
man in Spaine that had a better tongue, or a more conuenable grace than he. And seing that he said nothing vnto her, she spake vnto him in this wise: “The fame which is bruted of you (Sir Amadour) throughout the whole countrie of Spaine, is such as it maketh you knowen and esteemed in this company, and giueth desire and occasion to thofe that know you, to imploie them selves to do you pleasure: wherefore if there be any thing wherein I may gratifie you, vfe me I befeech you.” Amadour that gazed vpon the beautie of that lady, was rapt and surprised, not well able to render thankes vnto her. And although Florinda maruelled to see him without aunswere, yet she imputed it rather to bashfulnesse than to any force of loue, and departed without further talke. Amadour knowing the vertue which in fo tender yeares began to appeare in Florinda, faide vnto her whome he purpofed to marry: “Doe not maruell, though my speache do fayle before Madame Florinda, for the vertues and discretion, hidden in that yonge perfonage, did fo amaze mee, as I wife not what to fay: but I praye you Auenturade (quod he) who knoweth all her secretes, to tell me, if it be otherwyfe poiffeble, but that she hath the harte of all the Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court: for they which know her and doe not loue her, be ftones, or beasts.” Auenturade whiche then loued Amadour more than all the men in the worlde, and would conceale nothing from him, faide vnto him: that Madame Florinda was generally beloved: but for the cuftome of the countrie, fewe men did speake unto her. “And (quod she) as yet I fe none that make any semblance of loue vnto her, but two young Princes of Spaine, which deire to marry her, whereof the one is the fonne of the Infant Fortune, and the other of the Duke of Cadoue.” “I praye you then (quod Amadour) to tell me which of them as you think, doth loue her beft.” “She is fo wife” faid Auenturade, “that she will confesse or graunt her loue to none, but to such as her mother pleafeth. But yet fo far as we can iudge she fauoureth mucho better the fonne of the Infant Fortune, than the Duke of Cadoue: and for that I take you to be a man of good iudgment, this day you fhall haue occafion to confider the truth: fo the fonne of the Infant Fortune is brought vp in Court, and is one of the goodliest and perfectest
yong Gentlemen in all christendome: and if the mariage do pro-
cede, according to our opinion, which be her women, he shalbe
assured to have Madame Florinda: and then shalbe ioyned
together the goodliest couple in the world. And you must under-
stand, that although they be both very yong, she of xii. yeares
of age, and he of xv. yet is there three yeares past since their loute
first began: and if you be disposed aboue other to obtain her
favour, mine aduise is, that ye become friend and seruaunt vnfo
him." Amadour was very joyful full to heare tell that his Lady
loued some man, trusting that in tyme he shoulde wynne the
place, not of husbande, but of seruaunt: for he feared nothing
at all of her vertue, but a lacke of disposition to loue. And after
this communication, Amadour bent himselfe to haunt the societie
of the sonne of the Infant Fortune, whose good will he sone
recouered, for all the pastimes whiche the yong Prince loued,
Amadour could doe right well; and aboue other, he was very
cunning in riding of horsifes, and in handling al kindes of armes
and weapons, and in all other pastimes and games mette for a yong
Gentleman. Warres began in Languedoc, and Amadour was
forced to retrewe with the Gouernour, to his great forowe and grief,
for he had there no meane to returne to the place where he
might se Florinda. For which cauſe he spake to his owne bro-
ther, whiche was Steward of the king of Spaine's houshold, and
declared vnfo him what courtesie he had found in the hous of the
Countesse of Arande, and of the damosel Auenturade: praying
him that in his absence he would do his induuour, that the mariage
might procee de, and that he would obtaine for him the credit and
good opinion of the king and Queene, and of al his friendes. The
Gentleman which loued his brother, as well by nature's instigation,
as for his great vertues, promisef him his trauail and induurie
to the uttermoſte. Which he did in such wife as the old man her
father, nowe forgetting other naturall respect, began to marke
and beholde the vertues of Amadour, which the Countesse of
Arande, and specially faire Florinda, painted and semy forth
vnfo him, and likewyſe the Yong earl of Arande whiche increafed
in yeares, and therewithall in loue of thofe that were vertuous,
and geuen to honest exercife. And when the mariage was agreed
between the parentes, the said Steward sent for his brother whilest the truce endured betwene the two kings. About this time, the king of Spain retired to Madric, to anoyd the emil aire that was in many places, where by the aduise of diuers of his counsell, and at the request of the Countesse of Arande, he made a mariage betwene the yong Duchesse the heire of Medina Celi, and the yong Earle of Arande, as wel for the vnion of their house, as also for the loue he bare to the said Countesse. And this mariage was celebrated in the Castell of Madric, whereunto repaired Amadour, who so well obtained his suite, as he married her, of whom he was muche better beloued, than his fmal loue toward her deferred, fauing that it was a couerture and meanes for him to frequent the place where his minde and delight incessantly remained: after he was maried, he became well acquainted and familiar in the house of the Countesse, so that he was so conversaunt amonges the Ladies, as if he had bene a woman: and although hee was then but xxxi. yeares of age, he was so wife and graue, as the Countesse imparted vnto him all her affaires, commaunding her sone and daughter to intertayne him, and to credite all things wherein hee gane counsell. Hauing wonne this great effimation, he behaued him selue so wyse and politike, that eu'n the partie whiche he loued knewe no parte of his affection: but by reason of the loue that Florinda bare to the wife of Amadour, whome shee loued more than any other woman, she was so familiar with him, as shee dissembled no part of her thought, declaring vnto him all the loue that she bare the sone of the Infant Fortune: and he that desired nothing more than throughly to winne her, ceasst not from continuance of talke, not caring whereof he spake, so that he might hold her with long discourse: Amadour had not after his mariage continued a moneth in that companie, but was constrained to retire to the warres, where hee continued more than two yeares, without retourne to see his wife, who still abode in the place where she was brought vp. During the time, Amadour wrote many letters vnto his wife, but the chiefest substance thereof consisted in commendations to Florinda, who for her part failed not to render like vnto him, many times writing some pretie worde or posie with her own hand, in the
letter of Auenturade. Which made her husband Amadour
diligent many times to write again vnto her, but in al this doing
Florinda conceiued nothing, but that he loued her with fuch like
love as the brother oweth to the sister. Many times Amadour
went and came, but in the space of five yeares he neuer sawe
Florinda twoo monethes together: notwithstanding, Loue in de-
spite of their distaunce and long abfence, ceafeed not to increafe:
and it chaunced that hee made a voyage home to fee his wyfe,
and founde the Countefle farre from the court, bicaufe the kyng
of Spain was done to Vandeloufie, and had taken with him the
yong Earle of Arande, whiche then began to bere armes. The
Countefle was retired to a house of pleafure, which shee had vpon
the frontiers of Arragon and Nauarre, and was right joyfull when
shee fee Amadour, who almofte three yeares had bene abfent.
He was very well recieued of euery man, and the countefle com-
maunded that he shoule be vfed and entreated as her howne fonne.
During the time that he fojourne with her, the communicaded
vnto him all the affaires of her house, and committed the greateft
truft thereof to his discretion, who wan fuch credite in the house
as in all places where he lifte, the dores were opened vnto him:
whose wyfedome and good behauiour made him to be esteemed
like a Sainct or Aungell. Florinda, for the loue and good wyll she
bare unto his wyfe and him, made muche of him in all places where
shee sawe him: and therefore tooke no hede vnto his countenaunce,
for that her hart as yet felt no passion, but a certen contentation
in her felfe, when she was in the preference of Amadour, and of
any other thing she thought not. Amadour to auoyde the judg-
ment of them that haue proued the difference of Louers counte-
aunces, was very ware and circumfpeft: for when Florinda came
to speake vnto hym secretly (like one that thought no hurt) the
fier hydden in his brefte, burned fo fore, as he could not flaye
the bluhyng colour of his face, nor the sparkes whiche flewe
out of his eyes: and to the intent, that through long frequen-
tation, none might efpie the fame, he intertained a very
fayre Ladye called Paulina, a woman in his tyme accompted fo
fayre, as fewe men whiche behelde her, coulde efcape her bondes,
This Ladye Paulina vnderstanding howe Amadour vfed his Loue
at Barfelone and Parpignon, and how he was beloued of the fayreh
Ladies of the Countrie, and aboue all of the Counteffe of Palamons,
whiche in beautie was pryed to be the fayrefte in all Spayne, and
of many other, fayde vnto hym: “That fhee had great pitie of
hym, for that after fo manye good Fortunes, he had maried a wyfe
fo foule and deformed.” Amadour vnderstanding well by thofe
woordes, that she had defyre to remedy her owne neceffitie, vfed
the beft maner he coulde demifhe, to the intent that in makynge
her beleue a lye, he shoule lyde from her the truthe. But thee
subtile and well experimented in Loue, was not contente with talke,
but perceyuing well that his harte was not fatiffied with her Loue,
doubted that hee coulde not ferue his Lady in fecrette wife, and
therefore marked hym fo nere, as daylye she had a reftpecte and
watche vnto hys eyes, whiche hee coulde fo well diffemle, as she
was able to judge nothyng, but by darke fufpicion, not without
great payne and dificultie to the Gentleman, to whome Florinda
 ignoraunt of all their malice dyd reftore many tymes in preffence
of Paulina, whose demeaner then was fo familiar, as he with mar-
vellous payne refrayned his lookes againt his harte and defire:
and to auoyde that no inconuenience shoulde ensue, one daye
speaking to Florinda, as they were both leaning at a wyndow, fayd
these words: “Madame, I befeche you to tell mee whether it is
better to fpeake or to die.” Whereunto Florinda anfwered readily,
saying: “I will euuer geue councell to my frendes to fpeake and not to dye: for there be fewe wordes spoken but that
they may be amended, but the life lofl cannot be recovered.”
“Promife me then” faid Amadour, “that not onely ye will accept
those wordes which I will fay, but alfo not to be aftronned or
abahfed, till ye haue heard the end of my tale.” To whom
she anfwered: “Say what it pleave you, for if you do affray
me none other shall affure me.” Then he began to faye vnto
her: “Madame, I haue not yet bene defhous to difclofe vnto
you the great affection which I beare you, for twoo caufes: the
one, bicaufe I attend by my long furvice, to fhewe you the ex-
perience thereof: the other, for that I doubted you would thinke
a great presumption in me (which am but a poore gentleman) to
infinuate my felfe in place whereof I am not worthy: and although
I were a Prince as you be, the loyaltie yet of your harte, will not permitte any other, but him which hath already taken possession (the fonne I meane of the Infant Fortune) to vse in take any matter of loue: but Madame, like as necessitie in time of great warr constrainne men to make haunted of their owne goodes, and to consume the greene corne, that the enemy take no profit and reliefe thereof, even so doe I hazard to aduaunce the frute, which in time I hope to gather, that your enemies and mine may enjoye thereof none aduaantage. Knowe ye Madame, that from the time of your tender yeares, I have in such wyse dedicated my selfe to your servise as I cease not still to aspire the meanes to achieve your grace and fauour: and for that occasion, I did marry her whome I thought you did loue best: and knowing the loue you beare to the fonne of the Infant Fortune, I haue induedoure to ferue him as you haue fene: and that wherein I thought you dyd delighte, I haue accomplisht to the vtermofte of my power. You doe see that I haue gotten the good wil of the Countesse your mother, of the Earle your brother, and of all those that doe beare you good wyll: in futche forte as in this house I am esteemed, not like a seruuant, but as a fonne: and all the labour whiche I haue sustayned these five yeares past, was for none other caufe, but to lyue all the daies of my life with you: and vnderstand you wel that I am none of those whiche by these meanes doe pretend to receiu of you anye profite or pleasure, other than that which is good and vertuous: I do know that I can neuer marrie you, and if I could I would not for letting the loue that you beare vnto him, whom I defire to be your husbände, likewis to loue you in vicious forte, like them that hope to recompence their servise with dishonour of their Ladies, I am so farre of from that affection, as I had rather be dead than to see you by defert worthy of leffe loue, and that your vertue shoulde by any meanes be diminished for any pleasure that might happen vnto mee. I do pretend and craue for the ende and recompence of my servise, but one thing: which is, that you will continue my loyall and faithfull maistresse, neuer to withdraue from me your wonted grace and fauour, and that you will maintaine mee in that estate wherein I am. Repofinge your trust and fidelitie in me more than in any other, making your selfe so
affured of me, as if for your honor or any caufe touching your person, you stand in neede of the life of a Gentleman, the same shall right willingly be employed at your commandement: in like maner all thinges vertuous and honest which ever I shal attempt I beseech you to thinke to be done onely for the loue of you: and if I haue done for Ladies of leffe reputation than you be, any thing worthy of regard, be affured that for such a maistrefse as you be, my enterprifes shall increafe in such fort, as the things which I found difficult and impossible, shall be easelie for me to accomplifhe: but if you do not accept mee to be wholly yours, I determine to glue ouer armes, and to renounce valiaunce, because it hath not succoured me in neceffitie: wherfore, Madame, I humbly beseech you that my iust request may not be refused, fith with your honour and confience you cannot well denie the same." The yong Lady hearing this vnaccustomed fute, began to chaunge her colour, and to cafte downe her eyes like an amased woman, notwithstandinge, being wyse and discreet she said vnto him: "If (Amadour) your request vnto me be none other than you pretende, wherefore have you discoursed this long Oration? I am afraid left under this honest pretence there lurketh some hidden malice to deceiue the ignorance of my youth, wherby I am wrapt in great perplexitie how to make you aunfwer: for to refuse the honest amitie which you haue offered, I shal doe contrary to that I haue done hitherto, for I haue repose in you more trust than in any liuing creature: my confidence or mine honour cannot gaine by your demaunde, nor the loue that I beare to the fonne of the Infant Fortune, which is grounded vpon fayth of mariage: where you say that you pretende nothinge but that is good and vertuous, I cannot tell what thing should let me to make you aunfwer according to your request, but a feare that I conceive in hart, founded vpon the small occasion that you haue to vfe that speache, for if you haue alreadye what you demaunde, what doth conftraine you to speake so affectuoufle?" Amadour that was not without an aunfweare, said vnto her: "Madame, you speake very wifely, and you do me so much honour, for the confidence and truſte which according to your sayinge you do repose in me, as if I doe not content my felse with such a benefite, I were the vn-
worthiest man alive: but vnderstande Madame, that he which goeth about to bulde a perpetual mansion, ought to have regard to a sure and firme foundacion: wherfore I which desire perpetually to remayne your seruaunte, doe seeke not onely the meanes to kepe my selfe neare about you, but also to foresee that none doe vnderstand the great affection that I do beare you: for although my mind be so vertuous and honest, as the same may disclose it self before the whole worlde, yet there bee some fo ignorant and vnskilfull of louers harts, as manye times will judge contrary to trouth, wherof proceedeth so ill brute and report, as if the effectes were wicked: the cause which hath made me so bold to say and declare vnto you thus much, is the suspicione that Paulina hath conceyued, for that I cannot loue her: who doth nothing els but marke and espie my countenaunce in euerye place, and when you vse your familiar talke with me before her, I am so afeare to shewe any signe whereby shee maye grounde or verifie her iudgemente, that I fall into that inconuenience, which I would willingly auoyde: wherefore I haue thought good to befeech you (before her and those which you do know to be so malicious) to refraine from talkinge with mee so sodainlye, for I had rather dye, than anye liuinge creature should haue mistrust thereof: and were it not for the loue which I beare vnto your honour, I had not yet declared the same vnto you, for I do hold my selfe sufficiante happy and content of the onely loue and auffaunce that you put in me, crauing nought els butt the continuance of the same.” Florinda wel satiiffyed with this aunswer, began to feele in harte a further thing to growe than euer she did before: and hearing the honest reafons alleaged by him, said, that her honestie and vertue shoulde make aunfiware for her, and therewithall assented to his demaunde: whereof whether Amadour were joyfull, Louers neede not doubt: but Florinda credited more his counfell, than he would haue had her. For shee being fearefull and timerous, not onely before Paulina, but in all other places, vfed farre other countenaunce than she was wont to do: and in this alienation of her former familiarity, shee misliked the conuerfation that Amadour had with Paulina, whose beauty was such, that shee could not otherwise beleue, but that shee loued her: and Florinda to passe ouer her
heauineffe, daily vfed the company of Auenturade, that began
maruelously to be ialous betweene her husbande and Paulina,
whereof shee made complaint many times to Florinda, who com-
forted her so well as shee coulde, like one attached with the same
difeafe: Amadour coniecturinge by the countenaunce of Florinda,
that not onely shee was estraunged from hym through his former
advertisement, but also that there was some other displeasure con-
cyued, comming vpon a time, from euensong out of the Monas-
terie, he fayd vnto her: "Madame, what countenaunce do you
make me?" "Such as I thincke doth please you best," answered
Florinda. Then Amadour sulpeeting a matter, to know whether
it were true, began to faye: "Madame, I have so vfed Paulina,
as the beginneth to give ouer her opinion of you." She answered
him: "Ye cannot do a better thing either for your selue or for
me: for in doing your selue a pleasure, you do honour vnto me."
Amadour judged by the words that she thought he toke pleasure
to talke of Paulina, wherewith he became so desperate, as hee
could not forbear to say vnto her in anger: "Madame, you begin
very fone to torment your feruante: there was neuer paine more
greeuous vnto mee, than to be forced to speake to her whom I
love not: and fithens al that which I do for your servise is taken
in ill part, I wil neuer speake againe vnto her, whatsoeuer happen:
and to dissemble mine anger and contentacion, I wil addresse my
selue to some place hereby, till your fancie be ouer past: but I
hope I shall receive newes from my captaine, to retourne to the
warres, where I will so longe continue, as you shall well knowe,
that nothing els but you alone doth force me to tarrie here." And
in saying so, without attendeing for her aunswere, hee incontinently
departed, and shee remayned so sad and penive as any woman
could be: and loue began to shewe his greate force in such wyfe
as shee knowing her wrong incessantly, wrote to Amadour praying
him to retourne home, which he did within a few dayes after that
his choler was past, and to tell you what busineffe there was, to
interrupte and breake the ialousie conceuied, it were superfluous:
but in the ende, he wanne the field, so that she promisied him, not
only to beleuene that he loued not Paulina, but also helde her selue
assured that it should be to him a martirdome intollerable, to
speake vnto her or any other, except it were to do her servise: after that loue had vanquished this present fulpicion, and that the two louers began to take more pleasure in their mutuell talke than euer they did before: newes came that the king of Spaine was about to adrese his Armie to Saulfe, wherfore he that was wont to be there with the first, was not like now to sayle to augment his honour: but true it is, that his-griefe was presenty more great, than at other times before, aswell for losinge the pleasure which he enjoyed, as for feare to finde some mutacion and change at his returne, because he saw Florinda purfued by great Princes and Lords, and alreadye come to the age of xv. yeares, and thought that if she were married in his absence, he should neuer haue occasion to fee her againe, except the Countffe of Arande would appointe his wyfe to waite uppon her: for accomplishment whereof he made such frendes, as the Countffe and Florinda promised him, that into what foever place she were married his wyfe Auenturade should attende uppon her: and although it was in question that Florinda should be married into Portugall, yet determined that his wyfe should neuer forsake her: and uppon this assurance, not without vnspeakeable sorow, Amadour departed and left his wife with the Countffe. When Florinda was alone, her seruaunt departed, shee gaue her selfe to all vertuous life, hoping thereby to atteine the fame of a most perfecte Lady, and to be counted worthie the interteignemente of such a seruaunt. Amadour arriued at Barfalone, was banqueted and intertayned of the Ladies after the old maner, but they finding him so altered and chaunged, thought that Mariage could not haue had such power vppon man, as it had ouer him: for he seemed then to disdaine, what sometime he greatly defired, and specially the Countffe of Palamons, whom he derely loued, could deuise by no meanes to make him go alone home to his lodging: Amadour tarried at Barfalone so little while as hee coulde, because hee might not come late to the place where hee purposed to winne and atchieue honour: and being arriued at Saulfe, great and cruell warres were comenced betwene the two kings, which I purpose not to recite, ne yet the noble enterpries done by Amadour, whose fame was bruted aboue the rest of his companions. The duke of Nagyers arriuinge at Parpignon, had
charge of two thousand men, and prayed Amadour to be his Lieue tenaunte, who with that hand ferued so well, as no erie was hard in al the skirmishes, other than of Nagyers. It chaunced that the king of Thunis, which of long time had warre with the Spaniards, vnderstandinge howe the kinges of Spaine and Fraunce were together by the eares at Parpignon and Nar bonne, thought that in better time he could not anoye the king of Spaine: wherefore he sent a great number of Foifsts and other vessels, to robbe and spoile thofe frontiers which were ill guarded and kept: they of Barfalone seing a number of Shippes paule before the Towne, aduertifed the king that was at Saulfe, who immediatly sent the Duke of Nagyers to Palamos: and when the shippes despered that the place was well guarded, they made as though they would passe further: but about midnight they retourned, and landed so many men, that the Duke of Nagyers was taken prifoner. Amadour which was very vigilant, hearing allarme, prefently assembled so many men as he could, and defended him selfe so wel, as the force of his enemies a long time could not hurt him: but in thende knowing that the Duke of Nagyers was taken prifoner, and that the Turks were determined to burn the Citie of Palamos, and then to fier the house which he strongly had forced againste them, bee thought it better to render him selfe, than to be caufe of the loffe of so manye good fouldiers as were vnder his gouernmente, and also by putting him selfe to raunfome, he hoped in time to come to see Florinda: then he submitted him selfe to a Turke called Derlyn, the gouernor of the king of Thunis, who conueyed him home to his maister, where he was well enter taigned, and better kept: for they thought that hauing him in their hands, they had gotten the only Achilles of Spaine. In this fort Amadour continued almoft the space of two yeares, in the seruice of the king of Thunis: newes came into Spaine of this ouerthrow, wherof the frends of the Duke of Nagyers, were very sorowfull: but they that loued the honor of their countrie, thoughte Amadour to bee the greatest loffe, the brute wherof was noyfed in the house of the Countesse of Arande, wher at that time the poore gentlewoman Auenturade lay very fore sicke. The Countesse suspecting very much the affection that Amadour
bare vnto her daughter, which he suffered and dissembled for his vertue's sake, called her daughter aside, and told her the pitious newes. Florinda which could well dissemble said unto her, that it was a great losse for all their house, but specially she pitied the state of his poore wife, because at that time she was so fore sickle. But seeing her mother weep so bitterly, she let fall some teares to keepe her company, leaft through to much diffimulacion her loue might be discouered. After that time, the Countesse spake to her many times, but she could neuer perceiue by her countenance, any cause of certaine suspicion. I will leaue to speake of the voyages, the prayers, the supplications and fastings, which Florinda did ordinarily make for the safegard and prosperitie of Amadour, who incontinently so fone as he was ariued at Thunis, sent newes to his frends, and by a sure messenger aduertized Florinda, that he was in good health and hope to retourne. Which newes was to the poore Lady, the only meanes to releue and ease her forow. And doubt ye not, but the meanes of writing, was utterly debarred from Amadour, wherof Florinda acquitted her self so diligently, as by her letters and epiftles, he received great consolation and comfort. The Countesse of Arande received commaundement from the king to repaire to Saragofa, where hee that time was ariued. And there she found the yong Duke of Cardonne making fute to the king and Queene, for mariage of her daughter. The Countesse vnwilling to disobey the king, agreed, thinkinge that her daughter being very yonge, had none other affection, but that which already had taken fure impression. When the accorde was concluded, she fayde vnto her daughter, that she had choosen that matche, as best worthy to ioyne with her perfon. Her daughter considering bowe in a thing already done it was to late to take counsell, said vnto her, that God was to be praised in all things. And seeing her mother so far alienated from her intent, she thought it better to shew her selfe obedient, than to take pitie vpon herselfe. And to comfort her in that forowe, she vnderstode that the infant Fortune was at the point of death. But before her mother or any other perfon, she shewed not so much as one signe or token therof, strayning her grief so much, as
the teares by force retiringe to her harte, did cause the bloud
to issue forth at her Nofe, in such abundance, as her life was in
present daunger. And to recover her of that disease, she was
maried vnto him, for whose fake shee had rather haue chaunged
her life for present death. After the mariage, Florinda went
wyth her husbande into the Duchy of Cardonne, and in her
company Auenturade, to whom she secretly made complaint,
as wel of her mother's rigor, as also of the forow she conceyued
for the losse of the honne of the Infant Fortune. But of her
griefe for Amadour, she spake no worde, but by way of comforting
her. This yong lady then determined to haue God and the
respect of her honoure before her cies, and so wel to dissemble
her griefes, as none at any time shoulde perceive that shee mis-
liked her husband. In this fort Florinda passed long time,
in a life no leffe pleasaunt than death. The report whereof she
sent to her good servaunt Amadour, who understanding her
great loue, and wel disposed hart, and the loue shee bare to the
Infant Fortune, thought that it was impoffible she could live
long, and lamented her state more than his owne. This griefe
augmented his paine of imprifonmente, wishinge to haue re-
mayned a flaue all the days of his life, so that Florinda had
had a husbande respondent to her desire, forgettinge his owne
griefe by feeling that his frende did suffer. And because he
underfode by a secret friend which he had gotten in the Court
of the king of Thunis, that the king was minded to offer him
the gibbet, or els to make him renounce his fayth, for the desire
hee had to retaine him still, and to make him a good Turke,
he behaued himfelf so well, wyth him that toke him prifoner,
that he gaue him leave to depart vpon his fayth, taxinge him at
fo greate raunfone, as he thought a man of fo small substance
was never able to pay. And fo without speaking to the king his
maister, hee let him go vpon his fayth. After hee had shewed
himfelfe at the Court of the king of Spaine, he departed incon-
tinently to his frends to get his raunfone, and went straight to
Barfalone, whether the yong Duke of Cardonne, his mother, and
Florinda, was gone aboute certaine affaires. Auenturade so fone
as she heard tell that her husband was come, declared the fame
to Florinda, who seemed for her sake greatly to rejoicing thereat. But fearing that the desire she had to see him would make her change countenance, and that they which knew not the cause therof, would conceive some ill opinion, she stood still at a window to see him come a far of: and so fone as she espied him, she went downe a paire of darke stairs that none might perceive her change of colour. When she had embraced Amadour, she led him into her chamber, and from thence to her mother in law, which had never seene him before. He had not continued there two dayes, but he was so well beloved, as he was before in the house of the Countesse of Arande. I will omitte the words and talke betwene Florinda and Amadour, and the complaints which he made vnto her of his ill adventure, that she had fustayned in his absence. And after many tears uttered by her, for the heauines she had taken, awse well for the mariage against her wil, as for the losse of him that she loued so dearely, and for him whom she thoughte neuer to see againe, shee determined to take her consolation in the loue and fidelitie that she bare to Amadour, which notwithstanding she durst not open and declare: but he that much doubted therof, left no occasion and time to let her know and vnderstande the great loue he bare her. And euyn vppon the point that she was ready to receive him, not as a feraunt, but for her assured and perfec frend, there chaunced a maruellous fortune: for the king, for certaine matters of importance, incontinentlly sent forth Amadour, wherof his wyfe conceyued such sorrow, as hearing those newes, she founed and fell from the stayres where she stood, wherewith she hurtt herfelfe so sore, as neuer after she reuied. Florinda (that by the death of her had lost all comfort) made such sorrow, as one that was defitute of good frendes and kinfolke, but Amadour toke the same in worst part: for he had not only lost one of the moft honest women that euer was, but also the meanes that he shoulde neuer after that time haue occasion to visit Florinda. For which cause he fell into such ficknes, as he was like to have died sodainly. The old Ducheffe of Cardonne, incessantly did vifite him, and alledged many philosophical reasons to make him paciently to receive death, bu
it auayled nothing: for if death of thone fide did torment him, loue on the other did augment his martirdome. Amadour seing that his wyfe was buried, and that the king had fent for him, (hauing no occasion of longer abode there) he entred into such dispaire, as hee seemed to be oute of his wittes. Florinda which in comforting him was almost desolate, remayne by him one whole afternone, vſinge very honest and difcreete talke vnto him, thinking thereby to diminifhe the greatnesse of his forrowe, and affured him that shee would deuife waies how he might viſite her more oft than he did thinke for. And becaufe he muſt depart the next morning, and was fo feeble and weake that he could not rife from his bed, he intreated her to come and fe him at night after every man was retirèd to bed: which she pro-mised to doe, not knowing that loue's extremety was voyd of reafon. And he that faw no hope euer after that time to fee her againe, whom fo long time he had fervèd: and of whom he had never receyued other interteignment than that you haue heard, was fo beaten and ouercom with loue long diffembled, and of the despaire he conceived, that (all meanes to vfe her company taken away) he purpoſed to play double or quit, either to lofe her, or to win her fauour for euer, and to pay himſelf at one instant the rewarde which he thought he had right wel deferued. Wherfore he caufed the curtaines of his bed to be drawen, that they which came into the chamber mighte not fee him, complainyn of ficknes more than he was wont to do, whereby they of the house thought he would not haue liued xxiv. houres. After euery one of the house had viſited him at night, Florinda (at the special request of her husband) came to fee him, thinking for his comfort to vter vnto him her affection, and how aboue all other she would love him, fo far as her honor did permit: and fitting downe in a chayre at the bed's head, she began to comfort him, and therwithal powerd out many teares. Amadour feing her fowrawful and penſife, thought that in her great torment he might eafely attaine the effect of his intent, and lifted himſelf vp in his bed, which Florinda perceyuing, she would haue staied him, becaufe she thought that through weakenes he was not able to moue: and kneeling vpon his knees, he faid vnto her: "Muſt
I for euermore forgo your fight mine owne deare Lady?" And in saying so he fell downe betwene her armes like one that fainted for lack of strength. Then poore Florinda imbraced him, and of long time held him vp, doing all that was possible for his comfort. But the medecine she gaue him to ease his sorow, did rather increase the same more strong: for in fayning himself half dead, without speaking any word, he attempted that which the honor of womanhode doth defend. When Florinda perceiued his ill intent, she could scarce beleue the same, considering his honest requests made before time, and therefor asked him what it was that he desired. But Amadour fearing to heare her aunswere which he knew well could be none other but chaufe and vertuous, without further talke, pursued his purpose so earnestly as he could, wherewith Florinda being confounded did suspect he had bin out of his wittes rather than beleue that he wente about her difhonor. Wherefore with loude voice she called a gentleman that was in the chamber. Which Amadour hearing, utterly in dispaire, throw himself so fodenly into his bed, as the gentleman thought he had beeene dead. Florinda rising out of the chaire, said vnto him: "Goe quickly and fetch some good vinegar." Which the gentleman did. Then Florinda began to say vnto him: "Amadour, what follie hath inchaunted your wisedome? And what is that which you would have done vnto me?" Amadour that through the force of loue had lost al reason, said vnto her: "Doth my long servise merite a recompence of such cruelty?" "And wher is the honesty then," said Florinda, "which so many times you haue preached vnto me?" "Ah, madame!" said Amadour: "I beleue it is impossible your selfe more faithfully to loue your owne honour than I do. For when you were vnmaried, I could so well subdue my harte and affection, as you did neuer understand my will and desire. And now that you be married, to the intente your honour may reafe in couerte, what wrong do I to ake that which is mine owne, for by force of loue I haue won you? He that first enjoyed your harte, hath so ill followed the victorie of your bodye, as hee hath well defered to lofe altogether. He that poiffeth your body, is not worthy to haue your hart, wherefore your body is none of his, ne yet he
AMADOUR AND FLORINDA.

hath no title in the same. But I Madame, these five or fixe yeares have susetyed suche paynes and travaile for your sake, as you are not ignoraunt but to me appertayneth both your body and harte, for whose sake I haue vtterlye forgotten mine owne. And if you can finde in your hart to defende mee from my right, doubt ye not but they which haue proved the forces of loue, wil lay the blame on you, which hath in this fort robbed me from my libertie, and with your heauenly graces hath obfcurued my fences, that not knowing hereafter what to do, I am confrayned to go without hope for euere to see you againe. Notwithstanding warrante your selve, that in what place fo euere I am, you shall still possesse my harte, which shall continue your's for euere, be I upon the lande or water, or betweene the hands of my moft cruel enemies. But if I could recouer before my departure, that surety of you which the greatnesse of my loue deferueth, I shall be strong enough paciently to beare the griefes of my long abfence. And if it pleafe you not to grant me this request, you shal shortly heare tell that your rigor hath rendred vnto me a moft vnhappy and cruel death." Florinda no leffe astonned than forie, to heare suche words procede from him, of whom she neuer had any suche fuspicion, weeping faide unto him: "Alas, Amadour, is this the meaning of those vertuous words which sithens the beginning of my youth ye haue vttered vnto me? Is this the honor of the confidence, which you haue many times perfwaded me rather to die than lofe the same? Haue you forgotten the good examples recited vnto me of vertuous dames that haue ressisted foolish loue? And is this the maner of your contempt of Ladies that were foolish and vaine, whose light behauiour you disfembled fo much to abhorre? I cannot beleue Amadour that you are druen into such madnes and furie, as the feare of God, your owne conscience, and the estimacion of mine honor, should be altogether out of your minde and memorie. But if it fo be as you say, I do praife the goodnes of God, which hath prevented the mishap that nowe I am fallen into, in shewinge me by your words, the hart which I did not know. For haung loft the fonne of the Infant Fortune, who not onely is maried into another place, but also loued another, and
I now married to him, which I cannot love, I thought and determined wholly, with all mine hart and affection to love you, founding the same upon that vertue which I knew to be in you, which love by your meanes onelye I have conceiued, and threfore, did more esteeme my honor and conscience, than the price of mine owne life. Vpon assurance of this stone of honestie, I am come hither thinking to build a most sure foundation. But (Amadour) in one moment thou haft declared, how in place of a pure foundation, thy building is reared vpon a light sand, and vnconstant ground, or els vpon a filthy and foul quamire. And where I began to erect a good part of the lodgings of this building vpon the ground of the fidelitie, hoping to dwell there for euer, fodenly thou haft overthrown the whole plot. Wherefore, you must immediately breake in fonder the hope and credit that euermore you haue found in me, and determine that in what place foeuer I be, not to pursue me either by worde or countenaunce. And do not thinke, that I can or will at anye time hereafter change this mine opinion, reciting this my last adieu with great sorrow and griefe. But if I had made an othe of this perfect amitie and love, I know mine harte would haue died vpon this breach, although the affectionment in that I am deceiued, is so great, as I am wel assured it will make my life either short or forowfull: and therefore I bid you farewell and that for euer.” I purpose not to tel you the forow which Amadour felt by hearing those words, because it is impossible not only to write them, but also to thinke them, except it be of such as haue had experience of the like. And seing that vpon this cruel conclusion she would haue gone away, he caught her by the arme, knowing well that if he did not remove that ill opinion, which by his owne occasiion she had conceyued, hee should lose her for euer. Wherfore he saide vnto her with a very faint chere: “Madame, al the dayes of my life I haue desired to lone a woman endued with honestie and vertue: and because I have found so few, I would fain haue tried whether your person had been worthy of estimation and love, wherof now I am wel assured, and humbly do praise God therefore, because mine hart is addressed to such perfection: beseeching you to pardon this fond and bold
attempt, sith you see that the end doth redound to your owne honor and contentacion.” Florinda, which began to know by him the malice of other men, like as she was hard to beleue the euill wher it was, euen so she was more difficile to credite the good where it was not, and said vnto him: “I pray to God your words be true: yet am I not so ignorant but that the state of mariagce wherein I am, hath made me evidently to know the strong passion of blind loue which hath forced you vnto this follie: for if God had lofed my hande, I am wel assured you would not haue plucked back the bridile: they that attempt to seeke after vertue, do not take the way that you do tred: but this is sufficient if I haue lightly beleued any honeftie in you, it is time for me now to know the truth, that I may rid my self from you.” And in saying so, Florinda went out of the chamber, and all the nighte long, she neuer left weeping, feeling such great grieve in that alteracion, as her hart had much to do, to sustaine the assaults of forrow that loue had made: for although reason thoughte neuer to loue him againe, yet the hart which is not subject to our fancie, would not accord to that crueltie: for which consideracion, she loued him no leffe than she was wont to do, and knowing that loue was the cause of that fault, she purposed for satisfaction of loue, to Loue him with all her hart, and yet for the obedience and fealtie due to her honor, she thought neuer to make any demblance. In the morning Amadour departed in this fort, troubled as you haue hearde, neuertheless his couragious heart centred not in dispaire, but rened a fresh hope once againe to fee Florinda, and to win her favour: then he toke his journey towards the Court of Spaine (which was at Tolledo) taking his way by the Countesse of Arande, wher late in an evening he arriued, and found the Countesse verye sicke for the absence of her daughter Florinda: when shee saw Amadour, shee kifed and imbraced him, as if he had beene her owne child, afwel for the loue she bare vnto him, as for the like which she doubted that he bare to Florinda, of whom very earnestly she inquired for newes, who tolde her the beft that he could deuise, but not the whole truth, and confessed vnto her the loue betweene Florinda and him, (which Florinda had still conceiled and kept secrete) praying her
ayde to bring him againe into her fauour: and so the next morn-
ing he departed. And after he had done his businesse with the
Queene, he repayred to the warres, so fadde and chaungen in all
his condicions, as the Ladies, Captaynes and all they that were
wonte to keepe him companie, did not know him. His apparell was
all blacke, mourning for the death of his wife, wherby he covered
the sorrow which was hid in his hart. In this wyse Amadour paffed
three or 4 yeres before he returned to the Court. And the Coun-
tefle of Arande which heard tell that Florinda was so much al-
tered, as it would haue moued any hart to behold her, fent for her,
hoping that she would haue come, but her expefacion was frustrate,
for when Florinda vnderftode that Amadour had told her mother
the good will betweene them, and that her mother being fo wife
and vertuous giuing credite to Amadour, did beleue his report,
she was in maruelous perplexitie, because of the one fide she
faw that her mother did efteeme him fo well, and on the other
fide if she declared vnto her the truth, Amadour woulde conceiue
difpleafure: which thing she had rather die than to do: wherefore
she thought herfelfe strong enou fhould chaffife him of his folly,
without heipe of frends. Againe, she perceyued that by difsem-
bling the efuil which she knew by him, she fhould be constrained
by her mother and her frends, to speake and beare him good coun-
tenaunce, wherby she feared he would be the more encoraged:
but feing that he was far of, she paffed the leffe of the matter:
and when the Countefle her mother did commaunde her, she wrote
letters vnto him, but they were fuch as he might wel gather that
they were written rather vpon obedience, than of good wil, the
reading wherof bred sorrow vnto him in place of that ioye he was
wonte to conceive in her former wrytings. Within the terme of
two or three yeres, after he had done fo many noble enterprifes as
al the paper of Spaine could not containe them, he deuifed a new
invention, not to wynne and recover the harte of Florinda (for
he demed the fame quite loif) but to haue the victorie over his
enemy, fithens she had vfed him in that sorte, and reiecting al
reafon and specially feare of death, into the hazarde wherof he
hafted himfelfe, he concluded and determined his enterprife in
fuch sorte, as for his behauour towards the Gouernour, hee was
deputed and sent by him to treat with the king of certaine employes to be done at Locates, sparing not to impart his message to the Countesse of Aranda, before he told the same to the king, to vfe her good advice therein: and so came in post straight into the Countie of Aranda, where he had intelligence in what place Florinda remained, and secretly sent to the Countesse one of his frendes to tell her of his comming, and to pray her to keepe it close, and that he might speake with her that night in secrete wife that no man might perceiue: the Countesse very joyfull of his comming, tolde it to Florinda, and sent her into her husbandes chamber, that she might be ready when she should send for her after eche man was gone to bed. Florinda whiche was not yet well boldened by reaon of her former feare, making a good face of the matter to her mother, withdrawe her selfe into an oratorie or chappell, to recommend her selfe to God, praying him to defend her hart from al wicked affeccion, and therwithall considered how often Amadour had prayed her beautie, which was not impaired or diminishe, although shee had bene sicke of longe time before: wherefore thinking it better to doe injurie to her beautie by defacing it, than to suffer the harte of sone honest a perfonage by meanes thereof wickedly to be inflamed, shee tooke vp a stone which was within the Chappell, and gaue her selfe so great a blowe on the face that her mouthe, eyes and nose, were altogether deformed: and to thintent no man might suspect what shee had done, when the Countesse sent for her in going out of the Chappell, she fell downe vpon a great stone, and therewithall cried out so loude, as the Countesse came in and founde her in pitious state, who incontinently dressning her face, and binding it vp with clothes, convoyed her into her chamber, and prayed her to goe into her closet to entertaine Amadour, till she were wearie of his companie: whiche she did, thinking that there had bene somebody with hym: but finding him alone, and the doore shut vpon her, Amadour was not so well pleased as she was discontented: who nowe thoughte eyther with loue or force to get that, whiche hee had so long tyme defyred: and after hee had spoken a fewe wordes vnto her, and found her in that mynde hee lefte her, and that to dye for it shee woulde not change her opinion, desperatly he sayde vnto her: "By God
madame, the fruit of my labour shall not be thus taken from me for scruples and doubts: and sith that love, patience, and humble desires, cannot preuayle, I will not spare by force to get that, which except I have it will be the meanes of mine overthrowe." When Florinda saw his face and eyes so altered, and that the fairest die and colour of the world, was become so red as fier, with his most pleasuand amiable loke transformed into horrible hew and furious, and therewithall diueried the very hote burning fier, to sparkle within his harte and face: and how in that fury with one of his strong fistes he gripped her delicate and tender hands: and on the other side she seeing all her defences to fayle her, and that her feete and handes were caught in suche captiuities as she could neither run away nor yet defend her selfe: knewe none other remedie, but to prove if he had yet remaining in him any grifites of the former love, that for the honour thereof he might forget his crueltie. Wherefore she sayd vnto him: "Amadour, if now you doe accompt me for an enemy, I befech you for the honetie of the love which at other times I have found planted in your harte, to geue me leave to speake before you doe torment me." And when shee saw him recline his ear, she pursu'd her talk in this wyse: "Alas, Amadour, what faire haue you to feke after the thing wherof you shall receiue no contention, inflicting vpon me such displeasaue as there can be no greater? you have many times proued my wil and affeccion in the time of my youthfull dayes, and of my beautie farre more excellent than it is now, at what tyme your passion might better be borne with and excused, than nowe: in such wyse as I am nowe amased to see that you have the harte to torment me at that age and great debilitie wherewith I am affected: I am assured that you doubt not but that my wyl and mind is such as it was wont to be: wherefore you can not obtayne your demaunde but by force: and if you sawe howe my face is arrayed, you would forget the pleasure whiche once you conceived in me, and by no meanes would forcibly approche nere vnto me: and if there be left in you yet any remnantes of love, it is impossible but that pitie may vanquish your furie: and to that pitie and honetie whereof once I had experience in you, I do make myplaint, and of the same I do
demond grace and pardon, to thintent that according to the effect of your wonted persuasion and good advice you may suffer me to live in that peace and honesty, which I have determined and vowed during life: and if the love which you have borne me be converted into hatred, and that more for reuengement than affection, you doe purpose to make me the most unhappy of the world, I affure you, you shall not be able to bryng your intent to passe, besides that you shall constrayne me against my determination, to utter and reveale your villany and disordinate appetite towards her which did repose in you an incredible affiance: by discovering whereof, thinke verely that your lyfe cannot continue without perill." Amadour breaking her talke sayde vnto her: "If I die for it, I will presentlie be acquited of my torment: but the deformitie of your face (whiche I thinke was done by you of set purpose) shall not let me to accomplishe my will: for since I can get nothing of you but the bones and carcasse, I will holde them so fast as I can." And when Florinda faue that prayers, reason, nor teares could not auayle, but that with crueltie he woulde nedes followe his villanous desire, which she had hether so still avoide by force of resistence, she did helpe her selfe so long, till she feared the losse of her breath, and with a heavy and piteous voice she called her mother so loud as shee could crie, who hearing her daughter crie and cal with rufull voyce, began greatly to feare the thing that was true: wherfore she ran so fast as she could into the warderobe. Amadour not being so nere death as he faide he was, left of his holde in suche good time, as the Ladye opening her clofe, founde him at the dore, and Florinda farre enough from him. The Countesse demaunded of him, sayeing: "Amadour what is the matter? tell me the truthe." Who like one that was neuer vnprouided of excuse, with his pale face and wanne, and his breath almooste spent, sayde vnto her: "Alas, madame, in what plight is my lady Florinda? I was neuer in all my life in that amaze wherein I am now: for as I sayd vnto you, I had thought that I had enjoyed part of her good will, but nowe I know right well that I haue none at all: I thinke madame, that since the time she was brought vp with you, shee was neuer leffe wife and vertuous than shee is nowe, but farre more daunorous
and squeueifie in speaking and talking then behoueth, and even nowe I would have loked upon her, but she would not suffer me: and when I viewed her countenaunce, thinking that it had bene some dreame or vision, I desired to kisse her hande, according to the fashion of the countrey, which shee vterly refused. True it is Madame, I haue offended her, wherof I crave pardon of you, but it chaunced only for that I toke her by the hand, which I did in a maner by force, and kisst the same demaunding of her no other pleasure: but she like one (as I suppone) that hath sworne my death, made an outcry for you (as you haue hearde) for what cause I know not, except that shee were afraide I would haue forced some other thing: notwithstanding Madame, whatsoeuer the matter be, I protest vnto you the wrong is myne, and albeit that she ought to loue al your honest seruaunts, yet fortune so willeth as I alone, the moste affectioned of them all, is clere exempt out of her fauour: and yet I purpose still to continue towards you and her, the same man I came hither, beseeching the continuance of your good grace and fauour, fithens that without defert I haue lofte hers." The Countesse which partely beleued, and partely mistrusted his talke, went vnto her daughter, and demaunded wherfore shee cried out so loud. Florinda answered that she was afrayde: and albeit the Countesse subtilly asked her of many things, yet Florinda would never make other answere, for that having escaped the handes of her enemy, she thought it punishement enough for him to lose his labour: after that the Countesse had of long tyme communed with Amadour, the lefte him yet once againe to enter in talke with Florinda before her, to see what countenaunce shee would make him. To whom he spake fewe wordes except they were thankes for that she had not confessed the truthe to her mother, praying her at leaft wife that seing he was disposefled out of her hart, she would suffer none other to receive his place: but she answering his former talke, saide: "If I had had any other meanes to defend my felle from you than by crying out, she should never haue hearde me, and of me you shall never heare worste, except you doe confreyne me as you haue done, and for louing any other man, you shall not neede to feare: for ifte I haue not found in your harte (which I estemed the most
AMADOUR AND FLORINDA.

vertuous in all the world) the good succeffe that I desired, I wyll neuer beleue hereafter that vertue is planted in any man. And this outrage shall make me free from all passions that Loun can force." And in saying fo she tooke her leaue. The mother which behelde her countenaunce, could suspefte nothing, and after that tyme, she was perfuaded that her daughter bare no more affection to Amadour, and thought affiredly that she was voyde of reafon, because she hated al those things which she was wont to loue: and from that time forth there was much warre betwene the mother and the daughter, as the mother for the space of vii. yeares would not speake vnto her, except it were in anger: which she did at the request of Amadour: during which time, Florinda converted the miilking of her husband, into mere and constant loue, to auoyde the rigour and checkes of her mother: howbeit, feing that nothing could preuayle, she purpofed to beguile Amadour, and leaving for a day or two her strange countenance towards him, she counfelled Amadour to loue a woman, whiche as she fayd, did commonly difpute and talke of their loue. This lady dwelt with the Queene of Spaine, and was called Lorette, who was very joyfull and glad to get such a fervuant: and Florinda founde meanes to caufe a brute of this newe loue to be fpered in every place, and specially the Countesse of Arande (being at the Court) perceived the fame, who afterwards was not so difpleased with Florinda, as she was wont to be: Florinda vpon a tyme heard tel that a Captain the husband of Loret, began to be ialous ouer his wife, determining by some meanes or other, he cared not howe, to kill Amadour. Florinda notwithstanding her dissembled countenance, could not suffer any hurt to be done to Amadour, and therefore incontinentely gaue him adverfitement thereof: but he returnning againe to his former follies, anfwered, that if it would pleafe her to intertaine him euery day three houres, he would neuer speake againe to Lorette, wherunto by no meanes shee would content. Then Amadour faide vnto her: "If you will not haue me to liven, wherefore go ye about to defend me from death? except ye purpofe to torment me alioe with greater extremitie then a thoufand deatthes can do: but for fo much as death doth flie from me, I will neuer leaue to feeke him out, by whole ap-
proche only I shall haue rest." Whileft they were in these tearmes, newes came that the kyng of Granado was about to enter into great warres against the king of Spain: in suche wyse as the king sent against hym the Prince his fonne, and with hym the constable of Castile, and the Duke of Albe, twoo auncient and fage Lordes. The duke of Cardonne and the counte of Arande not willing to tarie behinde, besought the kyng to gene eyther of them a charge: whiche hee did according to the dignitie of their houfes, appointing Amadour to be their guide: who during that warre, did suche valiauant factes as they seemed rather to be desperately than hardly enterprysed: and to come to the effect of this dicourse, his great valiaunce was tryed even to the death: for the Moores making a bragge as though they would geue battayle, when they fawe the army of the Chriftians, counterfaite a retire, whome the Spaniardes pursued, but the olde Constable and the duke of Albe doubting their pollicie, stood still, against the will of the Prince of Spaine, not suffering him to paffe over the Ryuer, but the counte of Arande and the Duke of Cardonne, (altho'ugh they were countremanded) did followe the chafe, and when the Moores fawe that they were pursued with fo small a number, they returned, and at one recountrie kylled the Duke of Cardonne, and the Counte of Arande was fo fore burte as hee was lefte for dead in the place. Amadour arriviuing vpoun this ouerthrowe, invaded the battayle of the Moores with suche rage and furie, as hee rescued the twoo bodyes of the Duke and Countie, and caufed them to be conveyed to the Prince's campe, who . . . lamented their chaunce, as if they had bene his owne brethren: but in searching their woundes, the Countie of Arande was founde to be alieue, and was fent home to his owne houfe in a horselitter, where of long time he was fickle, and likewife was conveyed to Cardonne the dead bodie of the yong Duke. Amadour in rescuing thse two bodies, tooke fo little heede to him felle, as he was inclofed with a great number of the Moores, and because he would bee no more taken, as well to verifie his faith towards God, as also his vowe made to his Lady, and alfo considering that if he were pryfoner to the kyng of Granado, either hee should cruelly be put to death, or els forced to renounce his faith, he determined not to make his
death or taking glorious to his enemies: wherefore kissting the
croffe of his fworde, and rendring his body and foule to the
handes of almighty God, he flabb'd him felfe into the body with
futche a blow, as there neded no second wound to rid him of his
life: in this forte died poore Amadour, fo muche lamented as his
vertues did deferue. The newes hereof was bruted throughout
Spaine, and came to Florinda who then was at Barfelone, where
her husbande in his life tyme ordained the place of his buriall:
and after shee had done his honourable obsequies, without making
her own mother, or mother in law priuie, she surrenderd her felfe
into the monafterie of Iefus, there to liue a religious life, receive-
ing him for her husband and friende, whiche had deliuered her
from the vehement loue of Amadour, and from a displeasaunt life
fo great and vnquiet as was the company of her husband.

In this wife shee converted all her affections, to pietie
and the perfite loue of God, who after shee had long
time liued a religious life, shee yelded vp her
soule in such ioye as the Bridegrom doth
when he goeth to vifite his spowes.
THE FIFTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The incontinencie of a duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpose, with the iust punishment which he received for the same.

In the Citie of Florence (the chiefeft of all Thuscane) there was a Duke that married the Lady Margaret the baftarde daughter of the Emperour Charles the fifth. And bicaufe she was very young, it was not lawfull for him to lye with her, but taryng till she was of riper yeres, he interteigned an yfed her like a noble gentleman. And who to spare his wife, was amorous of certaine other Gentlewomen of the citie. Amonges whom he was in loue with a very fayre and wyfe Gentlewoman, that was fister to a Gentleman, a fernaunt of his, whome the Duke loued fo well as himselfe, to whome he gaue fo muche authoritie in his howfe, as his word was fo wel obeied and feared as the Duke's him self, and there was no fecret thing in the Duke's minde, but he declared the fame vnto him, who might ful wel haue bene called a second himself. The duke feing his fister to be a woman of great hon-estie, had no wayes or meanes to vtter vnto her the loue that he bare her (after he had inuented all occaions possible) at length he came to this Gentleman which he loued fo well, and faid vnto him: "My friend, if there were any thing in all the world, wherein I were able to pleafure thee, and woulde not doe it at thy requert, I should be afraid to fay my fantafie, and \( \text{much ashamed} \) to craue your help and affiurance: but the loue is such which I bare thee, as if I had a wife, mother, or daughter, that were able to fawe thy life, I would rather imploy them, than to fuffer thee to die in torment: and if thou doe beare vnto me that affection which am thy maister, thinke verely that I doe beare vnto thee the like. Wherefore I will disclofe vnto thee fuche a fecret and priuie matter, as the silence thereof hath brought me into fuch a plight as thou feest, whereof I doe loke for none amendement but by death or by the fervice which thou maieft doe me, in a cer-tayne matter which I purpothe to tell thee." The Gentleman hearing the reafons of his maifter, and feing his face not fayned,
but all befprent with teares, tooke great compassion vpon him and sayd: "My Lorde, I am your humble servaunt: all the goodes and worship that I haue doth come from you. You may fayle vnto me as to your mofte approved frende. Assure your self, that all which refeth in my power and abilitie, is already at your commandement." Then the Duke began to tell him of the loue that hee bare vnto his fifter, which was of futehe force, as if by his meanes he did not enjoye her, his life could not long continue. For he faide, that he knew right well that intreatie and prefentes were with her of no regard. Wherfore he praised him, that if he loued his life, fo well as he did his, to finde meanes for him to receiue that benefite, which without him he was in defpaire neuer to recouer. The brother which loued his fifter and honor of his kindred, more than the Duke's pleafure, made a certain reverence vnto him, humbly befeecching him to vfe his travaaill and pain in all other cauaces fauing in that, bicaufe it was a fute fo launderous and infamous, as it would purchafe difhonor to his whole familie, adding further, that neither his hart nor his honor could ferue him, to confent to do that fervice. The Duke inflamed with vn-speareable furie, put his finger betwene his teeth, and biting of the nayle, faid unto him in great rage: "Well then fithe I finde in thee no frendship, I know what I haue to doe." The Gentleman knowing the crueltie of his Maiftuer, being fore afraide, replied: "My Lorde, for fo much as your desire is vehement and earnest, I will speake vnto her and brynge you aunfwere of her mynde." And as he was departing, the Duke fayde vnto him: "See that thou tender my life as thou wylt that I fhall doe thyne." The Gentleman vnderstanding well what that woorde did meane, abfented him felfe a day or twaine to aduife what were beft to be done. And amonges diuers his cogitations, there came to his remembrance the bounden dutie which he dyd owe to his Maiftuer, and the goodes and honours which he had receyued at his handes, on the other fyde, hee considered the honour of his house, the good life and chaflitie of his fyfter, who (he knewe well) would neuer confent to that wickedneffe, if by subtiltie fhee were not surprifed, or otherwyse forced, and that it were a thing very straunge and rare, that he shoulde goe about to defame hymfelfe and the whole
stocke of his progenie. Wherefore hee concluded, that better it were for hym to die, than to commit a mifchief so great vnto his sifter, whiche was one of the honefteft women in all Italie. And therewithall considered how he might deliuer his countrie from futch a tyrant, which by force would blemifhe and spot the whole race of his auncient flock and familie. For he knew right wel that except the duke were taken away, the life of him and his affinitie could not be in securitie and safegarde; wherfore without motion made to his sifter of that matter, he deuised how to faue his life and the reproche that shou'd follow. Vpon the second daye he came vnto the duke, and tolde hym in what sorte he had practifed with his sifter, and that although the fame in the beginning was harde and difficult, yet in the ende he made her to confent, vpon condicion that hee would keepe the fame fo fecrete as none but hymelfe and he myght knowe of it. The duke defrous and glad of those newes, dyd fone beliene hym, and imbracing the mefflanger, promifed to geue him whatfoeuer he would demaunde, praying hym with all fpeece that hee might inioye his defyrde purpofe. Whereupon they appointed a tyme: and to demaunde whether the duke were glad and ioysfull of the fame, it were superfuous. And when the defired night was come, wherin he hoped to haue the victorie of her whom he thought inuincible, he and the gentleman alone withdrew themfelues together, not forgetting his perfumed coif and swete shirte wrought and trimmed after the beft maner. And when eche wight was gone to bed, both they repayred to the appointed lodging of his Lady, where being arriued they founde a chamber in decent and comly order. The gentleman taking of the Duke's night gowne, placed hym in the bedde, and fayde vnto hym: "My Lorde, I wil nowe goe feeke her, which can not enter into this chamber without blushing, howbeit I trufte before to morrowe morning she wyll be very glad of you." Which done, he left the Duke, and went into his own chamber, where he founde one of his fervantes alone, to whom he fayde: "Haft thou the harte to followe me into a place where I shal be requenged vpon the greatest enemie that I haue in the worlde?" "Yea Sir," anfwered his man. Whereupon the Gentleman toke him with him so sodainely, as he had no leasure to arme him
felfe with other weapon but with his onely dagger. And when the Duke heard him come againe, thinking he had brought her with hym that he loued fo derely, he drewe the curteine, and opened his eyes to behold and receive that ioye which he had fo long looked for, but in place of seeing her which he hoped should be the conferuation of his life, he sawe the acceleration of his death, which was a naked worde that the Gentleman had drawn, who therwithall did strike the Duke, which was in his thirte voyde of weapon, although well armed with courage, and sitting vp in his bedde grasped the Gentleman about the body, and sayde: “Is this thy promife whiche thou haft kept?” And seeing that he had no other weapon but his teeth and nayles, he bitte the gentleman in the arme, and by force of his owne strengthe he fo defended himselfe, as they bothe fell downe into the flower. The gentleman fearing the match, called for hys manne, who finding the Duke and his maifer faft together, that he wyft not whether to take, he drewe them both by the feete into the middeft of the chamber, and with his dagger affayde to cut the Duke’s throte. The duke who defended himselfe, till suche time as the losse of his bloud made him fo weake and feeble that he was not able to contende any longer. Then the Gentleman and his man laide him againe into his bed, where they accomplished the efect of that murther. Afterwardes drawing the curteine, they departed and locked the dead body in the chamber. And when he saw that he had gotten the victorie of his enemy, by whose death he thought to set at libertie the common wealth, he supposed his facte to be vnaperfect if he did not the like to fue or fixe of them which were nereft to the Duke, and beft beloued of him. And to attaine the perfection of that enterpryfe, he bad his man to doe the like vnto them one after another, that hee had done to the Duke. But the fenaunt being nothing hardie or coragious, said vnto his maister: “Me thinke, sir, that for this time ye haue done enough, and that it were better for you now to deuife waye howe to saue your owne life, than to seeke meanes to murder any more. For if we do confume fo long space of time to kill euery of them, as we haue done in murdering of the Duke, the day light will discouer our enterpryfe before we haue made an ende, yea although wee finde them naked and
without defence." The gentleman whose euill conscience made him fearfull, did beleue his feruauant, and taking him alone with him, went to the bishop that had in charge the gates of the citie, and the vfe of the Poftes, to whom he sayd: "This euening (my Lord) newes came vnto me that mine owne brother lieth at the point of death, and crauing licence of the Duke to goe se him he hath giuen me leaue. Wherefore I befeche you commaunde the Poftes to deliuer me two good horfe, and that you will fende worde to the porter that the gates may be opened." The bishop which estemed no leffe his request than the commaundement of the Duke his maifter, incontinently gaued him a billet, by vertue whereof both the gates were opened, and the horfe made ready according to his demaunde. And vnder colour and pretence of viuiting his brother, he rode to Venice, where after he had cured himselfe of the duke's bitinges faftened in his flethe, he travailed into Turkey. In the morning the duke's feruantes feing the time so late before their maifter retourned, suspected that he was gone forth in viuiting of some Ladye, but when they fawe he taried so long, they began to feke for him in euery place. The poore Duchesse into whose harte the loue of her husbande strongly did inuade, vnderstanding that he could not be founde, was very penifie and forowfull. But when the Gentleman which he fo dareaely loued, was not likewyfe feene abroade, searche was made in his chamber, where finding bloud at the chamber dore, they entred in, but no man was there to tell them any newes, and following the tract of the bloud the poore feruantes of the Duke went to the chamber dore, where he was, which dore they found faft locked, who incontinently brake open the fame: and feing the place all bloudy, drew the curteine, and found the wretched carcafe of the Duke lying in the bedde, sleeping his endelhe sleepe. The forrow and lamentation made by the duke's feruauntes, carying the dead bodye into his palace, is easie to be coniectured. Wherof when the Bishop was aduertisef, he repaired thether, and tolde how the Gentleman was gone awaye in the night in great haffe, vnder pretence to goe to fee his brother: whereupon it was euidently knowen that it was he that had committted the murder. And it was proued that his poore fifter was never priuie to the facete, who although she was aflonned with the
fodaynes of the deede, yet her loue towards her brother was farre more increased, bicaufe he had delivered her from a Prince so cruell, the enemy of her honestie: for doing whereof he did not flicke to hazard his owne life. Whereupon she persevered more and more in vertue, and although she was poore, by reafon her house was confiscate, yet both her sister and shee matched with so honest and riche husbandes as were to be founde in Italie: and afterwardes they both lined in good and great reputation.
THE FIFTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

One of the Frenche kinges called Frauncis the firste of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume, that would have killed him.

In Digeon a town of Burgundie, there came to the service of king Frauncis, (whiche was father to Henry the second of that name, whiche Henry was kylled by Mounfier Mongomerie, in a triumphe at the Tilt, and grandfather to Charles the ix. that now reigneth in Fraunce) an Earle of Allemaigne called Guillaume, of the house of Saxon, whereunto the house of Sauoie is so greatly allied, as in old time they were but one. This Counte for so much as he was esteemed to be so comely and hardy a Gentleman as any was in Almaigne, was in suche good favour with the king, as he tooke him not onely into service, but vfed him so nere his perfone, as he made him of his priuy chamber. Vpon a day the Gouernour of Burgundie, the Lorde Trimouille (an auncient knight and loyall seruaunt of the kyng) like one suspicious and fearfull of the euill and hurte of his Maifter, had daylie espies ouer his enemies, vfing his affaires so wyfely, as very fewe things were concealed from hym. Among other advertifementes, one of his friends wrote vnto him that the Counte Guillaume had receiued certain sommes of money, with promife of more, if by any meanes he could deuise which waye to kill the king. The Lorde of Trimouille hearing of this, failed not to come to the kyng to giue him knowledge thereof, and disclofed it lykewyse to Madame Loyse of Sauoye his mother, who forgetting her amitie and aliaunce with the Almaigne Earle, besought the king forthwith to put hym awaye. The kyng prayed his mother to speake no more thereof, and fayde, that it was impossible that so honest a Gentleman would attempt to doe a deede so wicked. Within a while after, there came other newes of that matter, confirming the first: whereof the Gouernour for the intire loue he bare to his Maifter, craued licence either to expel him the countrie, or to put him in warde. But the king gaue speciall
commaundement that he should not make any semblance of displeasure, for that hee purposed by some other meanes to knowe the truthe. Vpon a time when he went a hunting he girded about him the best sworde that hee had, to serue for all armes and auffayes, and toke with hym the Counte Guillaume, whome he commanded to wayte vpon him, the firfte and chiefest next his owne perfone. And after he had followed the hart a certayne tyme, the kyng seing that his traynes was farre from hym, and no man neare him fauing the Counte, tourned hym selfe rounde about, and when hee fawe that hee was alone, in the mydde of the forrest, hee drew out his sworde, and sayd to the Counte: "How faye you, (fir counte) is not this a fayre and good swoorde?" The counte feling it at the point, and well viewyng the fame, aunswered that he neuer fawe a better in all his life. "You haue reaason," sayde the kyng, "and I beleue that if a Gentleman were determined to kyll mee, and did knowe the force of myne armes, and the goodnesse of myne harte accompanied with this sworde, he would bee twyse well aduised before hee attempted that enterpriffe. Notwithstanding I would accompt him but a cowarde, wee being alone withoute witneses, if he did not attempt that, which he were disposed to do." The Counte Guillaume with baithfull and auffoned countenaunce aunswered: "Sir, the wickednesse of the enterpriffe were very great, but the folly in the execution were no leffe." The king with those wordes fell in a laughter, and put the sworde in the skaberd againe: and hearing that the chafe drewe neare him, he made to the fame fo fasse as he coulde. When he was come thether, he said nothing of that which had passef betweene theim, and verelye thoughte that the Counte Guillaume although that he was a stronge and stoute gentleman, yet he was no man to do fo great an enterpriffe. But the Counte Guillaume, fearing to be bewrayed or suspeeted of the fact, next day morning repayed to Robertet the Secretarie of the kynges reuennues, and saide that hee had well wayed the giftes and annuities which the kyng would giue him to tarrie, but he perceiued that they were not sufficient to interteigne him for halfe a yeare, and that if it pleased not the kyng to double the fame, hee should be forced to
departe, praying the sayde Robertet to know his grace's pleasure
so soone as he could, who sayd vnto him, that he himselfe could
without further commissiion disburse no more vnto him, but gladly
without further delay he would repaire to the king: which he
did more willingly, because he had seene the aduertisements of the
Gouernor aforefaid. And so soone as the kinge was awake, he
declared the matter vnto him in the presence of Monfier Trimo-
uelle and Monfier Bouinet, lord admirall, who were ytterly igno-
rant of that which the king had done. To whom the kinge said:
"Loe, ye haue bene miscontented for that I would not put away
the Counte Guillaume, but now ye see he puttheth away himselfe.
Wherefore Robertet (quoth the king) tell him, that if he be not
content with the state which he receiued at his first entrie into my
service, whereof many gentlemen of good houfes would thinke
themselues happie, it is meete that he seeke his better fortune,
and tell him that I would be lothe to hinder him, but wilbe very
well contented, that he seeke where he may liue better, accordingly
as he deferueth." Robertet was so diligent to beare this aun-
fweare to the Counte, as he was to present his fute to the kinge.
The counte sayd that with his licence he would gladly go forthwith:
and as one whom feare forced to depart, he was not able to beare
his abode 24 houres. And as the king was sittynge downe to
dinner, sayning to be forye for his departure, but that necessitie
compelled him to lose his presence, hee toke his leave. He went
likewise to take leave of the king's mother, which she gave him
with so great ioy, as she did receive him, being her nere kinisman
and freind. Then he went into his countrie: and the king seing
his mother and feruantes astonned at his sodaine departure,
declared vnto them the Al Arme, which he had giuen him,
saying, that although he was innocent of the matter
suspected, doe was his feare greate ynoughye, to
departe from a maister wyth whose condi-
cions hitherto he was not acquainted.
OF A GENTLEWOMAN

THE FIFTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A pleasaunt discours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampelunan.

There was in the time of king Lewes the xii. of that name, a young Lord, called the lorde of Auannes sonne to the Lorde Alebret, and brother to king John of Nauarre, with whom the said Lord of Auannes ordinarily remayned. Now this yong Lorde was of the age of xv. yeares, so comely a perfonage, and full of curtesie and good behauiour, as he seemed to be created for none other purpose, but to be beloved and regarded: and so he was in deede of al thofe that did wel behold and note his commendable grace and condicion, but chiefly of a woman, dwelling in the citie of Pampelunan in Nauarre, the wife of a rich man, with whom she liued honesfly: and although she was but 23 yeres of age, and her husband very nere fiftie, yet her behauior was so modest, as she seemed rather a widow than a maried wyfe, who vfed not to frequent and haunte any mariages, banquets, or common assemblies without the company of her husband, the vertue and goodnes of whom she so greatly esteemed, as she preferred the same before the beautie of al others. The husband, hauing experience of her wisedome, put such truft in her, as he committed al thaffaires of his boufe to her discretion: vpon a day this rich man with his wife, were inuited to a mariage of one that was nere kinne vnto him: to which place (for the greater honor of the mariage) repaired the yong Lord of Auannes, who naturally was giuen to dauncing, and for his excellencie in dauncing there was not his like to be found in his time: after dinner when they prepared to daunce, the Lord of Auannes was intreated thereunto by the rich man: the saied lord asked him with what gentlewoman hee should lead the daunce. He aunsweared him: "My Lord if there were any one more beautifull, or more at my commaundement then my wyfe, I would presfent her vnto you, befeeching you to do mee so much honour as to take her by the hande." Which the yong Lorde did, and by reaason of his youthfull courage he toke more
pleasure in vaultinge and dauncinge, then in beholding the beautie of the Ladies: and she whom he ledde by the hand, contrarywyse regarded more the grace and beautie of the said yong Lord, then the daunce wherein she was, albeit for her great wifedome she made therof no semblance at al. When supper time was come, the Lord of Anannes badde the companie farewell and went home to the caftle: whether the riche man accompanied him vpon his moile: and riding homewards together, he saide vnto him: "My Lord, this day you haue done so great honor vnto my kinfemen and mee, that it were great ingratitude if I should not offer my selfe with all the goods I haue to do you seruice: I knowe fir that such Lordes as you be which haue nere and couetous fathers, many times do lacke money which we by keeping of smal household, and vking good husbandrie do heape and gather together. Now thus it is fir, that God hauing giuen mee a wife accordinge to my desire he would not in this world altogether indue mee with heauenly pleasures, but hath left me voyde of one ioy which is the ioye that fathers haue of children. I know fir that it is not my dutie, and belongeth not to my flate to adopt you for such a one, but if it maye pleafe you to receiue mee for your seruaunt, and to declare vnto me your smal affaires, so farre as a hundred thoufande Crownes shal extende, I will not flicke to helpe your necessitie." The yong Lorde of Auannes was very ioyfull of this offer, for he had fuche a father as the other had desribed vnto him: and after he had giuen him hartie thanckes, he called him his friendlye father. From that time forth the sayd riche man conceived such loue in the yong Lord, as daily he ceafed not to inquire of his lacke and want, and hid not from his wyfe the deuotion which he bare to the sayd Lorde of Auannes, for which he rendred vnto him double thanckes. And after that time the sayd yong Lord lacked not what he desired, and many times resorted to that rich man's to drinke and eate with him, and finding him not at home, his wyfe rewarded him with his demaunde: whoe admonifhed her by wyfe and discrete talke to be vertuous, because he feared and loued her aboue all the women of the worlde. She which had God and her honor before her eyes, was conteinte with his sight and talke, wherin consifted the satiisfaction of his honestie and vertuous
loue: in such wise as she never made any signe or semblance, wherby he might thinke and judge that shee had anye affection vnto him, but that which was both brotherlie and christian. During this courte amitie, the Lord of Auannes through the forefayed ayde, was very gorgious and trimme, and approaching the age of xvii. yeares, began to frequent the company of Gentlewomen more then he was wont to do: and although he had a more willing desire, to loue that wyse and discreete dame aboue other, yet the feare which he had to lose her loue (if shee misliked her fute) made him to hold his peace, and to seeke els wher: and gave himself to the loue of a Gentlewoman dwelling hard by Pampelunæ, which had to husband a yong gentleman, that aboue all things loued and delighted in dogges, horffe, and Hawkes. This noble Gentleman began (for her sake) to devise a thousand pastimes, as Tormyes, running at the Tilt, Mommeries, Maskes, feastes and other games, at all which this yong dame was present: but because that her husband was very fantasicall, and saw his wyfe to be faire and wanton, hee was ialous of her honour, and kepte her in fo straite, as the fayde Lord of Auannes colde get nothing at her hands but words, shortly spoken, in some daunce, albeit in little time and leffe speache, the fayde Lorde perceyued that there wanted nothing for full perfection of their loue, but time and place: wherfore he came to his new adopted father the rich man, and saide vnto him that he was minded with great devotion to visit our Lady of Montferrat, intreating him to suffer his houfhoulde traine to remaine with him, because he was disposed to go thither alone. Whereunto he willingly agreed: but his wyfe whose hart the great prophet loue had inspired, incontinentely suspected the true cause of that voyage, and cold not forbeare to saye vnto the Lord of Auannes these words: "My Lord, my Lorde, the pilgrimage of the Lady whom you worshippe, is not farre without the walles of the Citie, wherefore I beseech you aboue all things to haue regarde vnto your health." Hee which feared her, and loued her, blushed at her words, and without talke by his countenaunce he seemde to confesse the trothe: whereupon he departed, and when he had bought a couple of faire Genets of Spaine he clothed himself like a horfekeeper and so dis-
of Pampelunæ.

The Gentleman, which had married the Lady of Auannes, a gentlewoman, lounge above all things, as is fayde before. Fayre horses, espieds those two Genets, which the Lord of Auannes did lead, and incontinent came to buy them: and after he had bought them, hee beheld the horse-keeper which rode and handled them passing well, and asked him if he were willing to ferue him: the Lord of Auannes answered yea, and added further how he was a poore horse-keeper vnskillfull of other science but of keepinge of horses, which practize hee could do so well, as he doubted not but he shoulde content and please him: the Gentleman very glad thereof, gaue him charge of all his horses, and called forth his wyfe vnto him, vnto whom he recommended his horses and horse-keeper, and told her that he himself was disposed to go to the castel: the gentlewoman so well to please her husband as for her owne delight and paftime, wente to loke vpon her horse and to behold her new horse-keeper, who seemed to be a man of good bringing vp, notwithstanding she knewe him not. He feing that she had no knowledge of him, came to do reverence vnto her after the maner of Spain, and taking her by the hand kissed the fame, and by kissing of her hand, he disclosed himself so much as she knew him: for in dauncing with her many times he vfed the like curtesie: and then she ceased not to doe place wher she might speake to him a part: which she did the very fame euening: for being bidden to a feast wherunto her husband would faine have had her to go, she fayned herself to be fickle and not able: and her husband loth to faile his frends request, saide vnto her: "For so much (my good wyfe) as you be not disposed to go with me, I pray you to haue regard to my dogges and horses that they may lack nothing." The Gentlewoman was very well contented with that commiffion: howbeit without chaung of countenance she made him answere that fifth in better things he would not imploie her, she would not refuse the least, to satifie his desire: and her husband was no foner out of the gates, but she went down into the stable, where she founde faulte without divers things: for provision whereof she committed such seuerall busines to her men on euery side, that shee remayned alone with the master horse-keeper: and for feare least any should
come vpon them vnwares, she saide vnto him: "Go into my garden and tarie my comming in the litle house at the ende of the alley." Which he did so diligently as hee had no leasure to thancke her, and after that she had giuen order to the yeomen of the stable, shee went to see the dogges, counterfaiiting like care and diligence to haue them wel intreated: in such wise as shee seemed rather a mayde of the chamber then a maistrefle of the house: which done shee returned into her chamber, where shee made her self to be so werie, as shee went to bed, sayeing that she was dipt to sleepe. All her women left her alone except one in whom she repofed her greatest truft, and vnto whom shee saide: "Go downe into the garden, and cause him whom you shall finde at the end of the alley, to come hither." The mayde wente downe and founde the Maister horfkeeper there, whom forthwith shee brought vnto her maistrefle: and then the gentlewoman caused her mayde to go forth to watch when her husband came home. The lord of Auannes feing that he was alone with his maistres, put of his horfkeeper's apparel, plucked from his face his falfe nose and beard, and not as a fearful horfkeeper, but like such a Lord as he was, without asking leave of the Gentlewoman, boldly laied him downe beside her: where shee was of that foolifhe woman receiued so joyfully, as his estate and goodly perfonage did require, continuing with her vntil the retorne of her husband: at whose comming putting vpon him againe his counterfaite attire, left the pleasure whiche by policie and malice he had vfurped. The gentleman when hee was within, hearde tell of the dilligence whiche his wife had vfed vpon his commaundemente, and thanked her very hartelie. "Husband (said the gentlewoman) I do but my dutie, and do affure you that if there be no ouerfeer to checke and commaunde your negli-gent seruants, you shal haue neyther dogge nor horfe well kept and ordred: forasmuche as I knowe their flouth, and your good wil, you shalbe better serued then you haue bin heretofore." The gentleman who thought that he had gotten the best horfkeeper of the worlde, asked her how she liked him. "I affure you fir (quoth she) he doth his busines so well as any seruant, howbeit he had neede to be called vpon, for you know seruants in these dayes without an ouerfeer, wilbe be slow and careless." Thus of
long time continued the husband and wife in greater amitie and louve then before, and gaue over all the suspicion and ialoufe which hee had conseyued, because before time his wyfe lounge feastes, daunces and companies, was become intentifie and diligente about her household: and perceiued that now many times she was contented in homely garmentes to go vp and downe the house wher before she was accustomed to be 4 hours in trimming of herselfe: whereof shee was commended of her husbande, and of every man that knew not how the greater deuill had chasfed awaye the lefe. Thus liued this yonge dame vnder the hypocrife and habite of an honest woman, in suche fleshye pleafure as reafon, confcience, order and meafeure, had no longer refting place in her: which infaciat luft the yong Lord of delicate complextion was no longer able to suffeine, but began to waxe fo pale and feeble, as he needed no vifarde for diffiguring of himfelfe. Notwithstanding the foliife louve which he bare to that woman so dulled his fence, as he presumed vpon that force which fayled in the monftruous giant Hercules, whereby in the ende contrayned with ficknes and counelled by his maiftref, which loued not the ficke fo well as the hole, demaunded leaue of his maiftre to go home to his frends: who to his great griefe graunted him the fame: and caufed him to make promife that when he was recovered hee should returne againe to his fervice. Thus went the Lord of Auannes on foote away from his maiftre, for he had not pafe the length of one freate to traualie. And when he was come to the rich mans house his new father, he found none at home but his wyfe, whose vertuous louve she bare him was nothing diminifhed for al his voyaige: but when shee faw him fo leane and pale, she could not forbear to lay vnfo him: "Sir, I knowe not in what flaye your confcience is, but your body is little amended by this pilgrimage, and I am in doubt that the way wherein you trauelled in the night, did wearie and paine you more, then that vppon the daye: for if you had gone to Hierufalem on foote, you mightes perhaps have returned more Sunne burned, but more leane and weake it had bin imposible. Now make accompt of your pilgrimage here, and fere no more fuch Sainetes, for in place of rayfinge the deade from life, they do to death thofe that
be on liue: moreouer I shall faye vnto you, that if your bodye
were neuer so sinfull, I see well it hath suffred such penance, as
I haue pitie to renewe anye former payne.” When the Lorde of
Auannes had hearde all her talke he was no lesse angrie with him-
selfe, then aſhamed, and faide vnto her: “Madame, I haue some-
times heard tell that repentaunce infueth finne, and now I haue
proued the fame to my cofl, prayinge you to excuse my youth that
could not be corrected but by experience of that euill, which before
it would not beleue.” The Gentlewoman chaunging her talke,
causd him to lye downe vppon a fayre bedde, where he lay the
space of xv. dayes, feedinge onely vppon reſtoratyles: and the
husband and wyfe kept him fo good companye, as one of theim
neuer departed from him: and albeit that he had committed thofe
follies, (ifuche as you haue heard) againſt the minde: and aduife
of that wyfe and diskerete dame, yet thee neuer diminished the
vertuous loue which thee bare him, for thee still hoped that after
he had fpent his yonger dayes in youthly follies, he would retire
at length when age and experience shoulde force him to vfe honest
loue, and by that means would be altogether her owne. And
during thofe fiftene dayes that he was cherifhed in her house,
the vfed vnto him womanly and commendable talke, onely tending
to the loue of vertue, which caried fuch effect as he began to
abhorre the follic that he committed: and beholding the gentle-
woman which in beautie paffed the other wanton, with whom he
had dett before, he imprinted in minde more and more the graces
and vertues that were in her, and was not able to keepe in harte
the secrete conceit of the fame, but abandoning all feare, he fayd
vnto her: “Madame, I fee no better means, to be fuch one,
and fo vertuous as you by wordes defire me fo to be, but to fettle
my harte, and giue my felfe to be holie in loue with vertue, and
the qualities therunto appertinent. I humblie beſeech you ther-
fore (good madame) to tel me if your felfe wil not vouchſafe to
giue me al your ayde and favor that you poſſible can, for thob-
teyning of the fame.” The maiftreſſe very joyful to heare him vfe
that language, made him aunſwere: “And I do promife you fir,
that if you wilbe in loue with vertue as it behoueth fo noble a fiate
as you be, I wil do you the fervice that I can to bring you there-
unto with such power and abilitie as God hath planted in mee."

"Well madame," saide the Lorde of Anannes, "remember then your promife, and understande that God vknownen of the Christian but by fayth, hath dayned to take flesh, like to that our sinfull which we beare about vs, to thend that by drawing our flesh into the loue of his humanity, he may draw alfo our minde to the loue of his diuinitie, and requireth to be ferued by thinges visible to make vs loue by fayth that diuinity which is inuifible: in like maner the vertue which I defire to imbrace all the dayes of my life, is a thing inuifible and not to be seen but by outward effects. Wherfore needeful it is, that she now do put vpon her fome body or fhape to let herselfe be knownen amonges men: which in deede the hath don by induing herselfe with your form and fhape, as the moft perfect that she is able to find amonges liuing creatures. Wherfore I do acknowledge and confesse you to be not onely a vertuous creature, but euyn very vertue it self. And I which fee the fame to shine vnder the glimfing vaile of the moft perfect that euer was: I will honor and ferue the fame during my life, forfaking (for the fame) all other vaine and vicious loue." The gentlewoman no leffe content then marueling to here those words dissembled fo wel her contented minde as she said vnto him: "My Lord, I take not vpon me to aunfwere your diuinity, but like her that is more fearefull of euill then beleful of good, do humblie befeech you to ceafe to speake to me those words of prayfe, that is not worthy of the leaft of them. I know right wel that I am a woman, not onely as another is, but fo imperfect, as vertue might do a better acte to transforme me into her, then she to take my forme, except it be when she defires to be vknownen to the world: for vnder such habite as mine is, vertue cannot be knownen, according to her worthines: so it is Sir, that for mine imperfection, I wil not ceafe to bere you such affection, as a woman ought or maye do that feareth God, and hath respect to her honour: but that affection shal not appere, vntill your harte be able to receive the patience which vertuous loue commaundeth. And now Sir I know what kinde of speach to vfe, and thincke that you do not loue fo well, your owne goodes, purfe or honour, as I doe with all my hart tender and imbrace the fame." The
lord of Auannes fearefull with teares in eyes, befought her ear-
nestly that for her woordes affurreance, shee woulde vouchsafe to
kiffe him: which she refufed, laying that for him, she would not
breake the countrie's cuftome: and vpon this debate the husband
came in, to whom the Lord of Auannes faid: "My father, I knowe
my felfe fo much bounde to you and to your wife, as I befech you
for euer to repute me for your fonne." Which the good man
willingly did. "And for furety of that amitie, I pray you," faid
Monfer D'Auannes, "that I may kiffe you." Whiche he did.
After he fai'd vnto him: "If it were not for feare to offend the
Law, I would do the like to my mother your wyfe." The hus-
bande hearinge him faye fo, commaunded his wyfe to kiffe him,
which he did although she made it fraunge, either for the Lord's
defire or for husband's requete to do the fame: then the fier
(which words had begunne to kindle in the harte of the poore
Lorde) beganne to augmente by that defired kiffe, fo strongly fued
for, and fo cruelly refufed: which done the fayde Lord of Au-
nnes repayred to the Caftell to the kinge his brother, where he
told many goodly tales of his voyage to Montferrat, and vnder-
ftode there, that the kinge his brother was determined to remove
to Olly and Taffares, and thinking that the iorney woulde be
longe, conceived great heaunines, which made him to mufe how
he mighte affaye before his departure, whether the wife Gentle-
woman bare him fuch good will, as shee made him beleue shee
did: and therefore hee toke a houfe in the ftrete where she
dwelt, which was old and ill fauoured and built of Timber: which
houfe about midnight of purpose he fet on fier, wherof the crye
was fo great throughout the Citie as it was hard within the rich
man's houfe. Who demaundyng at his window wher the fier
was, vnderftode it to be at the Lord of Auannes, wherunto he in-
continently repayred with all the people of his houfe, and found
the yonge Lord in his shirt in the middeft of the ftrete, whom for
pitie he toke betweene his armes, and couring him with his
nighte Gowne, caried him home to his houfe with al poiffible
speede, and faide vnto his wife which was a bed: "Wife, I glie
you to kepe this prifoner, vie him as my felfe." So fone as he
was departed the fayd Lord of Auannes, who had good wil to be
intereteigned for her husband, quicklie lept into the bed, hoping that the occasion and place would make that wife woman to chauenge her minde, which he founde to be contrary: for so fone as he lept into the bed of thone side, shee speddelie went out of the other, and putting on her night Gowne she repaired to the bed's head, and saide vnto him: "How now ffr, do you thincke that occasions can chauenge a chaffe harte? beleue and thincke that as gold is proved in the Fornace, euens fo an vnspotted hart in the middest of temptacion: wherein many times an honest hart sheweth it selfe to be more strong and vertuous, then els where, and the more it is affailed by his contrary, the coudler be the desires of the same: wherefore be you assured that if I had bin affected with other minde then that which many times I haue disclosed vnto you, I would not haue fayled to finde meanes to haue satified the same: praying you that if you will haue me to continue the affection which I beare you, to remove from your minde for euer not onely the will but the thoughte alfo, for any thinge you be able to doe to make me other then I am." As she was speaking of these words her women came into the chamber, whom she comandeed to bring in a colacion of all fortes of conflicts and other delicates: but that time hee had no appetite either to eate or drincke, hee was fallen into suche dispaire for fayling of his enterprife: fearing that the demonstration of his desire, would haue caused her to giue ouer the secrete familiaritie betweene them. The husband hauinge ceaft the fier, returned and intreated the Lord of Auannes that night to lodge in his house, who paflsd that night in such number of cogitacions as his eyes were more exercisd with weeping then sleepeing, and early in the morninge he bad them farewell in their bedde, where by kisssing the Gentlewoman hee well perceiued that she had more pitie upon his offence, then euill will against his perfon, which was a cole to make the fier of loue to kindle more fiercely. After dinner he rode with the king of Taffares, but before his departure he went to take his leaue of his newe alied father and of his wyfe: whome after the surfet commaundement of her husband, made no more difficultie to kisse him then if he had bin her owne sonne. But be assured the more that vertue flayed her
eye and countenaunce to shew the hidden flame, the more it did augment and become intolerable, in such wyse as not able to indulge the warres which honour and loue had rayfes within her hart, (who notwithstanding was determined nener to shewe it, having lost the consolacion of her fight, and forgone the talke with him for whom she liued) a continuall feuer began to take her, caused by a Melancholike and couerit humor, in such wyse as the extreme partes of her body waxed cold, and thofe within burnt inceffantly. The Phisitons (in the hands of whom man's life doth not depend) began greatly to mistrust health by reason of a certaine opilacion which made her melanchoyle: who concealed the hufbande to aduertife his wyfe to consider her conscience, and that she was in the handes of God (as thoughe they which he in health were not in his protection): the hufbande which entirely loued his wyfe, was wyth their woordes made so heauye and penife, as for his confort he wrote to the Lord of Auannes, befeechinge him to take the paynes to vifite them, hoping that his fight would greatly ease and relieue the disease of his wyfe. Which request the Lord of Auannes immediatly vpon the recepote of those letters slacked not, but by poffe arriued at his father's house: at the entrye whereof hee founde the feruauntes and women makinge great forrowe and lamentacion accordinglie as the goodness of their maiftresse deferred: wherewith the sayde Lorde was so astonned as hee floode stil at the doore like one in a trauance, vntil he sawe his good father: who imbracing him beganne so bitterlie to weepe, that he was not able to speake a worde. And so conueied the sayde Lorde of Auannes vp into the Chamber of his poore sicke wyfe: who casting vp her languishinge eyes looked vpon him: and reaching his hand vnto her, she strayned the fame with all her feeble force, and imbracinge and kissinge the fame made a marueyous plainte, and sayd vnto him, "O my Lord, the houre is come that all diffimulacion must ceafe, and needes I must confesse vnto you the troth, which I to my greate paine had conceale from you: which is, that if you have borne vnto me greate affection, beleue that mine rendred vnto you, hath bin no leffe: but my sorrow hath farre furpassed your grieve, the smarte whereof I do feele now against myne hart and will: wherefore, my lord, yee shall vnderstand, that God and mine
honour would not suffer mee to difclove the fame vnto you, fearing to increafe in you that which I desired to be diminished: but knowe yee, my Lorde, that the woordes which fo many tymes you haue vttered vnto mee, haue bred in me such grieues, as the fame be the Instrumentes and worke of my death, wherewith I am contente with God did giue mee the grace not to suffer the violence of my Loue, to blot the puritie of my conscience and renowne: for leffe fire then is wythin the kindled harte of mine, hath ruined and confummed most famous and stately buildinges. Nowe my hart is well at eafe, fitte before I dye, I haue had power to declare myne affection, which is equall vnto yours, faying that the honor of men and women be not a like: befeechinge you, my Lorde, from henceforth not to feare to addresse your selfe to the greatest and mofte vertuous Ladies that you can finde: for in suche noble hartes do dwell the strongeſt passions, and there the fame be moſte wisely governed: and God graunt that the grace, beautie and honestie, which be in you, do not suffer your loue to trauell wythout fruite: haue in remembrance good, my Lord, the stabilitie of my conſtante minde, and do not attribute that to crueltie which ought to be imputed to honor, conscience and vertue: which are thinges a thouſande times more acceptable, then the expence and loffe of tranſitorie life. Nowe, farewel, my Lorde, recommendinge vnto your honour the state of my husband your good father, to whom I pray you to reherfe the troth of that which you doe know by mee, to the intent that he may be certeined how dearly I haue loued God and him: for whose fake I befeech you to abfente your felfe out of my flicht: for from henceforth I do meane holye to giue my felfe to the contemplacion of thofe promifes which God hath louingly decreed, before the conſtitucion of the world." In faying fo shee kissed him, and imbraced him wyth all the force of her feeble armes. The fayde Lorde, whose hart was dead for compaffion, as her's was in dying through grieues and forrow, without power to speake one onely worde, withdrew himſelf out of her flicht and laye downe vpon a bed within an inner chamber: where he fainted many times. Then the gentlewoman called for her husbande, and after she had giuen him many goodly leſſons, shee recommended him to the Lord of Auannes, affuringe him that
nexte to his parson, of all the men in the world she had him in
greateste estimacion: and foe kissinge her husband she badde
him farewell. And then was brought vnto her the holy Sacra-
mente, which shee receyued with such ioye, as one certaine and
fure of her Saluacion, and perceyuinge her figne begynne to
fayle, and her strength diminishe she pronounced aloude: In
manus tuas, &c. At which crie the Lorde of Auannes rose vp from
the bedde, and piteously beholding her, he viewed her with a
swete figne, to rendre her glorifie ghost to him which had re-
demed it. And when he perceyued that shee was dead, hee ran
to the dead bodie, which liuing he durft not approche for feare,
and imbraced and kiffed the same in such wife, as muche a doe
there was to remove her corps out of his armes: wherof the
husband was very muche abashed, for that he never thought that
he had borne his wife such affection. And in laying vnto him:
"My Lord, you have done enough:" they withdrew them selues
together. And after long lamentation, the one for his wife, and
the other for his Lady: the Lord of Auannes told him the whole
discourse of his Loue, and howe vntill her death she neuer graunted
him not so muche as one figne or token of loue, but in place
therof a rebellious minde to his importunate futes: at the reher-
fall whereof, the husband conceiued greater pleasure and con-
tentment than euer he did before: which augmented or rather
doubled his sorrow and grovelle for losse of such a wife. And all his
life time after, in al services and duties he obeyed the Lord of
Auannes, that then was not aboue eightene yeares of age, who
retourned to the Courte, and continued there many yeares with-
out will to feer or speake to any woman, for the sorrow which he
had taken for his Lady, and more then two yeares he wore blacke
for mourning apparell. Beholde here the difference beeweene a
wife and diferete woman, and one that was wanton and foolish,
both which fortes expressed different effectes of loue: whereof
the one received a glorious and commendable death, and the
other liued to long to her great flame and infamie. The one
by small fute fone won and obteyned, the other by earnest re-
questes and great payne pursuéd and followed. And till
death had taken order, to ridde her from that pursute,
she euer continued constant.
THE FIFTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

A punishment more rigorous than death, of a husband towarde his wife that had committed adulterie.

King Charles of Fraunce, the eight of that name, sent into Germany a gentleman called Bernage, lorde of Cyure besides Amboife: who to make speede, spared neither daye nor nighte for execution of his Prince’s commandement. In such wyse as very late in an euening he arrived at the Casfe of a Gentleman, to demaunde lodging, which very hardly he obtained. Howbeit, when the gentleman vnderstode that he was the seruaunt of such a kyng, he prayed him not to take it in ill parte the rudineffe of his seruantes because vppon occasion of certain his wife’s frends which loued him not, he was forced to kepe his house so straight. Then Bernage tolde him the cause of his iourney, wherein the Gentleman offered to doe to the king his maister all seruice possible. Leading him into his house where he was feasted and lodged very honorably. When supper was ready, the Gentleman conueyed him into a parler wel hanged with fayre Tapiftrie. And the meate being fet vpon the table, and he required to fit down, he perceiued a woman comming forth behind the hanging, which was so beauti-full as might be feene, fauing that her head was all shauen, and appareled in Almaine blacke. After bothe the Gentlemen had wash’d, water was brought to the Gentlewoman, who when she had wash’d she fat down also, without speaking to any, or any word spoken vnto her againe. The Lorde Bernage beholding her well, thought her to be one of the fayref Ladies that euer he fawe, if her face had not bene fo pale and her countenaunce fo fadde. After she had eaten a little, she called for drinke, which one of the seruauntes brought vnto her in a straunge cup: for it was the head of a dead man trimmed with filuer, wherof she dranke twice or thrice. When she had supped and wash’d her handes, making a reuereence to the Lord of the house, shee retourned backe againe that way shee came, without speaking to any. Bernage was so much amased at that straunge sighte, as he waxed very heauie and
A STRAUNGE PUNISHMENT

fadde. The gentleman who marked hym, sayde vnto hym: “I fee well that you be aftonned at that you saw at the table, but feying your honest demeanour, I wyll not keepe it secrete from you, because you shal not note that crueltie to be done without greate occasion. This gentlewoman whiche you see, is my wyfe, whom I loued better than was possible for any man to loue his wyfe. In such sorte as to marry her I forgot all feare of friendes, and brought her hither in despite of her parentes. She likewyse shewed vnto me suche signes of loue, as I attempted a thousande wayes to place her here for her ioye and myne, where wee lyued a long tyme in suche refle and contentation, as I thought my selfe the happieft Gentleman in Chriuentome. But in a journeie whiche I made, the attempt whereof myne honour forced me, shee forgot bothe her selfe, her confience, and the loue whiche shee bare towards me, and fell in loue with a Gentleman that I brought vp in this house, whiche her loue vpon my retourne I perceiued to be true. Notwithstanding the loue that I bare her, was so great as I had no mistrust in her, till such tyme as experience did open myne eyes, and sawe the thynge that I feared more than death. For whiche cause my loue was tourned into furie and dispayre, so greate, as I watched her so nere, that vpon a daye fayning my selfe to goe abroade, I hydde my selfe in the chamber where now shee remayneth. Into the whiche fonde after my departure shee repayred, and caufed the Gentleman to come thether. Whome I did beholde to doe that thinge, which was altogether vnmeet for any man to doe to her, but my selfe. But when I sawe him mounte vpon the bed after her, I stepped forth and tooke him betwene her armes, and with my dagger immediatly did kill him. And becaufe the offence of my wife femed so great as the doing of her to death was not sufficient to punish her, I deuisd a torment which in mine opinion is worse vnto her than death. For thus I vse her, I doe locke her vp in the chamber wherein she accustomed to vse her delightes, and in the companie of hym that she loued farre better than me. In the closet of which chamber I have placed the Anatomie of her friend, referuing the fame as a precious Jewell. And to the ende shee may not forget him at meales, at the table before my face, she vseth his skul in
Of Adulterie.

steade of a cup to drinke in, to the intent she may behold him (alioe) in the presence of hym whom through her owne fault she hath made her mortal enemy, and him dead and slaine for her fake, whose lune she preferred before mine. And so beholdeth those twoo things at dinner and supper which ought to displease her moste, her enemie liuing, and her friend dead, and al through her own wickednesse, howbeit I doe vfe her no worse than my self, although she goeth thus shauen: for the ornament of the heare doth not appertaine to an adultresse, nor the vayle or other furniture of the head to an unchait woman. Wherefore she goeth fo shauen, in token she hath lost her honestie. If it pleafe you, sir, to take the payne to see her, I wil bring you to her.” Whereunto Bernage willingly affented. And descending into her chamber which was very richely furnisshed, they founde her sitting alone at the fier. And the Gentleman drawing a Curteine, whiche was before the Clofet, he sawe the Anatomie of the dead man hanging. Bernage had a great defire to speake vnto the Ladye, but for feare of her hufbande he durft not. The Gentleman perceiuing the fame, said vnto him: “If it pleafe you to speake vnto her, you shal understand her order of talke.” Therewithall Bernage sayde vnto her: “Madame, if your paciencie be correpondent to this torment, I deme you to be the happiuest woman of the worlde.” The lady with teares trickeling down her eyes with a grace so good and humble as was possible, spake thus vnto him: “Sir, I doe confesse my fault to be so great, as all the afflictions and torment that the Lorde of this place (for I am not worthy to call him hufbande) can doe vnto me, be nothing comparable to the forroue I have conceived of myne offence.” And in sayinge so, she began pitifully to wepe. Therewithall the Gentleman toke Bernage by the hande, and led him forth. The next day morning he departed about the businesse which the king had sent him. Notwithstanding, in bidding the Gentleman fare well, he sayde vnto hym: “Sir, the loue which I beare vnto you, and the honor and secretes wherewith you haue made me priuie, doth force me to saye vnto you howe I doe thinke good (feing the great repentance of the poore Gentlewoman your wife) that you doe shewe her mercie. And bicause you be yong and haue no children, it were a verie great loffe and detriment
to lose such a house and lineage as yours is. And it may so come
to paffe, that your enemies thereby in time to come may be your
heires, and inioye the goodes and patrimonie whiche you doe leave
behinde you." The Gentleman which neuer thought to speake
vnto his wife, with those wordes paused a great while, and in thend
confessed his saying to be true, promising him that if she would
continue in that humilitie, he would in time shew pittie vpon her,
with whiche promise Bernage departed. And when he was re-
tourned towards the king his maister, hee recompted vnto him
the successe of his iourneyes. And amonges other things he tolde
him of the beautie of this Ladie, who sent his Painter called John
of Paris, to bring him her counterfaïste: which with the consent
of her husband, he did. Who after that long penaunce, for
a desire he had to haue children, and for the pitie
hee bare to his wyfe which with great hum-
bleness receiued that affliction, tooke her
vnto hym agayne, and afterwarde
begat of her many
children.
THE FIFTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

A President of Grenoble advertised of the ill governement of his wife, took such order, that his honesty was not diminished, and yet revenged the fact.

In Grenoble (the chief city of a Country in France called Dauphine, which city otherwise is named Gratianapolis) there was a President that had a very faire wyfe, who perceiving her husbande beginne to waxe olde, fell in loue with a yong man that was her husband's Clark, a very propre and handsome felowe. Upon a time when her husban in a morning was gone to the Palace, the clarke entred his chamber and tooke his Maiifter's place, whiche thing one of the president's men, that faithfully had ferued him the space of xxx. yeres like a truifie seruant perceiving, could not keepe it secret, but tolde his Maiifter. The President whiche was a wife man, would not beleue it vpon his light report, but sayde that he did it of purpofe to fet difcord betwene him and his wife, notwithstanding if the thing were true as he had reported, he might let him see the thing it selfe, whiche if he did not, he had good caufe to thinke that he had deuised a lye to breake and disolue the loue betwene them. The seruaunt did affure him that he would cause him to see the thing wherof he had tolde him. And one morning so fone as the President was gone to the Court, and the Clarked entred into his chamber, the seruaunt fent one of his companions to tel his maister that he might come in good time, to see the thing that he had declared vnto him, he himselfe standing stil at the doore to watch that the partie might not goe out. The President fo fone as he fawe the signe that one of his men made vnto him, sayning that he was not wel at ease, left the audience, and speedely went home to his house, where he founde his olde seruaunt watching at the chamber dore, affuring him for truth that the Clarke was within, and that he shoude with speede to goe in. The President sayd to his seruant: "Do not tarrie at the dore, for thou knowest ther is no other going out or comming in but onely this, except a little closet
wherof I alone do beare the keye.” The president entred the chamber, and found his wife and the Clarke a bed together, who in his shirt fell downe at the president’s feete, crying pardon, and his wife much afraid began to weep. To whome the President sayde: “For so muche as the thing which thou hast done is such, as thou maist well consider, that I can not abyde myhoufe (for thee) in this fort to be dishonored, and the daughters which I haue had by thee to be disaunaunced and abased: therfore leave of thy weeping, and marke what I shall doe. And thou Nicolas (for that was his Clarke’s name) hide thy selfe here in my closet, and in any wife make no noyse.” When he had so done, he opened the dore and called in his olde seruant, and sayde unto him: “Diddest not thou warrant and assure me that thou wouldest let me see my Clarke and wyfe in bedde together? And vpon thy words I am come hether, thinking to haue killed my wife, and doe finde nothing to be true of that which thou diddest tell me. For I haue searched the chamber in euery place as I will shewe thee.” And with that he caufed his seruant to looke vnder the beddes, and in euery corner. And when the seruant founde him not, throughly aftened, he sayde to his maister: “Sir, I sawe him goe into the chamber, and out he is not gone at the dore: and so farre as I can see he is not here: therefore I thinke the Diuel must nedes carrie him awaye.” Then his maister rebuked him in these words: “Thou art a villayn, to fet such diuision betwene my wife and me, wherefore I doe discharge thee from my seruice, and for that which thou haft done me, I will paye the thy dutie, with the aduaun- tage: therefore get thee hence, and take hede that thou doest not tarrie in this towne aboue xxiii. houre.” The President for that he knew him to be an honest and faithfull seruant, gaue him five or fixe yeares wages, and purpofed otherwize to preferre him. When the seruant (with ill will and weeping teares) was departed, the President caufed his Clark to come out of his Clofet: and after he had declared to his wife and him, what hee thought of their ill behauior, he forbad them to shewe no likelyhode of any such matter, and commanded his wyfe to attire and dreffe her selfe in more gorgeous apparell, than she was wont
to weare, and to haunt and refort to company and feaftes, willing the Clarke to make a better countenaunce on the matter then hee did before, but whensoeuer he rounded him in the eare and bad him depart, he charged him after that commaundement not to tarry foure houres in the towne. And when he had thus done, he retourned to the palace Courte, as though there hadde no futche thing chaunced. And the space of fiftene dayes (contrary to his custome) he feasted his frendes and neighbours, and after every those bankettes, he causd the minfrels to play, to make the Gentlewomen daunce. One daye he feing his wife not to daunce, he commaunded his Clarke to take her by the hande, and to leade her forth to daunce, who thinking the President had forgotten the trefpasse past, very joyfully daunted with her. But when the daunce was ended, the President faining as though he would haue commaunded him to doe some thing in his houfe, bad him in his eare to get him away and never to retourne. Now was the Clark very forowfull to leaue his Ladye, but yet no lefe ioynfull he was that his life was faued. Afterwardes when the President had made all his frendes and kinffolkes, and all the countrey, beleue what great loue he bare to his wife, vpon a faire day in the moneth of May, he went to gather a fallade in his garden, the herbes whereof after she had eaten, she liued not aboue xxiii. houres after, whereof he counterfaiet ·fuche forrowe, as no man could fuspect the occa- cion of her death. And by that meanes he was renug- ged of his enemy, and faued the honour of his houfe.

"C I will not by this Nouell (laid Emarfuitte) prayfe the conscience of the President, but herein I haue declared the light behauiour of a woman, and the great pacience and prudence of a man: Praying you good Ladies all, not to be offended at the truthe." "If all women (quo Parlamente) that loue their Clarkes or feruauntes, were forced to eate fuch fallades, I beleue they would not loue their gardens fo well as they doe, but woulde teare and plucke vp all the herbes bothe roote and rinde, to auoyde those things that by death might aduance the honor of their stock and lignage." "If fallades be fo costly (quoed Hircan) and fo daungerous in May, I will prouoke appetite with other fawces, or els hunger shall be my chiefest."
THE FIFTY-NINTH NOUELL.

A gentleman of Perche suspecting injury done unto him by his friend, provoked him to execute and put in proufe the cause of his suspicion.

Besides the country of Perche, there were two Gentlemen, which from the tyme of theyr youthe lyued in futche great and perfect amitie, as there was betwene them but one harte, one bed, one house, one table, and one purse. Long time continued this perfect frendship: betwene whom there was but one will and one woorde, no difference in either of them: in so muche as they not onely semed to be two brethren, but also they appeared in al semblances to be but one man. One of them chaunced to mary: notwithstanding they gane not ouer their frendship, but perfeuered in their usuall amitie as they were wont to doe: and when they happened to be strained to straight lodging, the married gentleman would not flick to suffer his friend to lie with him and his wife. But yet you ought for frendship sake to consider that the married man lay in the mids. Their goodes were common betwene them, and the mariage did yelde no cause to hinder their assured amitie. But in proceffe of time, the felicitie of this worlde (whiche carieth with it a certaine mutabilitie) could not continue in the house, which was before right pleasing and happy: for the married man forgetting the faithfull fidelitie of his friend, without any cause conceived a greate suspiccion betwene hym and his wyfe, from whom he could not dissemble the cafe, but sharply tolde her his mynde. She therewithall was wonderfully amazed: howbeit, he commanded her to doe all thinges (one thing excepted) and to make so muche of his companion as of himselfe. Neuertheless he forbade her to speake vnto hym except it were in the presence of many. All which she gave her husbande's companion to vnderstande, who would not beleue her, knowyng that hee had neither by thought or deede done anye thing whereof his companion had cause to be offended. And likewiße because he used to kepe nothing secreete from hym, he tolde him what he
had sayde, praying hym to tell him the truth of the matter,  
because he purposed neither in that, ne yet in any other thing, to  
geue occasion of breach of that amitie which of long time they  
had imbraced. The married Gentleman assured him that he neuer  
thought it, and how they which had fowen that rumor, had wick-  
edly belied him. Whereunto his companion replied: “I knowe  
well enough that Ieloufie is a paffion so intollerable as loue it  
selfe. And when you shall conceive that opinion of Ialoufie, yea  
and it were of my selfe, I should do you no wrong, for your selfe  
were not able to kepe it. But of one thing which is in your power,  
I haue good matter whereof to complayne, and that is because  
you will conceale from me your maladie, fith there was no paffion  
or opinion which you conceiued, that before this time you kept  
secret from me. Likewise for my owne parte if I were amorous of  
your wife, you ought not to impute it as a fault vnto me, because  
it is a fier which I bare not in my handes, to vfe at my pleasure.  
But if I kepe it to my selfe from you, and indebuer to make youre  
wife knowe it by demonstration of my loue, I might then be  
accompted that vntrustieft friend that euer liued: and for me I  
doe affure you that shee is a right honest and a good woman,  
and one that my fannie doth lef fавour (although she were not  
your wife) of all them that euer I fawe. But now fithens there  
is no caufe, I do require you that if you perceiue any suspiccion,  
be it neuer fo litle, to tell me of it, because I would so vfe mysel,  
as our frendship which hath indured fo long tyme, might not bee  
broken for a woman: and if I did loue her aboue any thing in the  
worlde, yet surely I would neuer speake worde vnto her, bicause  
I doe efteme our frendship better then the greateft treasure.”  
His companion swore vnto him very great othes that he neuer  
thought it, praying him to vfe his house as he had done before.  
Whereunto he aunswered: “Sithe you will haue me fo to doe,  
I am content: but I praye you if hereafter you doe conceive  
any finifhe opinion in me, not to difsemble the fame, which  
if you doe I will neuer continue longer in your companie.”  
In procee of time, liuing together according to their cuftome,  
the married Gentleman entred againe into greater Ieloufie than  
euer he did, commaunding his wife to beare no more that counte-
naunce towards him that she was wont to doe. Whiche commandement she tolde her husbande's companion, praying him after that time to forbear to speake vnto her, for that she was forbidden to doe the like to him. The gentleman vnderstanding by wordes and certaine countenaunces, that his companion had not kept promife, he sayd vnto him in great choler: "To be Ialous (my companion) is a thing naturall: but bicaufe thou diddest sweare vnto me by othes not to diffemble, I can by no meanes forbear to speake vnto her, for that thou was forbidden to doe the like to him. The gentleman vnderflanding by wordes and certaine countenaunces, that his companion had not kept promife, he sayd vnto him in great choler: "To be laalous (my companion) is a thing naturall: but bicaufe thou diddest sweare vnto me by othes not to dillTemble, I can by no meanes forbeare any longer: for I did euer thinke that betwene thyne harte and mine, there could be no let and interruption: but to my great griefe and without anye fault on my part, I doe see the contrarie. For as muche as thou art not only very Ialous betwene thy wife and mee, but alfo thou wouldest dissimulate and couer the same, so that in the ende thy maladie and diseafe continuing so long, is altered into mere malice, and lyke as oure loue hath bene the greatesthe that hathe bene feene in oure tyme, euen so our displeasure and hatred is nowe moste mortall. I haue done so mutche as lyeth in mee, to auoyde "this inconuenience, but ifthe thou haft suspected me to be an ill man, and I haue still shewed my selue to be the contrary, I doe sweare, and therwithal affure thee, by my faith, that I am the same thou thinkest me to be, and therefore from henceforth take hede of me: for since suspcion hath seperated the from my loue and amitie, despite shall denide me from thine." And albeit that his companion would haue made him belene the contrarie, and that hee mistrusted hym nothing at all, yet he withdrew his part of his moueables and goodes that before were common betwenee them, so that then both their hartes and goodes were so farre seperated as before they were vaulted and ioyned together. In fuch wyfe as the vnmaried Gentleman neuer ceafted till he had made his com-
panion cockolde, according to his promife.
OF A GENTLEMAN THAT DIED OF LOUE.

THE SIXTIETH NOUELL.

The piteous death of an Amorous Gentleman, for the slacke comfort geuen him to late, by his beloved.

Betwene Dauphine and Prouence, there was a gentleman, more riche and better furnisht with beautie, vertue, and good condicions, then with the goodes of fortune: who fill in loue with a gentlewoman that for this time shal want a name, for respecte of her parentes that are come of honorable houfes, and the Gentleman's name also shalbe vntolde, for like respecte, although altogether not fo honorably allied, as the Gentlewoman that he loued, and yet the historie very certen and true. And because his degree was not fo high as hers, hee durft not disclose his affection: for the loue which he bare her, was fo good and perfect, as rather would he haue bene tormented with the panges of death, then couet the leaft aduauntage that might redounde to her dishonor. And seing his state to baue in respecte of hers, had no hope to marry her. Wherefore he grounded his loue vpon none other foundation and intent, but to loue her with all his power so perfectlye as was possible, which in the ende came vnto her knowledge. And the Gentlewoman knowing and seing the honest amitie which he bare her, to be ful of vertue, ioyned with chaft and comly talke, felt her felfe right happie to be beloued and had in prife, of a personage so well condicioned, praftizing dayly cherefull countinaunce towards him (whiche was the best rewarde he pretended to haue) whereof he conceiued great eafe and contentment. But malice the cancred enemy of all reste and quiet, could not long abide this honest and happie life. For some frowning at his good happe, (as malice euer accompanieth a well disposed mynde) tolde the mother of the mayden, howe they marueiled that the Gentleman shoule bee so familiar in her houfe, inferring therewithall that the beautie of her daughter was the only caufe, with whom they sawe him many times to vse secrete and priuat speach. The mother which by no meanes doubted the honestie of the Gentleman, no more then shee did
of her own children, was very forge to vnderstand that some shold be offended at that their familiarity. She thought therfore to shunne the cause of their offence. And at length, (fearing that flanker might be raised of malice) she required the Gentleman for a tyme to haunt no more her house, as he was wont to doe. A thing to him of harde digestion, knowing his own innocencie, and leffe desart to be estranged from the house, for respect of the honest talke he vfed to the yonge gentlewoman. Notwithstanding, to stoppe the rage of malicious tongues, he withdrew himself, till he thought the brute was ceased, and then returned after his wonted maner: whose abence nothing abridged his auncient good will. And he began no foner to be familiar there again, but he vnderftode that the mayden shoule be maried to a Gentleman, that was not fo ritche and noble (as femed to hym) and therfore he thought he should receiue great wrong, if she were bestowed vpon that Gentleman, and not on hym, that had bene fo long a tutor. And thereupon conceived corage to preferre hym fefle in playne tunes, if choyfe were geuen to the maiden. Howebeit, the mother and other of her kynne, follicitedand chofe the other gentleman because (in dede) he was more welthie. Whereat the poore gentleman fretted with difpleasure, feing that his Ladie shoulde for worldly mucke be defrauded of her grootef tye, by little and little without other maladie, began to languifhe, and in little tyme was fo altered, as in his face appeared the visage of death. Neuertheelffe he could not forbeare the house of his beloved, but continually from time to time made his repaire thether to fede himfelfe with the bauleme of that beautie, which he thought would prolong his dayes, but it was the onely abridgement. In thend the poyfon he fucked by the viewe of that beautie, confumed his strenght, and force failing him, was confrained to kepe his bedde. Whereof he would not aduerfifie her whome he loued, for greuing her, knowing well that she would bee tormented with the newes. And fo suffring him felfe to runne the race of paft recourye, loft alfo his appetit to eate or drinck, and therewithall his flepe and rest fayled, in fuche plight as within short space he was conffumed in visage and face, as it grewe to be vglie and cleane out of knowledge. Brought to
this lowe estate, one of his frends certified the mother of his mistres, that was a very charitable and kinde Gentlewoman, and loued so well the man, as if all their parentes and kinne had bene of her's and the mayden's opinion they would have preferred the honestie of him, before the great substance of the other. But the frends of the father's side by no meanes would consent vnto it. Yet the good Gentlewoman and her daughter (for all the other's frowardnes) vouchedased to visit the poor gentleman whom they founde, rather declining towards death, then in hope of life. And knowing his ende to approche, he was shriven and receiued the holy Sacrament, purposing of present passagge by panges of death, neuer to see any of his frends againe. Being in this caufe and yet feing her, whome he counted to be his life and fauftie, felte suche sudden recovery, as hee throwe hym selfe alofte his bedde and spake these wordes vnto her: "What cause hath drieuen you hither (mistres myne) by takyng paines to visitte him, who hath one of his feet alreadie within the graue, the other stepping after with convenient speede, for execution whereof you be the onely Instrument." "Howe fo, sir?" sayde the mother. "Is it possible that hee, whom we fo derely loue, can receive death by our offences? I pray you sir to tell me, what reafon leadeth you to speake these wordes." "Madame," sayde he, "so long as I could, I dissembled the loue that I bare to my deare mistres your daughter: so it is that my parentes and frends speaking of a mariage betwene her and me, haue clattred thereof moe nedeles wordes then I desired, by wayinge the mishap that might infue, and nowe doth happie paft all hope not for my particular pleasure, but bicause I knowe with none other she shalbe so well intreated nor beloued as she should haue bene with me. The benefit which I see she hath lost, is the most perfect frende the best affected seruanunt that ever shee had in this worlde, the loffe wherof summoneth death to arrest the careafe, that shoulde haue bene imploied for her seruice, which intierly was conferued and shoulde haue bene for her sake: but fitte nowe it can serue her to no purpose, the simple loffe shall redounde to greatest gaine. I meane my selfe (good Ladies bothe) that lieth bewrapped in death before your faces, whose withered
OF A GENTLEMAN

clammes hath caught the same within her reach, and hath warned the clocke to tolle the dolefull bell for his poor lovyng ghoste, nowe fretchynge out for the winding fette to shrowde his maigre corps, all forworne with the watche and toile, that such poore men (affected with like care) do feele. It is my selfe, that erft was rouing amid the troupe of Courtlie knightes decked with comely face, whose heue dame Nature stayned with the colours of her golden art. It is I that of late was loued of that Nymphe, and earthie Goddesse, who with courtinge countenaunce imbraced the place where I did flande, and kissed the fleps wherein I trode. It is my selfe I saye, that whilom in painefull bliffe, did bath my selfe, and fedde mine eyes with the happie viewe of the heauen-lieft creature that euer God did make. And by forgoing of those ioyes by to to much mishap, and sacréd famine of cursed mucke, I am thus pined as ye see, and wrapte in hopeles state.” The mother and doughter hearinge this complainte, did their indeuour to cheere him vp, and the mother sayde unto him: “Be of good courage sir, and I promife you my fayth, that if God giue you health, my doughter shal haue none other husband but you, and behold her here, whom I commaunde to make you preuent promife.” The mayden weeping with a virginal flamefaines, con-fented to her mother’s heft. But knowing when he was recouered, that he shoulde not haue her, and that the mother was so liberal of her fayre words, to recomfort him and affaye if she might restore him: he said vnto them, that if those words had bin pronouced three monethes paft, he had bin the luftieft and moft happie gentle-man of Fraunce: but helpe offred so late, was paft believe and hope. But when he saw, that they went about to force him to beleue it, he said vnto them: “Now that I fee ye go about to promife the good tourne which can neuer chaunce vnto mee, yea although con-fent ioyned with vnfayned promife desires the effect, for repect of the feeble state wherein I am: yet let me craue one thing at your hands, farre leffe then that ye offer, which hitherto I neuer durft be so bolde to ask.” Whereunto they both affented and swore to performe it, intreating him not to be ashamed to requyre it. “I humbly befeech ye (quoth hee) to deliuer her into mine armes whom ye haue promifed to be my
wife, and commaunde her to imbrace and kiffe me.” The mayden not vfed to such priuie futes, ne yet acquainted with such secreete facts, made some difficultie, but her mother gaue her expresse commaundement to doe it, perceyuing in him no likelihode or force of a man to liue. The maiden then vpon that commaundement, aduaunced herfelfe uppon the bedde of the poore pacient, faying vnto him: “Sir, I befeech you to be of good cheere.” The languishing creature, fo hard as he could for his extreeme debilitie, stretched forth his faint confumed armes, and with al the force of his body imbraced the caufe of his death, and kiffinge her with his colde and wanne mouth, held her fo long as he could, and then fpake vnto the mayden: “The loue which I haue borne you hath bin fo great, and the good will fo honest, as neuer (mariage excepted) I wished anye other thinge of you, but that which I prefentlye haue, throughe the wante whereof and with the fame I will joyfully render my spirite to God, who is the parfaite Loue, and truest Charitie, whoe knoweth the greatnes of my loue and the honestie of my defire: humblie befeeching him, (that nowe I haung my defire betweene mine armes,) to interteigne my ghofte within his blessed bofome.” And in faying fo he caught her againe betweene his armes with such vehemencie, as the feeble hart not able to abide that affault, was abandoned of all powers and mouinges: for the inftant ioye fo dilated and stretched forth the fame, as the fiege of the foule gaue ouer, making his repaire and flighte to his Creator: and because the fence-les bodye refted withoute life, it gaue ouer his holde. Howbeit the loue, which the Damofell had still kept secreete, at that time thewed it self fo strong and mightie, as the mother and ferauntes of the dead Gentleman had much a do to separate that vtion, but by force they haled away the liuing, almoft deade with the deade. After the funerall was done with honourable exequies: but the greatest triumph was spent in teares, weepinges and cryes, specially by the gentlewoman, which so much more were manifefte after his death, as before in his life time they were dissembled, beftowinge them as an expiacion or sacrificie, to fatifie the wrong she had done vnto him. And afterwards (as I haue heard tell) she was maried to one, for mitigacion of her forow, that neuer was par-
taker of the ioye of her harte. See here good Ladies an Image of perfect loue, that so muche had seazed vpon that affections of this amorous Gentleman, as the pange neuer gaue ouer, till death (the rest of all troubles) had divided life from the body. Yet some perchaunce for the desperate part of this hopeles louer, will terme him to be a fonde louing foole: and say that it is not meete that they should neglecte their liues for womens fakes, which were not created but for their helpe and comforte. And that being true as veriyed and auouched by Scriptures, there is no cause of feare to demaunde that of them, which God hath enioyned them to giue vs. In deede a sensuall loue, and such as is grounded to satiffye beastly lusfe, is a thinge horrible to Nature, and abhominable in the sight of him that made both those creatures, whom he fraughted with reason and knowledge for the refuall of those vices, which are onely to be applied to beastes voyde of reason. But loue founded in the foyle of Vertue, for auoyding carnall lust exer-
cized in the state of Wedlocke, or first begonne and practizd for that ende, is very ciuil and to be honoured. And if that loue attaine not equall successe, through parents default or vnkindnes of frendes or other humane accidents, if that loue fo perce the hart, or otherwyse afflicte the pacient with dispare of helpe, and so occasioneth death, it is not to be termed follie or dotage, but to be celebrated with honourable titles. The honeft amentie then of this gentleman, borne long time to this gentlewoman, meriteth ever-
lafting praife: for to finde such great chaftitie in an amorous hart, is rather a thing deuine then humaine. A mocion moued above amongst the heauenly route, and not an ac wrought in the grofenes of man's infirmitie.
THE SIXTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleasantly recompenced the service of a kinde seruaunte of her's, that pursued her with service of loue.

In the Courte of king Fraunces, the first of that name, not longe after the Frenche king, the graunde father of Henry the 3 of that name now raigning: there was a Gentlewoman of good grace and interteignement, wanting not both minde and witte, such as the like of her sexe, are not to seeke, vnder what climate soever they be borne and bred, whose comly demeaner, curteous behaviour and eloquent speache, was agreeable to her other qualities of nature's giftes: whereby she gayned the hartes and good minds of nombers of seruauntes, with whom shee was cunning enough to spend her time, (hauing respect to the auftie and faufgard of her honor, which she preferred before all other solace) by such delectable consumption of time, as they that could not tell howe els to imploie their leasure, thoughte themselfes most bleffed, if they might attaine the delightfull presence of this well nourtered Dame. For they that made greatest assurance of her fidelitie, were in dispayre, and the most desperat were yet in some hope to winne her. Howbeit in deceyuing the most number, she could not forbear intirely to loue one, who for his part was not able to plaie the counterfaite, to colour the substance of his longe pursute: but as nothing is sure and stabe, their loue tourned to displeasure, and by frequent renewing of what was well knowen the hole Court was not ignoraunt, what devotion thone did beare to tother. One day the Gentlewoman, aifwell to let him know that his affection was not bestowed in vaine, as to make him to seele some smart and paine for his louing seruice, the more louingly to forde him on, with preety morfells of her dissembling concept, made shew vnto him of greater fauour, then euer she did before: for which cause he that was faultles either in deedes of armes, or in prowesse of loue, began liuely and valiantly to folow her, to whom long before with gentlenes and humilitie he
had many times bin a supplicante. Who faying that she was not able any longer to rest obstinate, made semblance of a womanly pitie and accorded to his demaund. Telling him that for respect of his tedious travaile, she was now disposed to go to her chamber, (which was in a Gallerie of the Castell where that time the kinge did lie) where she knew was none that could hinder what they two intended: willing him not to faile but so fone as he faw her depart the place she was in, to follow after to her chamber, where he should finde her alone, tarying for him with good deuocion.

The gentleman beleuening her appointmente, was readie to leape out of his skinne for ioye: and therewithall began to dalye and sport with other Ladies, attending the time of her departure. She wanting not the practize of any fine fleight or subtile policie, most pregnaunte in birds of her Ayrie, called two of the greatest Ladies to the prefent chamber window and said vnto them: "If it may plesse you good Ladies, I will discouer vnto you the pretieft patiere of the world." They which hard the grief of melancholie, befoughte her to tell what it was. "Thus it is" (quoth she) "such a gentleman, whom you know very well, to be both honest and vertuous, hath longe time (as partlie you have by to much experience feene,) gone about diuers wayes to winne that, which he shall neuer get: for when I began to applie my fancie towards him, he (vnconfiant) ceased not to couet and follow other Ladies with like pursuite hee did me: whereat I conceyued such more then spitefull hatred, as notwithstanding my outwarde semblance, I coueted reuenge. Nowe therefore maistrefle, Occasion hath lente me a portion of oportunitie, to be requited of his vaine and fickle fute: which is, that hauinge appointed him to come to my chamber, whither he meaneth presently to follow me, it maye please you to give heedfull eye and watch: and that when hee hath paffed alonge the Galerie, and is gone vp the flayers, that both of you wil recline your heads out of this window to helpe me finge the holding of the Caroll, that I meant to chaunte vnfo to him. And then shall you fee the raging choler of this Gentleman, that at other times presumed to be a quiet Suter: wherat perhaps through his malapert boldnes, it cannot daft his blussels face, but yet if he do not deale vnfo me like spiteful reproch in open
hearing, I know full well in hart he will wifhe me x. m. mischifes." This conclufion was not fpoken without treble laughter: for there was no gentlemen in all the Courte, that had warred fo much with the woman kind as hee, and yet welbeloued and eftemed of everie one, that lifted not to be intrapped within his daunger. Therfore these Ladies thinking to carie awaye some part of the glorie, which one alone hoped to atchieue vpon this gentleman, were contente to afent to the other's liking. Sofone then as they faw her depart, that purpofed this enterprife, they began to efpie the countenaunce of the betrayed partie, who paufe not long before he exchanged the place: and when he was oute of the chamber, the Ladies trayned after, to lofe no part of the sport, and went the faster that he might not be out of theyr fight. And he that doubted not the succesfe, threwe his cape about his necke to hide his face, and went downe the flayers out into the Court, and afterwards mounted vp againe: but perceyuing some approche which he was loth should be a witnes, he went downe againe, returning another way on the other fide. All which the Ladies fawe, vknownen to him. But when he came to the flayers where he beleued verely, that he might surely enter into his Maiftres chamber, the two Ladies put they heads out of the window, and incontinently perceyued the gentlewoman alofte, crying out a lowde, "A theefe, a theefe:" wherunto they two below aunfwered with fo vehement voyce, doubling the other's outcrie, as all the caftell range of it. I leaue for you to confider in what defpite this gentleman fled to his lodginge, but not fo clofely, but that he was ouertaken by thofe that knew this mifterie: who afterwards often- times reproched this fact vnto him, fpeciaf he that had deuifed the revenge: but hee had armed himfelfe with f aunfwers and defences fo readily, as he told them that he foreknew their defuife, and mente nothing by his pilgrimage but to folace his beloved. For of her loue long time before he was out of all hope, as hauing reafonable prooffe by his longe purfute and seruice. Howbeit the Ladyes would not hold his excuse for a veritie, which euen to this day hangeth in fuspence.
THE SIXTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The honest and marvellous love of a maiden of noble house, and of a gentleman that was base borne, and howe a Queene did impeche and let their mariage, with the wife aunfwere of the mayde to the Queene.

There was in Fraunce a Queene, who in her company and traine broughte vp many maydens, that were isued of great and honourable progenie: amonges other that ferued this Queene there was one named Rolandine, which was nere kinne to the Queene. But she for a certaine difpleafure concepted against her father, bare vnto the yonge gentleman no greate good will. This Maiden, although shee was none of the fairest, yet so wyse and vertuous as many great Lords and personages made sute to her for mariage, to whom she rendered for earnest sutes, cold aunswere: because she knew her father to be more bent to keeping of money, then to thaduannement of his children: and her Maiftresse (as is before said) bare vnto her so little fauour as they which esteemed the Queenes good grace, woulde neuer makeanye sute vnto her. Thus by father's negligence and Maiftres dißdaine, the poore gentlewoman remayned long time vnmaried. And as shee that forcibly was payned, not so much for griefe of mariage, as for that she was not required or sued vnto, became so ware of worldly life, as deuoutly shee bent her selfe to God, and by forfakinge the toyes and brauerie of the Courte, paßed her time in prayer, or els in other vertuous exercife: and by withdrawing her selfe to this kinde of life, she spent her youth so soberlie and deuoutly as was possible for a woman to do. When shee approched nere the age of xxx. yeares, there was a gentleman a baftarde borne, of right honorable house, a verry curteous and honest personage, whose every riches and beautie was such, as no Lady or gentlewoman for pleasure would have cho'en him to husband. This poore gentleman was voide of frends for maintenaunce of lyuing, and vnhappie in mariage sutes, although he pursued many, till at length he borded this poore Gentlewoman Rolandine: for their Fortunes, com-
plexions and condicions were very like, and by vfe of seuerall complaints made one to another, ech of them fell in ernest loue with the other: and being both thrall vnto mishap, they sought defired comforte by vertuous and honest talke: and by that vfe and frequentacion greater loue increas'd and grew betwene them. Tho' which had feene the maiden so straungly retir'd from wonted demeanor, as she would speake to none, now marking her continuallie to interteigne the baftard gentleman, incontinently conceiued ill opinion of her, and told the mother of the Queene's maids (called Modefta) that she ought not to suffer such familiartie betwene them. Which report Modefta reveale to Rolandine, sayinge that divers persons did speake euill of her, for that she vshed to talke with the baftard, that neither was of sufficient abilitie for her to marie, ne yet of beautie worthie to be beloued. Rolandine which daily was more rebuked for her aufferitie of life, then for worldly toyes, sayd vnto Modefta her gouernesse: "Alas, mother, you see that I cannot haue a husband according to the worthines of my bloud, and that dailye I haue auoyded those which be beautifull and yonge: for feare to incurre the inconuenience wherinto I haue feene other to fall: and now haung choien this wife and vertuous gentleman, who preacheth vnto me words that be good and godly, what wrong do they to me that make this report, fith in this honest order I doe receive consolacion of my griefes?" The good old Lady who loued the maiden (which she called maistrefse) as herelfe, said vnto her: "I see well, that you are worfe delt withall at your father and maistres handes then you deferue. Howbeit fith fuch reporte is made of your honor, you ought to refuse to speake vnto him, although he were your naturall brother." Rolandine weeping saide vnto her: "Mother, for fo much as you adviſe me therunto, I will performe your request, although it be very firaunge that without flaunder, a woman can haue no comfort or seekke freedome without misreport." The baftard gentleman, as he was before accustomed, came to visite her, but she tolde him (a farre of) those words which her gouernesse had saied vnto her: and with teares prayed him to refraine for a time to speake vnto her, vntill the brute and rumor were somewhat appaied: which thing he did at her request. But
during this long time, either of them having lost their consolation, began to feel such torment within themselves, as she for her part never felt the like. She ceased not from praying unto God, from going on pilgrimage, and fasting: for this unacquainted loue brought her to such disquiet as she could not rest the space of one hour. Wherewith the noble bastard was no lefe tormented: but he which had alreadie minded in hart to loue her and pursuue her till mariage, and hauing respecte (for loue fake) to the honor he should acquire by the same, thought to finde means to declare his minde vnto her, and aboue all things to get the good wil of her gouernesse: which he did, declaring vnto her the miferie wherein her poore maiftresse remayned, which was voide of al comfort and other frienship. Then the poore old Lady Modeffa, gaue him thanks for the honest affectio that he bare to her maiftresse: and deuised means how the two louners might impart their minds together. Rolandoyn layned her self to be sicke of a Mygym and paine in her heade, the brute of whose maladie was feared to be greater then it was, and so concludied betwene them that when her companion were gone into the chamber, they two should remaine together alone to satiſfe each other with mutuall talke. The bastard gentleman was very glad, and ruled hiselſe holy by the councell of the Gouernesse, in such fowt as when he lifte, he fpake vnto his louver and vertuous Lady: but this contentaion did not indure: for the Queene who loued her but a little, inquired what Rolandoyn did fo long in her Chamber, and one made aunſwered that it was by reaſon of her ſicknes. Albeit there was another which knewe to well the caufe of her absence, sayde vnto her, that the ioye which Rolandoyn had to speake vnto the baſtard was able to eafe her Mygym. The Queene which found out the veniall finnes of other, by mortall offences in herſelſe, fet for her, and forbad her in any wyſe not to speake vnto the baſtard, except it werie in the hall or within her owne Chamber. The Gentlewoman made as though ſhe vnderſtoode her not, but mildely aunſwered that, if ſhee knew any talke betwene them might offend her maiftresse, ſhe would neuer speake vnto him againe. Notwithstanding she determined to finde out some other secret meanses that the Queene shoule not know of their meeting: which
was this. The Wednesday, Friday, and Saturday, the gentlewoman vfed to fari, and for that purpose kept her Chamber with her Gouerneffe Modesta, where she had leyfure to talke (whileft the refte did fuppe) with him whom she began fo earneftlie to loue: and as contrainte of time did force their talke to be fhorte, the greater was their affection in vtteraunce of the fame: because for the doing thereof they ftole time, as the theefe doth his defired praye. This order of their contentacion could not procede fo fecrely, but that a certaine varlet a yeoman of the Chamber, chaunced to fee him refert vnto her vpon a fasting day, and told it in fuch place wher of fome hearer, it was disclofed to the Queene herfelf, who was fo fore offendted as neuer after that time the poore baflard gentleman durfte once attempt to go into the maiden’s chamber againe. And to thintent that he might not lofe the commodity of talke with her, whom he fo derely loued, ofentimes he fayned himfelfe to go on pilgrimage, and in the evening returned to the Church and chapell of the Caffel, in the habite of a frier, or Iacobin (fo wel disguised and altered, as no creature could know him) and thither repaired the gentlewoman Rolandine, with her Gouerneffe to enterteigne him. He marking the great loue that the bare him, feared not to lay vnto her; “Madame, you fee the daunger which I hasard for your fervice, and the warnings that the Queene hath giuen for our talke. You fee on thother fide what a father you have, who careth not after what fort he bestow you in mariage: and you hauninge refufed fo many greate fates and noble men, I know not one, either farre or neare, that is minded to haue you. I confefs my felfe to be but poore, and that you may marie diuers gentlemen of greate reputacion and richeffe, then I am: but if loue and good wil were deemed treature and richeffe, then woulde I preffume to be the richefte gentleman of the world. God hath indowed you with great plentie of goodes, and you are yet in choife to haue more: and if I were fo happie as you would vouchsafe to chofe me for your husband, I would accompt my felfe to be vnto you both husband, frend and fervaunt, all the dayes of my life: and againe, if you should take one equall to your nobilitie (a thinge very harde to finde) he would rule and gouerne ouer you, and haue more respecte to your goodes, then to
your person, to your beautie then to your vertue: and in triumphinge with dispence of that you haue, hee maye chance to intreate you otherwise then you deferue. The desire of this contention, and the feare that I haue, leaft you should graunte it to some other, do force me to beseech you, that by one only meanes you would make me happie and your selfe the most contented and best intreated woman that euer was." Rolandine giuing eare to that communication which hee herselfe ment to haue pronounced, aunswered him with stouté courage: "I am very glad and wel pleased that you haue begunne the fute your self, which I of long time haue determined to breake vnto you: for which cause these two yeres paft as you know, I haue not ceased to thincke and deuife all the reaons and arguments for and against you, that I could invent: but in thend for so much as I do meane to take vpon me the state of Matrimonie, it is time that I begin to chose such husbande, with whom I shall in my conscience like to live at rest and quiet all the dayes of my life: and amidde all the troupe of my thoughts in choise, I cannot finde anye one, were he neuer so faire, riche or noble, with whom my hart and minde can so well agree and match as with you. I know that by marryng of you I shall not offende God, but rather do the thinge that hee commaundeth. And touching my Lord my father, he hath had so little consideracion of my perferment, and so often refused it, as the law now will suffice, that I giue my selfe in mariage withoute his consent, and therefore cannot disenherite me, or worthyly thincke ill of me: and by hauing a husband (a thing appertinent to women kinde) such as you be, I shall esteeme my selfe the richest woman of the worlde. As for the Queene my maistrefle, I oughte not to take any care or remorse of conscience by displeasing her, to obey God: for she hath not ceased to hinder that aduauancement, which in my youth I mighte haue had, and by paine and diligence towards her did well deferue: but to thend you may understand, that the loue and good will which I beare you, is founded vpon vertue and honor, you shall promise me, that if I doe accorde this mariage, you shall neuer purchase or require the consummacion thereof, Vntill my father be deade, or els do finde some meanes to make him consente hereunto." Which
the baftard gentleman willingly did graunt: and vpon these pro-
myses and termes, either of them gaue eche other a ringe in the
name of mariage, and did kiff e together in the Church before
God, whom they toke to witnes of their assurance, and neuer after
betwene them was any other priuie fact committed, but only
kissing. This little easement of mind did greatly fatifie the harts
of these two perfect louers: and were a great while without feing
ech other, liuing only by this assurance. There was no place
where honour mighte be gotten, but thereunto the baftarde made
his repaire with so great delight, as he thought he could neuer be
poore for respect of that riche wife which God had prouided for
him. Which wyfe in his abfence, did euery continue her absolute
amitie towards that gentleman: and although many made fute
yet they receyued none other aunfwere from her but deniall, and
for that she had remayned so long time vnmaried, she was minded
neuer to take vpon her that flate. This her aunfwere was so
generall as the Queene heard of it, and asked her for what occasion
she was so determined. Rolandine faide vnto her, that it was
to obey her: for that she knew she would never suffer her to
marie, becaufe in time and place where she might haue bin
honorable matched to her well liking, she denied the fame, and
that the vertue of pacience had taught her to contente herfelfe
with the flate wherein she was. And still as she was fued for
in mariage, she rendred like aunfwere. When the warres were
ended, and the baftarde returned to the Courte, she neuer spake
vnto him in open prefence, but wente alwayes into some Church
to interteigne him vnder colour of Confeffion: for the Queene had
forbidden both him and her, that they should not talke together,
vnleffe it were before companye vpon paine of losse of their
lives. But honeft lone, which feareth no defence, was more preft
to find meanes, for their mutuall talke, then their enemies were
ready to feparate the fame: and vnder the habite or colour of all
the religions they could deuife, they continued that honeft
amitie, vntil the king remoued into a house of pleafure, not fo
nere as the Ladies were able to go on foote to that Church, as they
were to the Church of the Castell, which was not fituate in fuch
conueniente wyfe for their purpofe, as they could secrely re-
paire (vnder colour of confession) to talke together: notwithstanding if on the one side occasion fayled, loue found out another for their contentment: for there arrived a Lady to the Court, to whom the baftard was very nere kin. This Lady with her sonne were lodged in the king's house, and the chamber of this yong prince was far beyond the body of the lodging, where the king himfelfe did lie: but so nere vnto Rolandine's Chamber as he might both see and speake vnto her, for their windowes were properlie and directly placed at either corner of the house: in which chamber (being over the hall) were lodged all the Ladies of honor, the companions of Rolandine. Who beholding many times the yong king at that window, caufed the baftard to be aduertized therof by her gouerneffe: who after he had well beholde the place, made as though he had great delighte to read vpon a booke of the Knightes of the Round Table, that lay in the chamber window of the yong king: and when euery man was gone to dinner, he prayed the yeoman to suffer him to make an end of the historie, and to shut him within the chamber. The other which knew him to be the kinifman of his maiftres, and an assured man, suffred him to read fo long as he lifte. On thother side Rolandine came vnto her window, who to find occasional to tarry there the longer, fayned to haue a paine in her leg, and dined and supped in fo good time, as she went no more to the ordinarie of the Ladies: wher she began to fet herfelfe a worke about the making of a bed of Crifon filke, placing her worke vpon the window, as defirous to be alone. And when she faw no man to be there, fhe interteigne her husband, to whom fhe might speake in secret wife, fo as none was able to vnderfitande them: and when any perfon came nere, fhe coughed and made a figne that the baftard might withdraw himfelfe. They that were appointed to watche them, thought vn doubtedlie that their loue was past and ended, because she went not out of the Chamber, wher safely he coulde not see her, for that fhe was forbidden the fame. Vpon a day the mother of the yong Prince being in her fonne's Chamber, repayred to the windowe where that great booke did lie, and fhee had not staied there long, but one of Rolandine's fellowes which was within her Chamber faluted her. The lady asked her how Rolan-
dine did, who sayd that she might very wel see her, if it were her pleasure: and caused her to come to the window wyth her night geare vpon her head. And after they had talked a while of her sicknes they withdrew themselues. The other ladie espying the great booke of the Round Table, sayde to her yeoman of the Chamber: "I do marueille much why yong men do imploie them-

selues to read such follies." The yeoman made aunswere, that he marueled much more, why men of good yeres, counted and esteemed wife and discreete, shoud haue greater delight in reading of such trifles, then those that were yong. And to iustifie that maruel hee told her how her coffin the baftard did spend 4 or 5 hours in a day to read vpon the same. Vpon which words by and by she conceyued the cause of his deepe studie, and charged him to hide himselfe in some place to mark what he did. Which commandement the yeoman performed, and perceiued that the booke which the baftard read vpon, was the window out of which Rolandine talked with him: and therewithal called to remem-

brance many wordes of the loue which they thought to keepe very secreete. The next day he rehearsed the same vnto his maistreffe, who sent for her coffin the baftard, and after many tales told him, she forbad him to reforst thither any more, and at night she gaue like warning to Rolandine, threatninge her that if she continued in her fond and foolish loue, she would tell the Queene the whole circumstaunce of her lighte demeaner. Rolandine (nothing aftenied with those woords) did sweare that fith the time she was forbidden by her maistreffe the queene's maiefty, she neuer spake vnto him: the troth whereof shee might learne afwel of the gentlewomen her companions, as of other servauntes of the house: and touching the window whereof she spake, she boldly adouched that shee neuer talked with the Baftard there. Who (poore gentleman) fearing that his affayres would be reuealed, kept himselfe farre out from daunger, and longe time after did not retourne to the Courte. Howbeit, he wrote many times to Rolandine by such secret meanes as for all the espiall that the Queene had put, there passd no weeke but twise at leaft shee hearde newes from him: and when one meanes did fayle hym, hee deuised another, and many tymes sent a litle Page clothed
in colours (so often altered and chaunged as he was sent) who
flaying at the gates when the Ladies passe d by, deleyued his
letters priuelye in the middest of the preafe. Vpon a time as the
Queene for her pleasure walked into the fieldes, one which knew
the Page and had charge to take hede vnto those doings, ranne
after him: but the Page which was a fine boye, doubtinge leafte
hee should be searched, conueyed hym selfe into a poore woman's
houfe, where spedelie he burnt his letters in the fier, ouer whiche
a potte was boyling with meate for her poore familie. The gen-
tleman that followed him stripped him naked and searched his
clothes, but when he fawe that he could finde nothing, he let him
goe: and when he was departed, the olde woman asked him
wherefore he searched the boye: who aunfwered: "to finde
letters which he thought he had about him." "Tufh," (quod
fhe) "ferch no more, for he hath hidden them very well." "I
pray thee tell me," (quod the Gentleman) "In what place:" hop-
ing to haue recovered the same. But when hee vnderfode that
they were thrown into the fire, he well perceiued that the boye
was craftier then him selfe. All whiche incontinently hee tolde
the Queene, notwithstanding from that time forthe, the bastard
vsed no longer the Page, but sent one other of his olde seruauntes,
whom he faithfully trusted, and he (forgetting feare of death
which hee knewe well the Queene threatned on them that had
to doe in those affaires) tooke vpon him to carie his maifer's
letters to Rolandine. And whee he was entred the Castell, hee
wayted at a certen doore placed at the foote of a paire of staiers,
by whiche the ladies passe d to and fro: where he had not taried
long, but a yeoman which at other times had sene him, knewe
him and thereof told the maifer of the Queene's house, who sould-
dainly made searche to apprehende him. The fellowe which
was wife and politique, feing that diuers loked vpon him a farre
of, retournded towards the wall (as though he would haue made his
water) tearing his letters in so many small peces as he could doe
for his life, and threw them behinde an old gate: who had no foner
done the facfe, but hee was apprehended and throughly searched,
and when they could finde nothing about him, they made him
weare whether he had brought any letters or not, vſing him
partly by rigor, and somewhat by faire perfwafion to make him confesse the truthe: but neither through promife or threate, they could get any thing at his handes. Report hereof was brought to the Queene, and one of the companie gaue aduife that searche should be made behind the gate, where he was taken: in which place they founde nothing but little peces of letters. Then they caused the kinge's Confessor to be sent for, who recovering the peces layd them vpon a table, and red the lettre throughout, where the veritie of the mariage (so much disembled) was throughly discerfed, for the baftard in those letters called her nothing els but wife. The Queene not meaning to conceale the fault of her kinfwoman, (which she ought to haue done) fil into a great rage and stortme, commaunding that the poore man by al meanes possibile should be forced to confesse the true tenor of that letter, to thintent that the same by his affirmacion might not be denied: but doe what they could, they were not able to make him alter his former tale. They which had commiffion to examine him, brought him to the Rier fide and did put him into a fack, faying that he did lie before God and the Queene, and against an approved trothe. He that had rather lofe his life than accuse his maifter, prayed them to fuffer him to haue a ghosly father that like a Christian he might ende his life, and fo entre the ioyes prepared for all repentant finners, and after that he had clered his confcience, he faid vnto them: "Maifters, tell my Lorde and maifter the Baftarde, that I recommend vnto him the poore eftate of my poore wife and children, truffing his honour will haue confideration of them for my fake, for fo much as with good and loyall harte, I doe impoye my life for his honor and fueetie: and with me doe what you lift, for you get nothing at my handes that shall redounde to his hurt and prejudice." Then to put him in greater feare, they bounde him within the facke and threve him into the water, crying unto him, if thou wilt tell the trouth thou shalt be faued: but they feing that he would make no aunftwer drew him out againe, making reporte to the Queene of his faith and confancie. Who then sayd, that neither the king nor she were fo happy in feruauntes as the Baftarde was, that had not wherewith to recompence fuch fideltie. The Queene did
what she coulde to get him from his seruice, but the poore fellowe would in no wise forfake his maister. Notwithstanding in thende by his saide maister's leave, he was put into the Queene's seruice, where he liued many happy dayes. The Queene after she underftode by the baftarde's letters the trouth of the mariage, sent for Rolandine, and in great rage, called her caitife and miserable wretche, in ftede of coffin, reciting vnto her the disparagement of her noble house, and the villanie she had commited against the honorable race whereof she came, and against the will of her which was her Queene, kinswoman and maistres, by contracting mariage without the licence of the king and her. Rolandine whiche of long time knewe the small devotion that her maistres bare vnto her, vfed her with like affection: and bicause she was werie of the Queene's displeasure, thinking that her correction vtered in presence of many proceeded not of loue, but rather to make her ashamed, abandoned feare, and conceiuing courage, when she sawe the Queene in her chiefest rage, with gladsome and firme countenaunce anwered her in this wise: "Madame, if you cannot conceiue the malice of your owne harte, I will set before your eyes the rancour and displeasure of the fame, which malice of long time you haue borne towards the Lorde my father and me: whereof madame, I doe feel the smarte, to my great losse and grief: for if it had pleas'd you to haue borne vnto me that good wil which you do to those that are not so nere about you as I am, I had before this tyme been placed and preferred in mariage as well to the likyng of your honour as to my greate fatiffaction: but you have regarded mee as one forgotten, and cleane out of favour, in such wyfe as all the noblemen, with whom I might haue been matched, haue contempted me, as well through the negligence of my Lorde my father, as for the like estimation and accompt that you haue made of me: by meanes whereof I fell into that dispaire which if my health could haue sustained the order and state of religion, I would willingly haue taken it vpon me, to haue feuered my selfe from the continuall hatred and enuy which your grace ful rigorously hath shon en vnto me: and being in this dispaire, I chaunced to finde out him, that is proceded of fo noble a house as my selfe. If the loue of twoo
perfones is to be regarded, that meane to accomplifhe the holy
state of wedlock: for you knowe that his father in nobilitie farre
excelled myne. He hath of long time loued me, and made great
fute vnto me, but you madame, whiche neuer pardonned me for
any small offence, ne yet prayfed anye good aëte of myne (although
you know by experience that I haue not vfed to talke of matters
of loue or other worldlie affaires, and that I minded aboue all
things to leade a more religious life then any other) doe make
it an hainous matter that I should talke with a Gentleman (to
infortunate as my selfe), by whose loue, I thought or sought for
nothing els but the eafe and comfort of my minde. And seing
my selfe voyde and frufrate of mine expectation, I shall imploie
indevour so well to seeke my ref and quiet, as you have gone
about to dipoyle me of the same: and then will celebrate the
mariage which is already affured by promifes and by a ring.
Wherefore, madame, I thinke that you doe me great wrong by
terming me to be a wicked woman, fitte that in so great and per-
fect amitie I might haue founde ocasion (if I would) to have com-
mited euils: but there was neuer betwene him and me any priuie
faët, other then that is honest, hoping that God wil shewe me
such faëour, as before the mariage be confumat, I shall obteme
the faëour and good will of my Lorde my father: wherby I do
neither offend God, nor my conscience, for I haue taried till the
age of xxx. yeares, to fee what you and my father would doe for
me. I haue kept my selfe so chaste and honest, as no man liuing
is able to laye the contrarie to my charge. And with that reafon
werewith God hath indued me, being olde and voyde of hope,
to finde a hufbande agreable to my nobilitie, I am determined to
marie fute a one as I like best, not for the pleafure or satifc-
tion of the eye (for you know he is not faire) nor for luft of the
flefh (for there hath bene no carnall faët committed) ne yet for
pryde and couetoufnes (for he is but poore and of little estimation)
but I haue a sincerer refpecë and pure regarde to his vertue,
honestie and good grace, for whiche the worlde doth geue him
praife, and the great loue alfo that he beareth me, maketh me
hope to finde with him great ref and quiet. And after I had
deuifed and considered the good and euill that might infue by
this my choife, I still persisted in that mind, and haue well wayed and pondered the fame these twoo yeares past, being throughly resolued to waste and spende the rest of my dayes with him which I meane still firmely to kepe in despite of all the tormentes and cruelties, that the greatest enemies I haue, be able to make my poore bodie suffre, no not death it selfe shall force me to refuse hym. Wherefore Madame, I befeech you to accept this my reasonable excufe, whereunto your selfe is nowe made priuie, and suffer me to liue in that peace, whiche I hope for euer through him, in these mine elder to finde.” The Queene wel marking her stout wordes and countenaunce, and knowing the fame to be very true, was not able to aunfwere her againe with reafon: but continuing, her rebukes and taunting checkes began to waste, and at length fell out into this rage: “Ah, presumptuous drabble, and caitife wretch, in fede of humbling thy selfe and repenting thine offence, thou carpeft boldly without dropping or sheading any teare, whereby thou dost manifeftly declare that stubbornes and hardnes of thy harte: but if the king, and thy father, would follow mine aduife, they should put thee into a place, where force should make thee to vse other language.”

“Madame,” faid Rolandine, “because you haue accused me of bolde talke and presumptous speache, I meane from henceforth to hold my peace, except you geue me leave to make mine aunfwere.” And when she was commaunded to tell forth her mynde, she faid: “It is not my part, Madame, boldly or without duetifull reverence to speake before your maiestie (whiche is my maiftreffe, and the greatest Princeffe in Christendome). The wordes which I haue faid, be not spoken (Madame) of presump-
tion, but to declare that I haue none other advocate to pleade for me, but the trouth of my caufe. And therefore am bolde without blushing feare to disclose the fame, hoping that if your grace did knowe the secreet concept of my poore faithfull harte, you woulde not judge mee to be that woman which you terme me to be. I doe not doubt that any mortall creature understanding my behaviour in thofe matters wherwith I am charged, would blame me, for my liberall speache, fitte I am sure that God and myne honor in no point I haue offended. The caufe which maketh me
thus without feare to faye my minde is, because I am affured that he whiche feeth my harte, is the gener of my life also, and remaineth with me. If then fuch a Judge and Guide doe order and dispose my life, why should I be afayed of them that be subiect vnto his judgement? And why then Madame, should I wayle or wepe, for the mine honor and confciencce without remorfe or grudge do wel like of thefe my doings, which if they were newly to begin, I would not repente me to doe the same againe. But it is you (Madame) that hath good caufe to wepe, as well for the great displeasure, euer borne me from my youthfull dayes, as for the wrong you doe me nowe by reprehending me before the face of all the worlde for a faulte, whiche ought rather to be imputed vnto you then vnto me. For if I had offended God, the king, or you, my parentes, or my confciencce, I were well worthy to be counted very obstinate, if with great repentaunce I did not lament the same, but for a dede that is right good and vertuous, I ought not to wepe, whereof there was neuer other rumor spred but verie honorable, except the flaunder which your felfe hath raifed, whereby your desire to increae my shame and dishonor appeareth to be greater then the refpecte you haue to conferue the nobilitie of your house, or kindred wherof you come. But because it pleafeth you, Madame, fo to vfe me, I purpose not to withftand you. For when you shall ordeine that punishment for me, which you like best, I shal rejoyfe no leffe to suffer the same without defert, then you be willing to beftowe it vpon me without caufe. Wherefore Madame, commaunde my Lorde my father to put me to what tormente you will, for the execution wherof you shal not finde him vnwilling. And I shal not be altogether without joy, to see him preft and redie to obey your wilfull mynde. But I haue a father in heauen, who (I am fure) will geue me fuche pacience, as I shal be able to abide and indure, what affliction foeuer you prepare for me, in whom only is all my hope and truft.” The Queene, fo angrie as she could be, commaunded her out of her fight, and to be shutte into a chamber alone, that none might speake vnto her. In which imprifonnement she was not depriued from the companie of her gouernesse, by whole meanes she let the Baftarde vnderstande all her fortune, and she likewise
vnderstode what he thought best for her to doe. Who thinking
that the servise which he had done to the king, would stand
him in some stede, came vnto the Court with all speed, and founde
the king in the fieldes, to whome he rehearsed the truth of the
faete, beseeching his maieflie that vnto him (who was a poore
gentleman) he would shewe such faavour and grace as the rigor
of the Queene's maieflie might be appealed, and the mariage fully
consumat and ended. The king made him none other aunswere,
but faide: "Is it true that thou haft maried her?" "Yea sir,"
faide the Baftarde: "by wordes only as yet: but if it pleafe your
maieflie, the same may be throughly made perfite." The king
nodded his hed, and for that time gewing him none other aun-
swere, hee returned straite to the Caftell, and when he was almoft
there, he called the Captaine of his Guarde, and commaunded him
to apprehend the Baftarde. Notwithstanding one of his frendes
which knewe the kinge's countenaunce, willed him to acit
himselfe, and to retire to one of his houses, and if the king made
ferche after him (as he suspected) he would incontinently aduer-
tifie him thereof, that he might auoyde the realme: and when
the king's displeasure was pacified, he would sende him worde.
The Baftarde beleued him, and vsed such diligence as the Captain
of the Guarde could not finde him. The king and the Queene
counseelled together what they might doe with this poore damfell,
whiche was their kinfwoman, and by the Queene's aduise it
was concluded, that she should be sent home to her father, with
the true aduertisement of the whole matter. But before she
was sent, dierfe Diuines and learned men of the Clergie, were
demaunded their opinions of the priuat mariage, and the Coun-
fell alfo did set vpon the fame, who concluded that for so muche
as the mariage was not celebrated but by wordes, it might
easely be vndone, vntill one of them had acquited the other.
Which the king commaunded to be performed for the honor of
the house whereof she came. But she made them aunswere, that
in all things she was redie to obey the king, except it were in
matter against her conscience, sayinge, that thoshe whome God
had coupled together by heauenly aduise, could not bee separated
by man's decree, praying them not to attempt a thing so vn-
reasonable: for if love and good will founded upon the fear of God, were the true and sure knot of marriage, then she was so well bound and tied, as neither iron, fier, or water could break that band, but death alone. Whereunto, and to none other constitution, she was determined to rendred her ring and othe, praying them not to speake, do, or proceede, to anything that were contrarie vnto that: wherein she was so fledfastly resolved, as she had rather die by keeping her faith, then liue to deny the same. The Commissioners returned to the king and Queene the constant answer of the Gentlewoman, and when they sawe no remedy could be found to make her renounce her husband, they conuayed her home to her father, in such pitifull sorte, as by the way she passed, eche man and woman lamented her fortune. And albeite shee had offended, yet the punishment and affliction she suffred was so great and her constancie so firmly bent, as she made her fault to be esteem'd a vertue. The father receiving those pitifull newes, would not see her, but sent her to his castell that floode in a forest, which he had before time builded for an occasion, worthy to be beheld hereafter, and there keeped her in prifon a long time, sending worde vnto her, that if she would forsake her husband, he would take her for his daughter, and let her at libertie. Who for all that offer was firme and constant, and loued her prifon the better by obseruing the bond of mariage, then al the libertie of the world, without the hauing of her husband. And it seemed by her countenaunce, that al the paynes she had indured were most pleaunt paftimes, for that she suffred the same for his sake, whome she loued best. What should I speake of men? This Baftarde at length became vumindeful of her, and fled into Alemaine, where he had many frendes. Whose inconstancie afterwardes appeared so manifest, as the vertue of true and perfit love outwardly seeming to remain in him, was converted into the vice of odible ingratitude, whereby it was euident, that the causes that made him so hotte a Suter, were the vglie monsters of Auarice and Ambition, where he fill in love with an Almaine Ladie, he forgetting to visitte her with letters, that for his sake had sustaine so great and manifold tribulations. For what rigor or affliction wereuer Fortune offred, could be neuer before that tyme put
awaye the meanes from writing one to an other, but onely the
vices before named, and the foolish and wicked loue wherein he
suffered him selue to fall. Which sudden and newe loue so perced
the hart of Rolandin, and so fiercely assailest the same, as
she could no more content and rest her self. Afterwards vpon the
viewe of his wryttinges and letters, seing him to be so chaunge
and altered from his accustomed stile, what tormentes then she
suffered, they doe knowe that haue felte and tasted the bitter cup of
like passions. And yet her perfecte loue would not suffer her to
fixe certaine judgement vpon this aduertisement, and therefore
deuised secretly to sende one of her seruaunts whose shee trusted
beft, to efpie, and priuely make serche whether the same were
true or not. Whiche her seruauant being retourned, bee true
lytold her, howe the Baftarde Gentleman was in loue with a Ladie
of Almaine, and howe the brute was that he made great fute vnto
her for mariage, because shee was very riche. These newes
brought sutche extreme sorowe and grief to the harte of poore
Rolandin, as being not able to abide the brunte thereof, shee
fell very sickke. Thoʃe whiche vnderstoode the originall of her
disease, sayde vnto her (in the behalfe of her father) that for so
muche as nowe shee knewe the great villainie of the Baftarde, shee
might iustly forfake hym: peruaunding her thereunto with the
greatest reasons they could devise. But for all those perfuasions,
no remedie could be founde to make her chaunge opinion: in
whiche her late tentacion shee declared the great constancie
wherewith she was affected: for like as loue was decreased in him:
so the same augmented in her, which remained and peristed in
despite of all the malice of the worlde. For that loue, whiche
sayled, and was fledde from him, tourned and retired into her. And
when she perceiued her selue alone fully posseʃied with that
whiche before was deuided betwene them bothe, shee determined
to obferue the same vntill death had made an ende of her fatall
dayes. Wherefore the goodnes of God (which is perfect cha-
ritie and true loue) had pitie vpon her forrowe, and regarded her
pacience in such wife, as within few daies after the Baftarde died
in the pursute of the other ladie's Loue. Whoref Rolandin being
dauertisifed by those which saw him buried, prayed them to trauell
with her father by humble fute, that he would vouchsafe to give her leave to speake vnto him. Who at their request, (although he never spake vnto her before, during the tyme of her imprisionment) incontinent was pleased to do. And after that he had herde the diſcours of her iustie reasons, in place of rebukes, and his promife made to kill her (which many times he threatened by wordes) he cleped her betweene his armes, and bitterly weeping, sayde vnto her: "Daughter, I wel perceiue your vertue and conſtant mynde, which farre furmounteth any thing that is good in mee, for if there be any faulte or lacke of consideraſion of your eſtate, I am the principal occaſion thereof: but fith the goodnes of God hath thus ordeined it, I wil make satisfaccion for mine offence past." And afterwaſdes he lent her home to his house, where he vſed and interteigned her like his dereſt and eldeſt daughter. In the ende she was demaunded in mariaghe by a Gentleman of name and armes, to her eſtate and bloud not inferior. Who was bothe wife and vertuous, and fo louingly regarded Rolandine (whome he many times vifited) as he attributed vnto her the prife of praye for that, which others accompted worthy of rebuke, knowing that her intent of former loue was grounded vpon the foundation of vertue. The mariaghe was well liked of her father, was acceptable to Rolandine, and was forthwith concluded. True it is that a brother she had, the only inheritor of her father's landes, who would not agree that she shoulde receive her childe's porcion, obiecting that she had difobeied her father. And after the death of the good old man (her father) her brother vſed her very rigorously and cruelly. For her hufbande was but a yonger brother, and had wherewithal scarce able to live: for which want, God bountifully provided: for the brother whose gre- dike minde did crave in one daie to be poſſeffor of al, by fodain death was deprived, as well of his fitter's porcion as of al the reſt. By whole death she remained the whole inheritor of that honorable house: and afterwaſdes liued an honorable and fately life, in great wealth and pleſure, and was welbeloued and duetifully intreated of her hufban. Finally hauing by her hufban two goodly sonnes, she very vertuously brought them vp, and finifhing her aged dayes, she joyfully rendred her foule vnto him,
in whom of long time she had repose her only trust and confidence. Now good ladies let them come forth that be the common displaiers of women’s inconstancie, and let them bring forth in presence, so good and perfect a husband as this was a good and constant woman, indue with semblable faith and vertue. I am sure to bring this to passe the matter wilbe very difficult: and therefore I had rather discharge them of this my chalenge, then put them to payne to travell and seeke for such a one. Whose vertuous loue and godlye continuance of the same, is worthye to bee founded by Trompe of fame to the extreame partes of the Earth. And yet I would aduise yonge Ladies and gentlewomen to beware how they be inamoured, and pursue the trade of loue, contrarie to the will of parentes, who ought in time of infancie to be their guide, and also in riper yeares to procure them mariage according to their worthines: which they may the better and sooner do, if by vertuous education they arme and instruct their tender and youthly age.
THE SIXTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The Wifedom of a woman to withdrawe the foolish love of her husband, wherewith he was tormented.

Many yeares are not yet expired fithens there was a Gentlewoman of noble house (whose name I may not disclose), so wise and vertuous as shee was wel beloued and esteemed of her neighbours: her husband (not without good cause) trusted her in all his affaires, which she ordered and governed so wisely, as her house by her meanes grew to be one of the richeft and best apparelled, that was in the countrie wherein she dwelled. Living thus a long time with her husband, by whom shee had many goodly children, their happie state and felicitie (after which daily infue their contraries) began to decaie, because that he, defatigated with to much quiet, abandoned restfull life, to seeke after troublesome trauell: and had gotten a custome when his wife was a sleepe to rise from her side, and not to returne vntill it was very nere morning. The gentlewoman misliking this manner of life, became very ielous of her husband, and yet made as though she mistrusted nothing: but that spitefull passion entred her stomache so farre, as in thende shee forgot thaffayres of her house, the diligence of her person, and good governement of her familie, like vnto one that verely supposing that (do what shee could) she had loft the fruite of her paine and labour, which was the great loue of her husband, for continuance whereof shee spared no trauail or toile: but lofinge altogether as shee manifestly perceived, she grew to be so careleffe of her houholde state and honfwiferie, as speedelie appeared the fruite of sloth and negligence: for her husband for his part spent without order, and she stayed her trauell from matters of houshold: in such wife as the same was growen to so great penurie, as the high and stately woodes were felled downe to the stubbe, and the goodly maners deliuered into the handes of sir Mathew Morgan. One of the gentlewoman's frendes and kinfemen which knew her diseafe, tolde her of her fault, and rebuked her for that careleffe life: sayinge, that if loue
of husband could not make her to have respe\ëte of hou\holde profite: zeale and regarde of poore children's state ought to move her thereunto. This good counsell of her fren\de touched her very nere, and the pitie of her children at lengthe made her to recover her spirits, and to affaire by all meanes possible to wynne againe her hufbande's loue. See here the nature of hone\stie, and condicion of well disposed life: this gentlewoman was infected with the plague of Ælou\sie (an ordinarie disea\se in women,) and not without just cause: for what Gris\ilde could suffr her wedde\d hufband, assembled in bedde, in depthe of slepe, to rife and run\ne a straie like a wylde horse, ney\ing after the straied female kinde of that forte? This good Gentlewoman, I faye, almo\st besides her wittes for alienation of her deferred loue, now grown careles of worldly thinges, as you have heard, is upon the louing admonicion of her nere\st fre\nd, pricked with naturall regarde of Infant\es: launch\ing forth that festred fore of Ælou\sie, ferched meanes by policie to wynne that which Ælou\sie could not get, which was her hufbande's loue, whom with curte\ou\f f\ame not before assem\blie of neighbours, or f\raun\gers audience, by huy and crye as many doe, but in domest\call boundes, within the compas of hou\holde, and within the circuit of secret chambre, free made him blu\fhe from former life, and to dete\fle all filthie and beast\ly facet\es in future time. Suche be the frutes of a right matrone's life, Suche be the gains of the milde and quiet wife. Such a wife, I say, is the honor of her husband's name, the onely vpholder and r\sfo\rat\ive of his renowne and fame. But turne we againe to the experi\\enced wifedome of this Gentlewoman. The next day she diligent\ly watched by false slepe, the time of his vpris\f from her: and when he was gone, free ro\e likewise, putting her night gowne about her, caus\ng the bedde to bee made, and say\ng her prayers, she waited the retour\ne of her husband, who being retired into his chambre, she came before him to kisse hym, and brought him a bafen with water to wafhe his handes: and mus\i\ng at the vnac\cus\tmed order of his wife, he tolde her that he was come but from the priuie, and th\refore neded not to wafhe. Whereunto she an\vered, that although it were no great matter, yet cleanly and hone\st, to wafhe the handes, being come
from an unclean place, by which words she was desirous to let him understand his follie thereby to hate his dishonest and filthy life. But for all that wyfe and pretie taunte hee amended nothing at all: Howbeit she continued that ordre the space of one yere. And when she sawe, that her diligence could not reforme his visuell trade of lyfe, on a tyme wayting for her husband, which taried longer then he was wont to doe, she was desirous to fecke hym out, and went from chamber to chamber, till at length she founde hym a bedde in a back chambre and a sleepe with the move ill fauoured, foule and filthyest slutte of her house, such a homely pece and dutry beaste, as the lyke was not to be founde in a countrie. The gentlewoman beholding this manerly fight, thought to teache him a leffon howe to remembre the difference betwene the sweete and pleasaunt lodging, with a fayre and dutifull wife, and the uncleanly couching with a flinking and lothsome Queane. Wherupon she caufed a burden of Strawe and worene rufhes to be brought vnto her, setting the same on fier in the middes of the chamber, but when she sawe her husband almooste choked with the great smother, she waked hym, and plucked him out of the bed by the armes, crying: “fier, fier.” If the husbande were ahamed, and offended with him selfe to be founde in a bedde with such an uncleanly matche, by his faire and honest wife, I refere the judgement to all indifferent men, that be coupled with like wyues. Then his wyfe faid vnto hym: “Sir I haue affaied the space of one whole yeare, to withdrawe you from this vile and wicked life, by gentlenes and pacience, and shewed example by washing you without, that you might also enche your selue within. But when I fawe myne endenour could take no place, I attempted to helpe my selue with the element that shall ende and consume vs all: affuring you, sire, that if this do not amende you, I cannot tell if the seconde time, I be able likenwyse to ridde you from the daunger that may happen. I praye you sire to thinke and consider that there is no greater difpayre or difpite, then that which is conceived of loue: and had I not set before mine eyes the feare of God, I could not haue practyfed suche pacie, as I haue done.” The husband very glad, that he had escaped that misfortune, promies her neuer to gene occasion,
that she should take like payne to bring him to order. Whiche promife the Gentlewoman very willingly beleued, and with her husbane's consent, she expelle out of her house, that which did displeafe her moste: and from that time forth, they louingly liued together, and the former faultes of this reformed life, was an increafe of joyful and mutuall delightes. I befeche you Gentl
women (if there be any in the place where this nouell is redde) if God doe geue you such husbandes to beware of dispaire, vntill ye haue affayed all possible meanes to reduce them to good ordre. For there be in the daye xxiii. houres, in euery of whiche houres a man may chaunge opinion: and a woman ought to accompt her selfe moste happie, if by pacience and long suffraunce she wynne her husbande, excepte fortune and frendes haue procured one that is alreadie perfecte. This example therefore maye serue all sortes of married women. Let her take example that lift (quod Dame Partelot) for it is impossible for me to vse suche long pacience. But let Dame Partelot speake her pleafure,
I would aduife all husbandes to lyue honestly with their honest wiues, and doe praye to God to plant mo such wiues to store the barren worlde that neuer or seldom bryngeth forth such increafe.
THE SIXTY-FOURTH NOUVELL.

The notable charitie of a woman of Tours towards her husbande.

Another hyftorie of like example I thinke mette to bee annexed: which telleth howe in the Cittie of Tours in Fraunce, there was a fayre and honest wyfe which for her vertues was not onelye beloued, but also feared and esteemed of her husband. So it was that he followinge the fragilitie of those men, which be wearie of delicate fare, fill in loue with a woman of the Countrye that kepte his house there, and many times departed from Tours to viſite his countrie woman, where he commonlye taried ii. or iii. dayes before his retorne: and when he came home againe to Tours, he ordinarily did take cold, whereof his good wife had much to do to recouer him. And asone as he was hole, hee failed not to returne to the place, where pleasure made him forget all his former greife and ficknes. His wife which aboue all thinges loued his life and tendred his health, feinge him commonly broughte into fo poore estate, went into the Countrye, where she founde out the yong woman that her husband loued. Unto whom (not in choler but with smillinge cheere and countenaunce) shee sayd: "How she knew well that oftentimes her husband repaired thither to viſite her, and that she was not well content that she vfed him no more carefully, for when he came home from her he toke so great cold as long time after she had much a doe to recouer him."

The poore woman as wel for the reverence of the Dame, as for the trouth of the matter, could not denye the fache, and therefore fallinge downe vppon her knees, asked her forgienes. The maistrefte required to see the bedde and chamber, where her husband laie, which she perceived to be so cold, ill favourred, and out of order, as she pitied and lamented the cause: wherefore incontinently she sent for a good bedde furnished with sheetes, blankets and Couerlet, accordingly as she knew her husbrand loued, causig the chamber to be repaired, hanged, and dressid vp, after the best maner: she gaue her also plate and vessell to serue her husband at meales, together with a punchion of wyne, spice, and other
confections: and then prayed the woman to send home her husband, no more so sick, but to intreate and cherish him after the most delicate and careful maner she could. The husband taried not long at home, but after his olde custome went againe into the countre to visit his woman, and maruied much to finde her poore lodging so trimlye garnished, but much more he wondred when calling for drinke he fawe her to bringe him a siluer potte, asking her where she had gotten all those goodes. The poore woman sayde vnto him weeping, that it was his wife, which hauing so great pitie vppon his ill intreatie, had furnisshed her house, and had committed vnto her the charge and regard of his health. Hee seing the greate humilitie and goodnes of his wyfe, and that she for the vnkindnes he shewed vnto her, had requited him with that curtezie and louing kindnes, well pondering and regarding his owne frailtie, and the honeste demeanor of his wyfe, afterwards rewarded the poore woman with money, and peruwaded her from that time fowrth to liue an honest life. And then returned home to his wyfe, confessing vnto her the negligence of his dutie, and that excepte she had vsed that kinde of curtezie and goodnes towards him, it had bin impossible for him to forfake and giue ouer his vngodlye life: and afterwardes utterly abandoning his behauior past, they liued together in great rest and quietnes. Believe me if ye lift (to you good wiues I speake) that there be verye few ill hubbands, whom the pacience and loue of the wyfe, is able at lengthe to winne, or els they be more harde then stones, which the soft and feble water by continuance of time, is able to weare and make holow: for when the wiu'es lenitie shall enter his careless stomacke, and her pacient suffraunce renew remembraunce of dutie, then doth conscience bite, and gnaw the cancred cord that tyeth vp the good consideracion of his office, and regarde to maried life: then doth age abhorre the lewdnes of former life, and commeth home to cherishe the holome Nourice of his pleasant state. Then regardeth he the bande wherewith matrimonie hath bound him, and both at bedde and borde obserueth the ful perfecctions of the fame.
THE SIXTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The simplicitie of an olde woman, that offered a burning candle to S. John of Lions.

In the Church of S. John at Lions, there was a very darke Chappell, and within the same a Tombe made of stone, erected for great personages, with pictures liuely wroughte, and about the same Tombe there doe lie manye worthie knightes of great fame and valiaunce. Upon a hote Sommer's daye, a fouldiour walking vp and downe the Church had great delight to sleepe, and beholding that darke chappell which was colde and fresh of ayre, thoughte to refte vpon the Tombe as other did, besides whom he layde him downe to sleepe. It chaunced that a good old woman very deuoute, came thither when the fouldior was in the depth of his sleepe. And after shee had fayd her devocions, wyth a wax candle in her hande, she would haue fastened the same vpon the Tombe, and repayring nere the place where the fouldior lay, desirous to ficke it vpon his forehead, thinking it had been the stone, the waxe would take no hold. The old woman, which thought the cause that her candle would not cleaue was the coldnesse of the Image, she warmed the fouldior's forehead with the flame of the candle, to ficke it fafte. But the Image which was not insenfible, beganne to cry oute, whereat the poore woman was so afraide, as like one sraught of her wittes, she brake into exclamacion crying: "A miracle! A miracle!" They within the Church hearing an outcry of a miracle, ranne in heapes as though they had been madde, some to ring the belles, and some to fee the miracle: whom the good woman broughte to fee the Image, which then was remoued: whereat many began to laughe. But diuers priestes not willing so to give ouer so great a Miracle, deter-
To conclude our number of Nouels, I have thought good (gentle reader) to bring in place a Doctor and his wyfe, to gue thee a merye farewell: because thou hast hitherto so frendly and pacientlye suffred thy selfe to be stayed in reading of the refe: wherefore with a pleafaunt Adieu in a short and merie tale, which discloseth the subtiltie of two falfé knaues to beguile a poore Doctor and his wyfe, I meane to end. And therfore do faye, that in the Citie of Bologna in Italie, there was a worshipful Doctor of the Lawes, called Maister Florien, which in other thinges fauing his profeSSION was but a flouen, and of fo ill behauiour as none of his facultie the like: who by fauing of many cruues, had layed vp so good flore of Crownes, as he caufed to be made a very great and costly Cup of filuer, for payment of which Cup he went to the Goldsmite's house, and havinge payed for the filuer, the guilt, and for the fashion, being without his Clarke to carie it home, he prayed the Goldsmith to lend him his man. By chaunce there were newly come to the Citie, two yonge men that were Romaynes, which ranged vp and downe the streates with eares vpright, to view and marke every thinge done in the fame, bearing about them counterfeit Jewels and lingots, guilt of S. Martine's touche, to deceiue him that would playe the foole to buy them. One of them was called Liello and the other Dietiquo. These two Marchantes being at good leasure to wander the streates, beholding the paflangers to and fro, by fortune espied the Goldsmite's man, who (to set forth the workemanship and making of the cup) caried the fame open. These gallants bearing a spite to the cup, more for the filuer than for other malice, purpofed to inuent some fleight to get the Cuppe, and a farre of with flic pafe, followed the Goldsmite's man, of whom they craftelie inquired of the owner of the Cup, and where hee had left maifter Florien. When they had concluded vpon their enterprife, Liello (the finest boye of
them both) went straight to buy a Lamprey of great price, and
hiding the same vnder his cloake, repayred directly to Maifter
Doctour's houfe, where finding his wife of semblable wit and
behaviour that her husband was, with vnshamefaft face and like
grace, said vnto her: "Maiſtreſſe, Maiſter Florien your husbande
bath sent you a fishe, and prayeth you to drefſe it and to make
dinner readie, because he bringeth a company of other Doctours
with him: in the meane time he requireth you, to retorne vnto
him the Cuppe againe, whiche hee sent you this morning by the
Goldſmithe's man, because he had forgotten to flame his armes
vppon it." The woman receuyinge the fishe, franckly deliuered
him the Cup, and went about to prepare dinner. Liello (which
hunted after gaine but better caught his prey) hied him a pace
and conueyed himſelfe with speede to the houſe of one of his
Countriemen, and there reioyced with his companion, attending
for the comming of the Royſter Dietiquo, who taried in the Towne,
wayting and viewing what pursuite was made after his fellowe.
Sone after maiſter Florien retourned to his houſe and finding his
dinner more delicate than it was wont to be, maruyled, and askt
his wyſe who was at all that coſte. His wyſe very fcorneſfully
anſwered: "Why ſir, haue you forgotten that you ſente me word
this morning that you woulde bringe home with you durers Gen-
tlemen to dinner?" "What" (ſoſthe Doctour) "I thinke you be a foole." "I am not" (ſayd hee) "and for better witneſſe
you ſent mee this fishe, that I would you had been better aduſed
before you had befowed ſuch coſte." "I affure thee:" quoth hee,
"I ſent thee no fishe, but belike it was fome foleſſe knaue that
had forgotten his arrant and misſaken the houſe: but howſoeuer
it was wyſe, we at this time will be content to fare well, at other
mennes charge." "Why ſir (ſayd his wyſe) call your ſelfe to
tbetter remembraunce, for hee that brought the Lamprey, came to me
for your Cup, by this token that you would haue your armes en-
grauen vppon the same." At thofe words the poore Doctour, after
he had discharged three or foure Canons laden with haile ſhot of
scolding words wente out into the streate, running hither and
thither demaunding of al them he met, if they saw none carrie
a Lamprey home to his houſe. And you would haue ſaid if you
had seen the Doctor wyth his hode hanging at one side, that he had been out of his wittes. Dietiquo flode still in a corner, and beheld the Doctor's frantike order, and albeit that he was sure the stealinge of the Cuppe by Liello his companion was impossible to be known, yet being forye that the Lampre cost so much, determined also to play his part, and feinge the doctour flayed from making further complaintes and purfute, he went home to the Doctour's house, where smyling with a good grace and bold countenaunce faide vnto his wyfe: "Maistrefse Doctour, good newes, the Cup is founde, one whom you know caufed the fame to be done in sport to bring your hufband Maifter Florien in a choler, who now is amonges diuers of his frendes iefting at the pleauant deceit, and hath fent me hither to fetch their dinner, wherein they praye you to remember the Lamprey, and to come your felfe to take part of the fame, bicaufe they purpose to be mery." The woman joyful of thofe newes, began fome what to complaine of the griefe which she had taken for losse of the cup, and deliuered to Dietiquo the rofted Lamprey with the faufe, betwene two platters who incontinently hid the fame vnder his cloke, and wyth fo much speede as he could, went to feeke out his companion Lielo, and their countrimen, which all that while had taried for him: and God knoweth whether thofe good fellowes did laugh and mocke the poore Doctour, and his wife or not, and when she had made herfelf gay and trimme to go eate part of the Lamprey, as she was going out she Maifter Florien lookinge lowringlie vppon the matter, to whom she faid (smiling like a frumenty pot) "How now, fir, come they hither to dinner? I haue fent you that Lamprey ready drefled." Then Maifter Doctour after faire talke, beganne to difcharge his double Cannons, callinge his wyfe Whore, bitch, and beastie, and vnderftandinge that he was twice begiled and could not tell by whom, for spite and defpayre he tare of his beard, and the heare of his head, which bruted and known in the Citie, the Iesters and pleauant felowe bent themselues to laugh, and deuife pastime at the poore begiled Doctour and his wyfe.

FINIS.
The second Tome
of the Palace of Pleasure,
conteyning {some of} godly Histories,
Tragicall matters, and other Mo-
rall argument, very re-
guiste for delighte
and profit.

Chosen and selected out of
divers good and commen-
dable Authors:

By William Painter, Clerke of the
Ordinance and Artizanie.
ANNO 1567.

Imprinted at London, in
Pater Nofter Rowe, by Henry
Byneman, for Nicholas
England.
To the Right Worshipful Sir George Howard Knight,
Majster of the Queene’s Maiesties Armarye.

EVERY science having his peculiar commodity, and conducing to the travauler and diligent searcher, a due deferued benefyte (besides the exercise and shunninge the pestilent monster Idlenes) discloseth the miraculous effect of the Divinity, and the excellency of his Creature: who breathing life into that senselesse worke, framed within the mould of humayn Conception, forceth in him by nature and timely institution such capacitye of Science, as not onelye by that knowledge hee glorifyeth his Creator, but also besides himselfe, helpeth and doth good to other. For profe whereof the Science of that surpafling and delightsome pasture of Theologie, is profitable to teache, argue, reproue, and instruct, that by pacience and consolation, we may conceive hope of Eternitye. The knowledge of Philofophie cureth the Mynde, auoydeth childish care, expelleth feare, and shunneth fond deyes. O Philofophye, the guide of life, (exclameth Tullie) the inquisitor of Vertue and expeller of vice. Rethorike (affirmeth he) causeth vs to learne that we know not and that we know to teach to other: by the same we exhort, with that we perswade, with that we comfort the afflicted, by it we encourage the affonned, and appease the outrageous. Musike, easeth the troubled mynde, lenifyeth forrowe, comforteth the heavye harted, and erecteth a contemplayton of heauenlye thinges. Astronomye, revealeth the nature of the Starres and Planets, prefageth dayes and times for the helpe and mainenaunce of life. Poesie teacheth amendment of manners, directeth what things be mete for imitation, and with what detriment wantonnes anoyeth the bodye of man. By meanes of it (Sainct Augustine faith,) he learned many good lessons
to profite himselfe and do good to other. To be short every science is so necessary, as the same taken away, reason is deprived and the Life of Man (of due order and government) defrauded. Think (fayth a Greke Oratour) the knowledge of many things to bee more precious and excellent, then a Cheffe heaped vp with abundance of money: for the one quickly fayleth, and the other for euer laffeth. For Scientia (affirmeth hee) is the onelye immortal storehouse of all possessions. Amonges which troupe of Sciences, the knowledge and search of Histories deserueth a place in the cheoeff rank, and is for example of humaine affayres, a Christal light to fhow the pathes of our Auncetors. The same (like a Mistreffe of our life) by probable examples stirreth vp our sluggifh mindes, to afpyre the eternal glorie of praife and fame, and terrifyeth the desperate and aduenturous, from enterprife of things vnseemely. The same is a paffing picture of verity, and an absolute paterne framinge the matter greater nor leffe then it is. And because I am not ignorant what Encomia innumerable Authors in time past, and wryters of our tyme do attribute vnto that science, and with what titles the Prince of them all decketh the praife of Historicall knowledge, I only refer the worthines to the practizers, and the syngularitye of Histories trauel and delight, to ech willing minde that impoye their leaffe and tyme therin. And I for my parte do confeffe (that by reading of Histories) I fynd the faying which Tullie aduoucheth of Publius Scipio to bee true: that he was neuer leffe idle, then when he was idle, and neuer leffe alone, then when he was alone, meaning therby, that when he was at beft leisuer, he was neuer idle, nor when he was alone vnoccupied. For when labor refeth him felfe in me, and leisuer refresheth other affaires nothing delights more that vacant tyme, than readinge of Histories in such vulgar speache, wherein my small knowledge taketh repaft. And for that my priuat reading might not deythe and
pleasure me alone, to avoid the nature of that cankred churle
and foe of humain companye, Timon of Athens, that liued but
for him selfe, I haue (after my skil) culled some floures and
fruites from that pleasaunt store of those my readinges to impart
for vniverfal gayne and benefite, chofynge rather hereby to fol-
lowe the liberalitye of Cimon a gentleman of that Cityye, who
knowynge hymselfe to bee borne to profite other and for the en-
riching of his Coutry, not only atchiued marualious matters for
furtherance of Comon wealth, but lefte his Gardens and Orchards
open for all men to participate the Fruites of his pleasaunt
and trauell, Wherby so wel as I can I follow the traict and practice
of other, by whose meanes, fo manifold sciences in our known
toung and translation of Histories be frequent and rife amonge
vs. Al which be done after our commodity, pleasure, solace,
preferuation and comfort, and without the which we cannot long
be sustayned in this miserable lyfe, but shal become not much
vnlyke the barbarous, ne discrepant from the sauage forte. The
inuestigatours and bringers to light, wherof direct their eyes and
meaning to none other end but for the benefyte of vs and our
pofteritye, and that our faces be not taynted with the blushing
coloure to fe the paffing diligence of other Countryes by curious
imbelishinge of their states with the troublous trauaile of their
brayne, and labourfom course of penne. Who altogeather imploi
thole paynes, that no Science lurke in Corner, that no Knowledge
be shut vp in cloysters, that no History remaine vnder the maske
and vnknowne attyre of other tongues. Among which crew (I
say) I craue an inferiour place and haue vndertaken the vnfold-
ing of sundry Histories from the couerture of foren language for
none other purpose and intent but to vnuerfal benefyte. Part
whereof, two yeares paft (almoxt) were made commune in a
former boke, now succedeth a second, furnished withlike orna-
ments that the other was. The first (by duties chalenge) was
addressed to the right honorable the Earle of Warwick, for respect
of his honour, and my calling. This the second by lyke band,
your worship may iuftyly clayme as a iuft tribute now this moneth
of Nouember, payable. Or if your curtefye would not deale fo
roughly with youre bounden creditoure, yet for duty fake I muft acquite and content that which hath fo long ben due. The fame I offer now not with such v fury and gayne as your beneuolence and syngular bounty, by long forbearing hath deferued, but with such affected will and defyre of recompence, as any man alyue can owe to fo rare a friend. Your worship I haue chosen for the firste perfon of this boke, and the protector of the fame (the matter moft specially therin comprifed, treating of courtly fashions and maners, and of the customes of loue's gallantife, and the good or yll succeffe thereof,) because you be an auncient Courtier, and one of the eldeft Trayne, and such as hath bene imployed by sundry our Princes, in their affayres of greatest wayght and importance, and for that your felfe in your luftieft tyme (euer bred and brought vp in Court,) haue not ben vnacquainted with those occurrants. If I shoulde stand particularlye to touch the originall of your noble Aunceftry, the fucceffion of that renowmed line, their fidelity for graue aduife and counsel, your honowrable education, the mariage of a mighty kyng with one of your fifters, the valiant exploites of your parents againfte the Frenche and Scottes, the worthye fervice of your felfe in fiele, wherby you deferuedly wanne the order of Knighthode, the truft which her Maietie repofeth in you, by difpofing vnder your charge the store of her Armure, and your worthy preferment to be Maifter of her Armary generall. If I should make recitall of your careful induftry and painful trauel fuftayned, for aunfwearing her Maietye's expectation, your noble cherfishing of the skilful in that science, your good aduancemente of the beft to supply the vacant romes, your refuall of the vnworthy: and finally of your modeft and curteous dealings in that office, I feare lacke of ability (and not of matter) would want grace and order by further circumtance to adde sufficent prayfe: yea although my felfe do fay no thinge, (but referue the fame in silence to auoyd fuppofe of adulation) the very armure and their furnitures do speake, vnuerfal testimony doth wonder, and the Readines of the fame for tyme of fervice doth aduouch. Which care of things continually resting in your breast, hath atchyuied such a tymely
diligence, and succeed, as when her Majesty's adversary shall be ready to molest, she shall be prest (by God's assistance) to defend and march. But not to hold your worship long by length of preamble, or to discourse what I might further say, either in favour of this boke, or commendation of your selfe, I mean (for this instant) to leave the one to general judgment, and the other to the particular sentence of each of your acquaintance. Humblye making this onlye fute that my good wil may supplye the imperfection of myne abilitye. And so with my harty prayer for your prefervation to him that is the author of life and health, I take my leave.

From my pore house besides the Tower of London,
the iiiij. of November,
1567.

Your most bounden

William Painter.
TO THE READER.

As shewed curtifie deferueth grateful acquital and frenfully favor forceth mutual merit. So for gentle acceptation of my other boke, I render to thy delite and profit a second Tome, for which I craue but like report: albeit, neither worthy of any: or other then the rude artificer gayneth by triall of his art. Who having committed to his skil and workmanship, some substance of gold, or other precious matter, fashioneth the same with such bungled shape and order, as (beydes displeasfe) it carieth the vnablenes of the workman. Howsoever (then) the ablenes or perfection herof vniuerfally a Actor content or particularly displeasfe: the boke craueth mild construction, for imploied paines. And yet the same (liking or lothing the licorous diet, and curious expectation of som) shal beare regarde with those that more delite in holysm viandes (voyd of variety) than in the confused mixture of forren drugges fetched farr of. Who no doubt will supply with favorable brute, default of ablenes and riper skil in the Histories of forren spech. Which is the guerdon (besides publike benefyte) after which I gaze, and the best stipend that ech wel willinge mind (as I suppofe) afpireth for their trauel, and briefly to touch what comodity thou shalt reape of these succeding Histories, I deme it not vnapt for thine instrucfion, to vnfold what pith and substance, resieth vnder the context of their discourse.

In the Nouel of the AMAZONES, is displayed a strange or miraculous port, (to our present skil) of womens govement, what state they subdued, what increase of Kingdome, what combats and conflicts they durft attempt contrary to the nature of that sexe.

In ALEXANDER the greate, what ought to bee the gratitude and curtifie in a puiffant Prince, toward his slave and captiue, and to what perilous plunge he slippeth by exchange of vice for vertue.
In TIMOCLIA and THEOXENA the stoutness of two noble Dames to auoyde the beastly luft and raging fury of Tyrantes.

ARIOBARZANES telleth the duty of a subie\textsuperscript{st} to his Prince: and how he ought not to contende with his fouerayn in matters of curtefy, at length alfo the condition of courting flatterers: and the poison of the monster Enuy.

ARISTOTIMVS disgarboyleth the intralles of Tiranny, describing the end whereunto Tirants do attein and how that vice plagueth their posterity.

The two Romayne QUEENS do point (as it wer) with their fyngers, the natures of Ambition and cruelty, and the gredy luft (hidden in that feeble fexe) of fouerainty.

SOPHONISBA reporteth the force of beauty, and what poi-son distilleth from that licourous fappe to inuenim the hartes of valiant gentlemen.

The gentlewomen of HYDRVSA the sicles of Fortune.

The Empreff\textsuperscript{e} FAUSTINA, and the counteffe of CELANT, what blossoms blome of whorifh life, and what frui\textsuperscript{c}tes therof be culled.

The letters of the Emperour TRAIANE, do paynt a right shape of vertue, a good state of gouernment, and the comly form of obedience.

Three Amorous Dames reveale the sleights of loue the redines of Nobles to be baited with the amorous hoke, and what desife such infamous strumpets haue to be honored.

Queene ZENOBIA, what the noble Gentlewomen (whom the fates ordayne to rule) ought to do, how farre their magnanimity ought to fretch, and in what boundes to conteine their fouerainty.

EVPHIMIA a king’s daughter of Corinth, and the vnfortunate Duchess of Malfi, what match of mariage Ladies of renowne, and Dames of Princely housees ought to chowe.

Mistrefse DIANORA, MITHRIDANES and NATHAN, KATHERINE of Bologna, and SALADINE, the mutual curtefies of noble and gentle Personages, and for what respec\textsuperscript{es}.

Quene ANNE of Hungarie, the good nature and liberalitie of a Quene; and with what industry Gentlewomen of priuy chamber
ought to preferre the futes of the valiant, and of such as haue wel serued the common welth.

ALEXANDRE de Medices, Duke of Florence, the iustice of a Prince, and gouernour to the wronged party, what vertues ought to fhine in Courtiers, and with what temperance their infolence is to be repressed.

IVLIETTA and RHOMEO difclofe the harty affections of two incomparable louers, what secret sleights of loue, what danger either fort incurre which mary without the aduife of Parentes.

Two Gentlewomen of VENICE, the wifedom and pollicy of Wiues to chaftice and restrain the follies of hubbands, and the stoutnes they ought to vse in their defenfe.

The Lord of VIRLE, and the widow ZILIA, geue lefsons to Louers, to auoyde the immoderate panges of loue, they prognosti- cate the indiscretion of promifed penance, they warne to beware al vnseemly heftes, left the penaltyes of couetife and vayn glory be incurred.

The Lady of BOEME, schooleth two noble Barons that with great boaft affured themselues to impair her honor.

DOM DIEGO and GINEVRA, record the cruelty of women bent to hate and the voluntarye vow performed by a passionate Knight, with the parfeA friendfliip of a true frend in redreffe of a frend’s mishap.

SALIMBENE and ANGELICA, the kindnes of a gentleman in deliuerie of his eneny, and the constant mynd of a chaft and and vertuous mayden.

Miftrefle HELENA of Florence discouereth what lothfom luftes do lurk vnder the bark of fading beauty, what ftench of filthy affection sumeth from the smoldring gulfe of dishonest Loue what prankes such dames do play for deceit of other, and Shame of themselfes.

CAMIOLA reproueth the mobility of youth such chiefly as for noble aunceftry regarded riches more than vertue, she lyke a mistrefse of constancye leffoneth her equalles from wauring myndes, and not to aduenture vpon vnstedie contraets: with thos that care not (vnder what pretence) they com by riches.

The lords of NOCERA fortel the hazardes of whordom, the
rage of Ieloufy, the difference of duty betwene Prince and subie\textsuperscript{6}, the frui\textsuperscript{6}tes of a Rebell, the endes of Tra\textsuperscript{6}tery and Tiranny, and what monstruous succession such vices do attain.

The king of MAROCCO describeth the good nature of the homely and loial subie\textsuperscript{6}, the maruaylous lone of a true and symple Countryman towardhe his liege and soueraygne Lorde, and the bounty of a curteous Prince, vpon those that vnder rude attyre, be garni\textsuperscript{6}ft with the floures of vertue.

To be short, the contentes of these Nouels from degre of highe\textsuperscript{6}t Emperour, from state of great\textsuperscript{6}t Quene and Lady, to the homelye Cuntry peafant and rude\textsuperscript{6}t vilage gire, may conduce profite for instruction, and pleasure for delight. They offer rules for avoicing of vice and imitation of vertue to al estates. This boke is a very Court and Palace for al forces to fixe their eies therein, to vew the deuoyres of the Noble\textsuperscript{6}, the vertues of the gentl\textsuperscript{6}, and the dutyes of the meanest. Yt is a stage and Theatre for shew of true Nobilitye, for profe of passing loialty and for tryal of their contraries. Wherfore as in this I haue continued what er\textsuperscript{6}t I partelye promifed in the first

so vpon intelligence of the second signe of thy good wil, a third (by Gods assistance) shal come forth.

Farewell.
Authorities from whence these Nouelles be collected: and in the same auouched.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Strabo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plinie.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quintus Curtius.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plutarche.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Titus Liuius.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dionysius Halicarnassæus.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appianus Alexandrinus.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ouide.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horace.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propertius.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cicero.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Valerius Max.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trebelius Pollio.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xenophon.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homere.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Virgilius.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baptista Campofulgofus.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bandello.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bocaccio.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gyraldi Cynthio.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Belleforrest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bouftuau.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petro di Seuiglia.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antonio di Gueuarra.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FIRST NOUELL.

The hardineffe and conquests of divers stout, and aduenturous women, called Amazones, the beginninge, and continuance of their Reigne, and of the great journey of one of their Queenes called Thalestris to visit Alexander the great: with the cause of her travaile.

WHERE the firste booke beegan with a Combate fought, and tried betweene two mighty Citties, for Principality, and Gouernement, the one hight Rome after called the head of the World (as some thinke by reason of a man's head found in the place where the Capitole did stand) the other Alba. To which Combat fixe Gentlemen of eyther city were appoynted, and the victory chaunced to the Romayne side: In this second parte, in the Forefront, and firste Nouell of the same, is described the beginninge, continuance and ende of a Woman's Common wealth (an History rare and straunge to the vnlearned, ignorant of the world's fickle ruled sty: which contented with the mighty Princes and puissant Potentates for defence of their kingdome, no lesse than the Carthaginians and Romaynes did for theirs. But as it is no wonder to the skilful that a whole Monarche, and kingdome shoulde be intierly peopled with that Sexe: so to the not well trained in Histories, this may seeme miraculous. Wherefore not to styaye thee from the discourse of those straunge and Aduenturous women, divers be of divers opinions for the Etimologie of the word: whereof amonges the Graetians be divers judgementes. These Amazones were most excellent warriers, very valiaunt, and without man's aduice did conquer mighty Coun-
treyes, famous Cities, and notable Kingdomes, continuinge of longe time in one Seigniory, and gouernment. These people occupied and enjoyed a great part of Asia. Som writers devise them into two Provinces, one in Scythia in the North part of Asia: other by the hill Imans, which at this day is called the Tartarian Scythia, different from that which is in Europa: the other sort of the Amazones were in Libia a province of Africa. But because the common sort of Authors doe understand the Amazones to be those of Asia, I meane to leaue of the difference. The Scythians were a warlike people, and at the beginninge of their kingdom had two kinges, by whom they were gouerned. Notwithstandinge the nature of dominion beinge of it selfe ambiesious, cannot abide any companion or equall: which caufed these two kinges to be at variaunce, and afterwards the matter grew to ciuill warres, wherein the one beinge Victor, two of the principal and chiefe of the contrary faction, called Plinius and Scolopithos, were banished with a great number of their adherentes, al which did withdraw themselves to the limits of Cappadocia in the leffer Asia, and in despite of the Countrey Peantes, dwelled alonges the riuer of Thermodon, which entreteth into the Sea Euxinum, otherwise called Pontus. And they beinge made Lordes of the countrey, and of the places adjoininge, rayned for certayne yeares, vntill the Peantes and their confederates made a conspiracy agaynft them: and assemblinge by Pollicy, ouercame and fleewe them all. The newes of their death knowne to their Wyues dwellinge in their countrey, caufed them to conceive great heauineffe, and dolor extreme: and although they were women, yet did they put on manly courage, and determined to reuenge the death of their husbandes, by puttinge their hands to weapons wherewithal they did exercife themselues very oft: and that they might all be equall, and their sorrow common, they murrished certaine of their husbandes which remayned there, after the other were banished. Afterward beinge altogether, they made a great army, and forsooke their dwellinge places, refusinge the mariage of many futers: and arriuinge in the lande of their enemies (that made small accoumpt thereof, although foretolde of their approche) they fodaynly came vpon them vnprovided, and put them all to the sword. This beinge done, the
women tooke the gouernment of the Countrey, inhabitinge at the
beginninge alonge the Riuers of Thermodon, where their husbandes
were flayne. And although many Authors do differ in the situa-
tion of the place where the Amazones did dwell, yet the truth is,
that the beginning of their kingdome and of their Habitation was
uppon that Riuers. But of their manyfolde conquestes, be engen-
dred divers opinions declared by Strabo, and others. They fortifi-
ced themselfes in those places, and wan other countreys adioyn-
inge, choosinge amonge them two Queenes, the one named Mar-
tefia, and the other Lampedo. These two louingly deuided the
army and men of Warre in two partes, eyther of them defendinge
(with great hardineffe) the Landes which they had conquered: and
to make themselfes more dreadfull (futch was the credite and va-
nity of men that time) they fayned to be the daughters of Mars.
Afterward these miraculous women liuing after this maner in peace
and iustice, considered that by succesion of time, for want of
daughters that might succede, warres, and time, would extinguish
their race. For thys caufe they treated maryage with their neighbors named Gargarians (as Plinie sayeth) with condition, that
upon certayne tymes of the yeare, their husbandes should affembe
together in some appointed place, and vfe them for certaine
dayes vntyll they were with chylde, whych beinge done and
known, they shoule returne home agayne to their own houfes.
If they brought forth daughters, they nourished and trayned them
vp in armes, and other manlik exercices, and to ride great Horfe:
they taught them to run at Base, and to followe the Chace. If they
were deliuered of males, they fent them to their fathers, and if by
chaunce they kept any backe, they murthered them, or else brake
their armes and legs in futch wife as they had no power to beare
weapons, and servd for nothyng else but to spyn, twiſt, and to
do other feminine labour. And for as mutch as theſe Amazones
defended themſelues fo valiantly in the Warres with Bowe, and
Arrowes, and perceyued that their breasfes did very much impech
the vſe of that weapon, and other exercifes of armes, they feared
vp the right breasfes of their yonge daughters, for which caufe
they were named Amazones, which signifieth in the Greke
tongue, wythout breasfs, although some other do geue vnſto that

VOL. II.
name any other meaninge. Afterwards, increasing by course of
time in number and force, they made greate preparation of Wea-
pons and other Engins for the Warres, and leaving their countrey
(which they thought was very small) in the kepinge of some,
whom they specially trusted, the rest marched abroade, conquer-
inge and subduinge all those which they found rebellious. And
hauing paffed the river of Tanais, they entred Europa, where
they vanquished many countreys, directinge their way towards
Thracia, from whence they returned a while after, with great
spoyle and victory, and comminge agayne into Asia, they brought
many provinces vnder their subieftion, proceedinge even to
Mare Caßpium. They Edified, and peopled an infinite number of
good citie}s, amongs which, according to the opinion of diuers,
was the famous Citty of Ephesus, the same beeinge the chiefe
of al their Empire, and the principal place that floode vpon Ther-
modon. They defended themselues in Warres with certaine Ter-
gats, made in fafliion of a halfe Moone, and entring into bat-
taile vfed a certaine kinde of Flutes to geue the people corage to
fight, as the Lacedemonians were wont to do. In this wise in-
creased more and more the fame of those women, and so continued
vntill the tyme that Hercules, Thefeus, and many other valiaunt
men liued in Græcia. The sayd Hercules, kinge Euriffeus of
Athenes commaunded, to procede with great force of people
against the Amazones, and that hee shoulde bringe vnto him the
armures of the two Queenes, which then were two fifters, that is
to say Antiopa and Oritia. At this commaundement Hercules
incoraged with defire of honor and glory, accompanied with The-
feus, and other his frends, sayled alongft Pontus, and arriued in
most conuenient place vpon the shoare of Thermodon, where he
landed in futch secret manner and with futch oportunity of tyme,
as Oritia, one of the two Queenes was gone out of the countrey
with the greatest part of her women, to make Warre, and con-
querr new Countreyes, in fo much that he found Antiopa,
which doubted nothinge, ne yet knewe of his comminge. Vppon
which occasi{on, Hercules and his people surprifinge the Amazones
vnwares, and although they entred into Fielde and did put them-
selfes in defence with futch diligence as they could, yet they
were overcomne, and put theym to flight, and many of them slayne
and the rest taken: amongst whom were the two siffers of the
Queene, the one named Menalipe whych was Hercules prysoner,
and the other Hipolita, the prysoner of Thefeus. Certayne Histori-
ans do say that they were subdued in a pitched field, and appoynted
battle. And that afterwards the two siffers were vanquished in singu-
ler Combat. The Queene Antiope then seeinge this ouerthrow, and
the takinge of her siffers, came to composition with Hercules, to
whom shee gaue her armure to cary to Eurifteus, vpon charge that
he shoulde render vnto her, her siffer Menalipe. But Thefeus for
no offer that shee could make, woulde deliuer Hipolita, with whom
he was fo farre in loue, that he caried her home with him, and
afterward toke her to wyfe, of whom hee had a sonne called Hi-
politus. Hercules satysfied of his purpose, returned very joyful
of his victory. Oritia certifid of these news, beinge then out of
her countrey, conceyued no leffe shame than sorrow, who fearing
greater damage, returned speedily with her women, the greater
part whereof beinge of her opinion, perfwaded Antiope to be re-
enged vpon the Grekes. For which purpose they made great
preparation of warre. Afterwards leuyinge so great a number of
the Amazones as they could, they sent to Sigilus king of Scythia
for succour: who sent them his sonne Pifagoras, with a great
number of horsemen, by whose helpe the Amazones passinge into
Europa, and Countrey about Athenes, they greatly annoyed their
ennemy: but Pifagoras entred in quarell agaynft the Queene and
her women, by meanes whereof, the Scythians could not fight, but
withdrew themselues aside, whereby the Amazones (not able to
support the force of the Grekes,) were overcomne, and the greatest
part of them cut in pieeces. Those which did escape, ran to the
Scythians Campe, of whom they were defended: afterward being
returned into their countrey, they liued in leffe force, and surety
than before. In proccesse of time the Grekes passede into Asia,
and made a famous conquest of the Citty of Troy, when Penethe-
filea was Queene of the Amazones, who remembringe the injuri-
ries recyued by the Grekes, went with a great army to helpe the
Troians: where the Queene did thinges worthy of remembrance,
but the Trojanes vanquished, in many Skirmishes al the Amazones
were almost slain. And Penthésilea amongs other, was killed by the hand of Achilles. Wherefore those that remained, returned into their countrey with so little power (in respect of that they had before) as with great difficulty they susteyned, and defended their old possession7, and so continued till the time that Alexander the great went into Asia, to make warre against the Hircanians. In which time one of their Queens named Thalestris accompanied with a great number of the Amazons, went out of hir countrey with great desire to see and know Alexander. And approching the place where he was, she sent her Ambafladour vnto him to the ende that she might obtaine safe conduct to see him, mak- inge him to vnderstand how mutch the Renome of his personage had inflamed hir heart to see him. Whereof Alexander beeinge tolde, graunted hys safe conduct. By means whereof, after she had chosen out some of hir principall women, leauinge the rest in a certayne place in very good order, she went towards Alexander, of whom she was curteously entertained, and then with very good countenaunce, she offered vnto him the effect of all her ability. Who prayed hir to tell him, if he were able to do her pleasure, and promised that hir request should be accomplished. She aunswered that hir comminge was not to daemond either landes or dominions, (whereof she had sufficient) but rather to knowe and be acquainted with such a famous Prince as she was, of whom she had heard marvellous and strange report. But the chiefest cause of hir comminge was, to pray him of carnall copulation, that she might be conceiued with childe, and haue an heire begotten of so excellent a Prince, telling him that she was come of noble kinde, and of high parentage, and that he ought not to disdaine her vse. Promising hym that if it pleased the Gods, that she should haue a daughter, she would nourishe it her selfe, and make it her vnuerfall Heire, and if it were a Sonne, she would send it vnto him. Alexander asked her if she woulde go with hym to the warres, which if she would, he promised hir his company. But she excusinge hir selfe, aunswered that she could not goe with hym without great shame, besides the hazardinge the losse of her kinde. Wherefore she prayed him agayne to fatisfie hir request. Finally she kept company with Alexander by
the space of xiii dayes in publike and secrect fort, which beinge expired, she tooke hir leaue, and returned home to hir province. But as it is the property of tyme to confume all thinges: euen so the kingdome and power of the Amazones grew to ytter decay, no one futch nation at this day to be found. For what monstrueous Sexe was this that durft not onely by many armies encountre with puifant nations, but also by fingle Combate, to fight with that terrible perfonage Hercules, whose vnspeakable and incredible labours and victories, are by antiquity reported to be futch, as none but he, durft euer adventure the like. What nation euer comparable to the Greekes, or the Athenian Citty? and yet thefe man-kinde women for reuenge shronke not to peerce their Prouince. What like besieged towne as that of Troy was? and yet Penthefilea one of their Queenes with hir mayny, indeuoured to rayfe the Greekes, that so many yeares had lien before the fame. What Queene (nay what Stalant) durft sue for company of meanest man? any yet one of thefe presumed to begge the matche of the migh-tieft Monarch that euer ruled the world. The maners and qualities of which nation, bycaufe they were Women of no common spirte and boldneffe, bee thought good in the front of this second Volume to be described: bycaufe of dyuers Womens liues plentifull variety is offereed in the fequele. And for that some mention hath bin made of the great Alexander: and in what wife from vertue hee fell to vice, the feconde Nouell enfu-inge shall geue further aduer-tifement.
THE SECOND NOUEL.

The great pitie and continencie of Alexander the great and his louinge
entertainment of Sisigambis the wyfe of the great monarch Darius
after he was vanquished.

Great Monarches and Princes be the Gods, and only Rulers vpon
Earth, and as they be placed by God’s only prouydece and dispo-
sition, to conquere and rule the fame, even so in victorious battleys
and honorable Exploytes, they ought to rule and order their
conquests like Gods: that is to saye, to vse moderate behauior
to their Captuies and slaues, specially to the weaker sort and fem-
nine kynde, whom like Tyrantes and barbarous, they ought not to
corrupt and abuse, but like Christians and vertuous victors, to cer-
rishe and preferue their honour. For what can bee safe to a woman
(fayde Lucrece, when she was rauifhed by the Romayn Tarquine)
her chastity beinge defiled? Or what can be safe to a man, that
gueh himselfe to incontinency? For when he hath deSpoyled the
virgin, robbed the wyfe, or abused the Wydow of their honor and
good name, they protrude themselues into many Myferies, they bee
impudent, Vnfhamefafte, Aduenturous, and Careleffe howe many
mySchiefes they doe. And when a Prince or Gouerner doth gue
himself to licentious life, what mischieues, what rapes, what
murders doth hee commit? No frende, no Foe, no subieft, no ene-
my doth he spare or defende. Contrarywise, the mercifull and
continent captayne, by subduinge hys affections recovereth immor-
tall fame, which this History of kinge Alexander full well de-
clareth. And becaufe before we spake of that great conqueror
in the Nouell of the Amazones, and of the repayre of Queene Tha-
leftris for vse of his body, at what tyme (as Curtius sayth) he fell
from vertue to vice: we purpole in thys, to declare the great con-
tynuencie and mercy that hee vfed to Sisigambis, the wife of the
Perfian prince Darius, and briefly to touch the time of his abused
life, which in this maner doth begin. Alexander the great hauing
vanquished Darius and his infinite army, and retiringe wyth hys
hoaft from the purfute and slaughter of the Perfians, entred into
their campe to recreate himselfe. And being with his familiers in the mids of his banket, they sodainely heard a pitifull cry, with strange howlinge and cryinge out, which did very much aston them. The Wyfe and Mother of Darius, with the other noble women newly taken Prisoners, were the occasion of that present noyse, by lamentinge of Darius, whom they beleued to be slayne, and which opinion they conceyued through one of the Eunuches, which flaynding before Their tent doore, saw a Souldier beare a piece of Darius Diademe. For which cause Alexander, pityinge their mifery, sent a noble man called Leonatus to signifie vnto them that they were deceipt, for that Darius was liuing. Repayinge towards the Tent where the women were with certayne armed men, he sent word before, that he was comminge to them with message from the kinge. But when futche as stooed at the tent doore saw armed men, they thought they had bene sent to murder the Ladies: for which cause they ran in to them, cryinge that their laft houre was come, for the souldiers were at hande to kille them. When Leonatus was entred the Paulion, the Mother and wife of Darius fell downe at hys feete, intreatinge him that before they were slayne, he would suffer them to bury Darius, accordinge to the order and maner of his Countrey, after the performance of which obsequies, they were content (they sayd) willingly to suffer death. Leonatus assured them, that both Darius was alue, and that there was no harme ment towards them, but shoule remayne in the same flate they were in before. When Sisigambis heard those wordes, she suffered her selfe to bee lifted vp from the grounde, and to receyue some comforte. The next day, Alexander with great diligence buried the bodies of fuch of his owne men as could be founde, and willed the same to be done to the noble men of the Perfians geuinge licence to Darius mother to Bury fo many as she list, after the custome of her Countrey. She performed the same to a fewe that were next of her kin, accordinge to the hability of their present fortune, for if she should haue vsed the Perfians Pompe therein, the Macedonians might haue enuied it, whych beinge victors, vsed no great curiositie in the matter. When the due was performed to the dead, Alexander signified to the women prisoners, that hee himselfe would come to
visite them, and causinge futch as came with him to tary without, he onely with Ephesfion entred in amongs them. The fame Ephesfion of all men was best beloved of Alexander, brought vp in his company from his youth, and most priuy with him in all thinges. There was none that had futch liberty to speke his mynde playly to the kinge as hee had, whych hee vsed after futch forte, that he seemed to doe it by no authority, but by suffereance. And as he was of like yeres vnto him, fo in shape and perfonage he did somwhat excell him. Wherefore the Women thinkinge Ephesfion to be the kinge, did fall down and worship him (as their Countrie maner was to do to kinges) till futch time as one of the Eunuches that was taken prifoner, shewed which of them was Alexander. Then Sifigambis fell down at his feete, requiringe pardon of her Ignorance, forfomutch as she did neuer see him before. The kinge tooke her vp by the hande, and sayd: "Mother you be not deceiued: for this is Alexander alfo." Then he behaued himselfe after futch a maner, that hee exceeded in continency and compaffion, all the kinges that had bin before his time. He entertayned the two Queenes with thofe virgins that were of excellent beauty, fo reuerently, as if they had bin his sisters. He not onely absteyned from al violation of Darius wyfe, which in beauty excelled all the women of hir time, but alfo tooke great care and diligence, that none other should procure her any dishonour. And to all the women he commaunded their ornaments, and apparell to be restored: fo that they wanted no thinge of the magnificence of their former estate, sauinge only the assured truft that creatures want in misery: which thinges considered by Sifigambis, the faid vnto the kinge: "Sir, your goodnes towards vs, doth deferue that we should make the fame prayer for you, that whilome we did for Darius: and we perceive you worthy to paffe so great a king as he was, in felicity and good fortune, that abound so in iustice and clemency. It pleaseth you to terme me by the name Mother and Queene: but I confeffe my selfe to bee your handmayde. For both I conceive the greatnesse of my state past, and seele that I can bear this present seruitude. It lieth only in your hands how we shal be delt withall, and whether you will make vs notable to the worlde through your clemency or cruelty." The king comforted them al
that he might, and willinge them to be of good cheere tooke Darius
sonne in his armes. Thereat the childe was nothing afraid, hauing
neuer seene him before, but toke and imbraced him about the
necke. He was so moued with the confancy of the childe, as he
beheld Ephefion, and sayde, "Oh, I would that Darius had had
some part of this childe's gentlenesse." Which mercy, continency,
humility and confancy of minde in Alexander, if hee had still kept
to his latter daies, might have bin accompunted mutch more fortu-
nate than he was, when hauinge subdued all Asia from Hellefpont
to the ocean Sea, he did counterfayte the Triumphes of Bacchus.
Or if amonges the residue of his conquests, hee would have tra-
uyled to ouercome his pride and wrath, beinge vices inuincible.
Or in his dronkennes abfayned from the slaughter of his Nobility,
and not to have put to death those excellent men of warre with-
out judgement, which helped him to conquer so many Nations:
but at this time the greatnes of his fortune had not yet altered his
nature, although afterwards he could not beare his victories with
that Vertue, wherewith he wan them: for when he gaue himself to
feasting and banquetinge, he vfed the company of Harlots:
amonges whom there was one Thais, who vpon a day in hir dron-
kennesse, affirmed to Alexander, that he should wonderfully win
the fauour of the Greeks, if hee commaunded the Palace of Per-
polis to be fet on fire. The destruction whereof (the sayd) they
greatly desirde, for fo mutch as the fame was the chiefe feat of the
kings of Peria, which in times past had destroyed so many great
Citties. When the dronken harlot had giuen her sentence, there
were other prefent, who being likewise dramken, confirmed hir
wordes. Alexander then that had in him more inclination of
heat than of pacience, sayd: "Why do we not then recouer the
fauour of the Greekes by setting this Citty on fier?" They were
all chafed with drinkinge, and rofe immediately vpon those words
to burne that city in their dronkennesse, which the men of warre
had spared in their fury. The kinge himselfe first, and after his
guestes, his seruauntes and his Concubines, set fier in the Pallace,
which beinge builded for the most part of Ceder trees, became fo-
denly in a flame. When the army that was encamped neere vnto
the City, fawe the fire, which they thought had ben kindled by
fome causality, they came runninge to quenche the same againe. But when they fawe the kyng there presente increafynge the fyre, they poured downe the water whych they broughte, and helped lykewyfe the matter forwardes. Thus the Pallace that was the heade of the whole Orient, from whence fo many nations before had fetched their lawes to liue vnder, the Seat of fo many kynges, the onely Terror sometime of Greece, the fame that had bin the fender forth of 9000 Ships, and of the armes that ouerflowed all Europa, that made Brydges ouer the Sea, and vndermined moutaynes where the Sea hath now his courfe, was confumed and had his ende, and neuer rose againe in all the age that did enfue: for the kynges of Macedon vfed other Citties which be now in the Persians handes. The deftruction of this citty was futch, that the foundation thereof at thys day could not be found, but that river of Araxes doth shew where it floode, which was diftant from Pericpolis xx. furlonges, as the Inhabitants rather doe beleue than know. The Macedonians were afhamed that fo noble a Citty was destroyed by their kynge in his dronkennes: yet at length it was turned into an earneft matter, and were content to thincke it expedient that the Citty should have ben destroyed after that maner. But it is cer- tayne, that when Alexander had taken his reft, and was become better aduised, hee repented him of his doinge: and after he had kept company with Thalesfris aforefayde, which was Queene of the Amazones, hee tourned his contiency and moderation (beinge the moft excellent vertues appearinge in any kind of eftate) into pride and voluptuoufnes, not efteeminge his countrey customes, nor the holfome temperance that was in the vflages, and discipline of kynges of Macedon. For he judged their ciuill vflage and maner, to be ouer bafe for his greatnede, but did counterfaite the height and pompe of the kings of Persia, reprefenting the greatneffe of the Gods. Hee was content to fuffre men there to fall downe flat vpon the grounde and worship him, and accustomed the victors of fo many nacions, by litle and litle to feruile offices, couetinge to make them like vnto his Captiues. He ware vpon his head a Diademe of Purple interpaled with white, like as Darius was accustomed: and fashioned his aparell after the maner of the Persians, without scrupulosity of any euil token that is figui-
fied, for the victor to change his habite into the fashion of him whom he had vanquished: and although he vaunted, that he ware the spoyles of his enemies, yet with those spoiles he put upon him their euid maners, and the insolvency of the mynde followed the pride of the apparell. Besides he sealed such Letters as he sent into Europa, with his accustomed seale, but all the Letters he sent abroad into Asia, were sealed with Darius Ringe. So it appeared that one minde could not beare the greatnesse that appertayned to two. He appareled also his frends, his Captayns, and his horsemen in Perisan apparell, whereat though they grudged in their mindes, yet they durst not refuse it, for feare of his displeasure. His courte was replenished with Concibins, for he still maintaineed three hundred, and threescore that belonged to Darius, and amonge them were flocks of Eunuches accustomed to performe the vs of women. The olde Souliours of Philip natually abhorringe such things, manysetly withfoode to be infectcd with such voluptuousnes, and strange cuftomes: whereupon there rofe a general talke and opinion throughout the campe, that they had lost more by the victorie, than they won by the wars. For when they sawe themselues overcome in such exceffe, and forayne cuftomes so to preuaile, they judged it a simple guerdon of their longe beeing abroad, to returne home in prifoners maner. They began to be ashamed of their kinge, that was more like to such as were subdued, than to them that were victorious: and that of a kinge of Macedon, was become a Prince of Persea, and one of Darius Courtiers. Thus this noble Prince from continency and mercy fell into all kynde of disorder, the originall whereof, hee tooke by delite in Women, which beinge vsed in fort lawfull, he great comfortes and delightes, otherwisw, the very springe of all cruelty and mishife.
THE THIRD NOUELL.

Timoclia, a gentlewoman of Thebes, understandinge the couetous desire of a Thracian knight, that had abused hir, and promiséd her marriage, rather for her goods than loue, well acquited hir selfe from his falshoode.

Quintus Curtius, that notable Historiographer, remembringe the stout fact of thys Thebane gentlewoman, amonges other the Gesles and Facs of Alexander the great, I haue deemed not alto-gether vnfit for this place, to reuale the fine and notable pollicy deuised by her, to rid hir selfe from a couetous caitife of the Thra-cian kinde, who for lucre rather than loue, for gayne than grati-tude, promyfed golden Hylles to thys dystressef poore Gentle-woman. But the in the ende payinge hym well deferued hyre, was liked and prayfed of Alexander for hir aduenturous facte, beinge one of the leaft vertues that shined in him, before hee grewe to excessiue abufe: but bycaufe Plutarch in hys Treatyfe De claris mulieribus, more at large recounteth this Hystory, I haue thought good almost (verbatim) to follow him. Theagenes a Gentleman of Thebes, ioyninge himselfe wyth Epaminondas, and Pelopidas, and with other noble men, for preseruation of their coun-try of Greece, was slayne in the chace of his enemyes, as he pursuèd one of the chyefe of hys aduerfaries, the same crying outhe vnto him: "Whether doest thou pursue vs, Theagenes?" "Euen to Macedonia:" aunswered hee. Thys Gentleman thus slayne had a sister, whose vertue and neereneffe of kin by noble deeds, she well witnesed, although she was not well able to manifeft her vertue, for the aduerstity of the tyme, but by pacient suflFerance of the common calamities. For after Alexander had won the Citty of Thebes, the Souldiours greedy of Spoyle runninge vp and downe the Citty, evry of them chauncinge vpon futch Booty as Fortune offred them, it hapned that a Captayne of the Thracian horsmen, a barbarous, and wycked wretch, came to the houfe of Timoclia, who somewhat neere the kyng both in name, and Kyn, in manners, and conditions, was greatly different from him: hee
neither regardyng the noble house, ne yet the chastity of hir forepasse life, vpon a tyme after supper, glutted and forlilled wyth abundance of wine, caufed Timoclia forcibely to be haled to his dronken Couch: and not contented with the forced wronge, as they were in talke together, diligently demaunded of her, if she had in no place hidden any Golde or Siluer, and partly by threatens, and partly by promife to keepe her as his wyfe, endeuoured to get that he defired: but shee being of ready wit, takinge that offered occasion of her adversary: "I would to God," (sayd shee) "that it had beene my lucke to haue died before thys night, rather then to liue: for hitherto haue I kept my body pure and vntouched from all despit, and villany, vntill vnucky fate forced mee to yelde to thy disordinate lust: but fith my hap is fuch, why shou'd I conceale those thyngs that bee thine owne, thou beinge mine onely tutor, lord and husband (as thou sayst) when the Gods hal pleafe to bringe the fame to paffe: for by thy will and pleasure must I vnhappy Thebane Wench be ruled and gouerned. Ech vanquished wight must subdue their wyll and minde to their lord and victor: I beinge thy flawe and prifier, must needes by humble meanes yelde vp my felfe to the vnfaciate heit of thy puifant heart: what shal me to disclofe the pray that thou defireft, that we both, if thy minde be fuch, may rather ioye the fame, than the foely filth of stinkinge Earth, shoulde deuoure fuch spoyle, which for feare, and hope of future fortune, I buried in the bowels of the fame. Then marke my words, beare them well in mynde, fith lot had wroughte me this mishap. I hauinge plenty of coyned filuer, and of fyned gold no little flore befydes fuch Jewels as belongeth to the fettlinge forth of the grace of woman's beauty, of valuer and price inefitable: when I saw this Citty brought to fuch diifterfe as vnpoffible to be faued from takeinge, all the fame I threw away, or more truely to say, I welmed altogether in a drye Dichte voyde of water, which my faét fewe or none did knowe. The Pit is coverd with a little couer aboue, and thickly round about betwixt with bushes and thornes. Those goods will make thee a welthye perfonage, none in all the Campe to be compar'd to thee, the riches and value whereof, wyll witnes our former fortune, and the flate of our gorgeous, and flately house: all thofe doe I be-
queath to thee, as on whom I thinke them well bestowed." This greedy Lecher, laughinge to him selfe for this sodaine pray, and thinking that his lady fast holden within his barbarous armes had tolde him truth, routed in his filthy Couch till the day had discovered the morning light, then gapinge for his hoped gaine, he rose and prayed her to tell the place, that he might recover the fame. She then brought him into her Garden, the doore whereof she commaunded to be shut, that none might enter. He in his Hoft and Doublet, went downe to the bottome of the Pit: when Timoclia percieued him downe, she beckned for certaine of her maides, and rolled downe divers great stones with her own hands, which of purpose she had caufed to be placed there, and commaunded her maides to tumble downe the like. By which means she killed that lecherous and couetous vilayne, that rather carked to satisfie his desire, than coueted to obferue his promifid faith. Which afterwards being knowne to the Macedonians, they haled his body out of the Pit: for Alexander had made proclamation, that none shoulde dare to kill any Thebane, and therefore apprehendinge Timoclia, they brought her to the kinge, accufinge her for doinge that murder: who by her countenaunce, and stature of body, and by her behauiour and grauity of maners, beheld in her the very image of gentle kinde. And first of all, he asked her what she was: to whom boldly with constant cheere, she stoutely anfwered: "Theagenes was my brother (saide she) who being a valiant Captaine, and fightinge against you for the common safegard of the Greeks, was slaine at Chæronea, that we together might not suffaine, and proue the miseries, wherewith we be now oppressed: but I rather than to suffer violence unworthy of our race and flocke, am in your maieffe's preence brought ready to refuse no death: for better it were for mee to dye, than feele such another night, except thou commaunde the contrary." These wordes were uttered in such rufull plight, as the flanders by could not forbeare to wepe. But Alexander sayinge, that hee not onely pitied the woman endewed with so noble wit, but much more wondred at her vertue and wifedome, commaunded the Princes of his army, to forefee no wronge or violence to be done to the Gentlewoman. He gaue order also, that Timoclia and al
her kin, should be garded and defended from slaughter or other wrongs. What say yee (good Ladies) to the heart of this gentlewoman that durst be fo bolde to stone this Caytife wretch to death, and for wronge done to her bodie til that tyme vntouched, to wronge the corps of him that fauoured of no gentle kinde: who rather for earthly mucke, than for loue of suche a pleasaunt prisoner, exchaunged Loue for Gold? but note hereby what force the puritie of mynde vnwilling of beastlye luft doth carye in it selfe: a simple woman voyde of helpe, not backed with defence of husbande's ayde, doth bring a mighty Captayne, a strong and lofty lubber to enter into a Cauue, and when shee saw her best aduaun-tage, thacked him with stones, vntil he groaned forth his grievlye ghost. Such is the might and prowesse of chastitie: no charge to burdennous or weightye for suche a vertue, no enterprise too harde for a mynde so pure and cleane.
Ariobarzanes great steward to Artaxerxes king of Persia, goeth about to exceede his soueraigne lord and maister in curtezie: where in be conteyned many notable and pleasaunt chaunces, besides the great patience and loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd Ariobarzanes.

A question is moued manye times among learned men and Gentlemen addicted to the service of the Court, whether commendable deed, or curteous and gentle fact done by the Gentleman or Courtier towards his soueraine Lord, ought to be called Liberalitie and Curtezie, or rather Band and Dutie. Which question is not proponed with out greate reason. For so muche as ech man doth know, that a seruaunt do what he can for his Mayster, or lette him impoy the uttermost of his endeuour, al the labor and travaile he bestoweth, all trouble and daunger which he sustayneth, is to little, yea and the same his very bounden duty. Haue wee not red of many, and knowne the lyke that to gratifye their prince and maister, haue into a thousande daungers and like number of deaths, adventured their own proper lives? Marcus Antonius that notable oratour beying accused of inceft, and broughte to the judgement seate, his accusers required that his seruaunte shoulde be called, for because he bare the candel before his maister, when hee went to do the deede, who seyng his maister's life and death to depend vpon his evidence, utterly denied the fæct: and notwithstanding that he was whipped, racked, and suffered other cruel tormentes, would rather haue loste his lyfe than accuse and betray his maister. I could alleage and bring forth in place, the example of Mycithus, the seruaunt of one Anaxilus Meffenius, the fidelitie of the seruauntes of Plotinus Plancus, the faythful maiden called Pythias, that waited vpon Octauia, the chaft Empresse and wife of that monyster Nero, with diuers other: but that I thinke they be to the learned wel knowen, and of the vnlearned the vertue of seruauntes fidelitie is greatly liked and commended: but if the faythful seruaunt know that his desertes do gayne the grace and faoure of
his mayster, what trauayles, what payns ought he to suffer to mayntayne his reputation and to encrease the fauour obtained? for as the common proverbe and wise sayinge reporteth, that the vertue is no leffe to conferue Frendship gotten, than the wisedome was great to get and win the fame. Other there be which do contrarily contend, and with very stronge argumentes do force to proue that al which the feruant doth bseydes his duetye and beyond the obligation, wherein he is bound to his mayster, is and ought to be termed, Liberality, which is a matter to prouoke his patrone and mayster to deuyse new benefytes for his feruaunte: and that at al tymes when a man doth his duty and seruice appoynted by his mayster, executing the fame with all diligence and industry requisite therunto, that then he defferveth to be rewarded. Which is not to be discommended. For no true and honest feruant will refue any trauayle for commodity of his mayster, ne yet discrete and wyse mayster will leaue the fame vnrewarded according to that portion of ability wherewith he is possesse: but leauninge questions and disputacion aside procede we to that which this Nouel purpofeth. I say then that there was in the kyngdom of Perſia, a kyng called Artaxerxes, a man of moſt noble mynde, and of great prowefse in armes. This was he that firſte beyenge a priuate man of armes, not hauing as yet obtayned any degree in the fiede, kyld Artabanus the laſt kinge of the Arfacides, whose fouildour he was, and recouered the Perſian kyngdom, which was then in the Macedonians subiection (by the death of Darius, which was vanquished by Alexander the great) the fpace of 538 yeares. This noble gentleman hauing deliuered all Perſia, and created king, kept a princely court, wherein were many magnifient faſtes and vertuous deedes exerciſed and done, and hee himfelfe moſte noble in all affayres, bseydes the tytles which hee wortheyeye wanne in many bloody battels, was eſteemed throughout the eſt part of the worlde, to be the moſt liberal and magnanimous prince that in any age euer raigned: in faſtes and bankets he was an other Lucullus, royally entertaining strangers that repayred to his court. This king had a Senecall or fteward, named Ariobarzanes, whose office was, that when the king made any pompos or publike feas, to mount vpon a whyte Courſer with a Mace of gold in
ARIOBARZANES.

his hand, and to ride before the esquiers and Sewers for the king's own mouth, and thofe alfo that bare the king's meat in vessel of gold couered with fine napery, wrought and purled with moft beautiful workemanfhip of filke and gold. This office of Senefcall was highly esteemed and commonly wont to be geuen to one of the chiefefl Barons of the Realm. Wherfore this Ariobarzanes befydes noble Linage and incomparable ritches was the moft curiouf and liberal knight that frequented the court whose immoderate ex pense was fuch, as leuing the mean, wherin al vertu confifteth, by reaoun of outrage which many times he vfed he fel into the vice of prodigality, whereby he femed not only in curious dedes to compare with the king, but alfo contended to excel him. One day the king for his recreation called for the cheffe bord, requiring Ariobarzanes to kepe him company, which game in thofe daies among the Perfians was in greate vfe, in fuch wife as a player at the Cheffe was no les commended then amonge vs in thefe daies an excellent Oratour or famous learned man: yea and the verye fame game in common vfe in the Court, and noble mens houfes of our time, no doubt very commendable and meete to be practifed by all flates and degrees. The king and Ariobarzanes being fette downe at a table in the greate Hall of the Palace, one right againft another, accompanied with a great number of noble perfonages and Gentlemen lookinge vpon them, and marking their playe with greate filence, they began to counter one another with the Cheffe men. Ariobarzanes, whether it was that he played better than the kinge, or whether the kinge took no heede to his game, or what fo euer the occasion was, hee courfed the king to fuch a narrow ftraight, as he could not auoid, but within two or three draughtes, he muft be forced to receive the Checkemate: which the king perceiuing, and considering the daunger of the Mate, by and by there grew a greater colour in his face than was wont to bee, and imagininge how hee mighte auoyde the mate, besides his blufhing he fhaled his head, and fetched out diuers fighes, whereby the flanders by that marked the game, perceiued that hee was dryuen to his shiftes. The Senefcall efpyinge the kinge's demeanour, and feeing the honeft shamefafteneffe of the king, would not fuffer him to receive fuch a foyle, but made a draught by remouing his
knighte backe, to open a way for the King to passe, as not onely
hee deliuered him from the daunger of the Mate, but also loft one
of his Rockes for lacke of taking hede: whereupon the game refted
equall. The King (who knew the good nature and noble mynde
of his sernaunt, by experience of the fame in other caues) sayning
that hee had ouerfeene the takinge of hys rocke, gaue over the
game, and ryfing vp, sayd: "No more Ariobarzanes, the game
is yours, and I confesse my felfe overcome." The king thought
that Ariobarzanes did not the fame fo much for curtesie, as to
bynde his foueraigne lorde and king by benefite to recompence his
s-keys like behauiour, which he did not very well like, and
therefore would play no more. Notwithstanding the king neither
by figne or deede, ne yet in talke, shewed any token of difplefure
for that curtesie done. How be it, he would that Ariobarzanes
in femblable act, shoulde abftayne to fewe himselues curteous or
liberal, except it were to his inferiours and equalles, because it is
not conuenient for a fervant to contend with his maifter in thofe
qualityes. Not long after the kinge beying at Perfopolis (the
principal citye of Perfia,) ordayned a notable day of hunting of
diners beaftes of that countrey breede: and when all things were
in a readinesse he with the moft part of his Court repayred to the
paftyme. When they were come into the place, the king com-
maunded a woodde to be fet about with nettes and toiles, and
appointed eche man where he should f tand in moft conuenient place,
and he himſelfe attended with the dogs and hornes to caufe the
beaftes to iffue forth oute of their Caues. And beholde, they rayfed
a wyld beaft, which with greate fwoftneffe leapt over the nettes
and ranne awaye with greate fpede. The King feyng that strange
beaft, purpoſed to purſue him to death: and makinge a figne to
certayne of his noble men which h ee deſired to keepe him compa-
nye hee gaue the rayne and fpurre to his horſe, and followinge the
chace Ariobarzanes was one of thofe noble men which purfued the
game. It chaunced that day the kinge rode vpon a horſe, that
was the swifteft runner in his ſtable, which hee efteemed better
then a thouſande other, as wel for his veloci‐
y, as for his readi-
nesse in factes of armes. Thus following with bridle at will, the
flying rather then running beaft, they wer deuided far from their
company, and by reason of the king's spedines, none was able to followe him but Ariobarzanes, and behind him one of his servants upon a good horse which alwaies he used in hunting matters, which horse was counted the beste in all the court. And thus following the chase with galloping spede Ariobarzanes at length espied the horse of his fouraigne lord had loft his shoes before, and that the stones had furibated his hoofes, wherupon the kyng was driven either to geue ouer the chase or else to marre his horse: and neyther of these two necessitie but would haue greatly displeased the kinge, that perceived not his horse to be vnshod. The Senefcall did no sooner espge the same but sodainly dismounted from his owne, caufed his man to deliuer vnto him a hammer and nailes (which for fuch like chaunces he alwaies caried aboute him) and toke of two shoes from the horse feete of his good horse, to fet vpon the kynges not caring for his own rather then the king should forge his pleafure: wherfore hallowing the kyng which was earnestly bent vpon the chase, tolde him of the danger wherein his horse was for lacke of shoes. The kyng hearinge that lighted from his horfe, and leyng two shoes in Ariobarzanes manne's hand, thinking that Ariobarzanes had brought them with him, or that they were the shoes which fell from his owne, taried fil vntil his horse was shod. But when he saw the notable horse of his senefcall vnshod before, then he thought that to be the curtefie of Ariobarzanes, and so did let the matter paffe, studied by lyke meanes to requite him with Curtefie, which forced himselfe to surmount in the fame: and when his horse was shod, he gaue the fame to Ariobarzanes in rewarde. And so the king chose rather to lose his pleafure of hunting, then to suffer himselfe by his man to be excelled in curtefie, wel noting the stoutnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde which semed to haue a will to contend with his prince in faictes renouned and liberal. The senefcall thought it not conuenient to refuse the gyft of his liege lord, but accepted the fame with like good will as before he shod his horse, still expectinge occaion how he might furpas his master in curtefie and so to bind him to requite the fame againe. They had not taried there long, but many of those that followed did ouertake them. And then the king got vp vpon a spare horse and
ARIOBARZANES.

181

returned to the city with all his company. Within few daies after the king by proclamation summoned a solemne and pompous iuft and tryumph at the tilt, to be done vpon the kalends of May next ensuing. The reward appointed the victor and best Doer in the same was a couragious and goodly curser with a brydle and byt of fine gold rychly wrought, a faddle correpsondent of paffing great pryce, the furniture and trappers for the brydle and faddle of like coft and workmanship, the rayns wer twoo chaynes of golde very artificially made, the barbe and couerture of the horfe of cloth of golde fringed round about with like gold, ouer which horfe was placed a fine sword the hilttes an chape wherof together with the scabard wer curiously befet with Pearles and Precious stones of Inestimable value. On the other fyde was placed a very beautiful and stronge Mace, verye cunninglye wrought with damaskin. The Horfe was placed in forme of triumph, and befydes the same all the Armours and weapons meete for a Combatante Knyghte, riche and fayre without comparison. The Placart was marueylous and stronge, the Launce was guilde and bygge, as none greater in all the troupe of the chalengers and defendauntes. And all thofe furnitures were appoynted to be geuen to him that shoulde do beft that day. A greate assemblye of ftraungers re-payred to that solemne feast, as wel to doe deedes of Armes, as to looke vpon that pompous tryumph. Of the kynge's Subiectes there was neither knyghte nor baron, but in ryche and fumptuous apparell appeared that day, amonges whom, of chiefeft fame the kynge's eldeft fonne was the fyfth that gav his name, a Gentlemanne very valorous, and in deedes of armes of paffing valour brought vp from his very youth, and trayned in the fielde and other warlyke exercifes. The Senecall alfo caufed his name to be inrolled: the like didde other knyghtes as wel Perfians as other ftraungers: for that the proclamation was general, with safeconduite for all forrayners, noble men or other that shoulde make their repayre. The king had eledc three auncient Barons to be Judges and Arbitratours of their deedes, sutch as in their tyme for their owne perfonages had bene very valiant, and in many enterprises well exercised, men of great discretion and judgement. Their stage was placed in the middes of the Liftes, to viewe and
ARIOBARZANES.

marke the Counterbuffes and blowes of the Combatants. We nede not to remember, ne ought to forget the number of ladies and gentlewomen assembled out of al partes to behold and view this triumphe, and peraduenture eche knight that ran that day was not without his amorous lady to note and behold his actiuity and prowess, euery of them wearing his ladie's flocke, gлове, or other token, according to the common custome in such lyke cafes. At the day and houre appoynted appeared all the Combatantes in greate Tryumphes and Pompe, with rych furnitures as wel vpon them selues as vpon their horse. The triumphe begon and many Launces broken in good order, on either fides Judgement was geuen generally that the Senefcall Ariobarzanes had wonne the prife, and next vnto him the kinge's fonne did passe them all, for that none of al the combatantes hadde broken paft v. flanes, and the sayd yong Gentleman had in the face of his aduerfary broken in pieces ix. at the leaft. The Senefcall brought for the eleuen launces, which were couragiously and honourably broken, by breaking of the last flaffe which was the twelth he was judged moft worthy. The condition wherof was, that euery combatant shoulde runne twelue courfes with twelue launces, and he whiche shoulde firft breake the fame shoulde without doubt or further controuersie obtayne the reward. What pleasure and delight the king did conceiue to see his fonne behaue him selue so valiantly that day, I referre to the judgement of fathers, that haue children endued with like actiuity. But yet it greued him that the Senefcall had the greater advantage, and yet being a matter fo wel knowen and difcerned by the Judges, like a wyfe man he dicsembed his countenaunce. On the other fyde, the yong Gentleman which did combate before his amorous ladye was very sorrowful for that he was voyde of hope of the chiefeft honour. So that betwene the father and the fonne, was one very thought and desire: but the vertue and valor of the Senefcall did cut of eythers greefe. Now the tyme was come that the Senefcall shoulde runne with his last flaffe mounted vpon the horse which the king gaue him when he was an huntyng, who knowing wel that the king was very defirous that his son shoulde excell all men, percyued likewyse the inflamed mynd of the yonge gentleman for the prefence of his lady to
afpyre the honour, purposed to geue ouer the honour atchieued by himselfe, to leaue it to the sonne and heir of his lorde and mayster: and yet hee knewe ful wel that those his curtesies pleased not the king, neverthelesse he was determined to perseuer in his opinion, not to bereue the king of his glory, but onely to acquire fame and honour for him selfe. But fully myndered that the honour of the triumpe shoulde be geuen to the kynge's sonne, he welded the staffe within his reste, and when he was ready to encounter (because it was he that shold come agaynft him,) he let fal his launce out of his handes, and said: "Farewel this curtesie of myne, fith it is no better taken." The kinge's sonne gaue a gentle counterbuffe vpon the Placarde of the Senefcall, and brake his staffe in many pieces, which was the x. course. Many heard the wordes that the senefcall spake when his staffe fell out of his handes, and the standers by well perceiued that he was not minded to geue the lafte blowe, bicaufe the king's sonne might haue the honor of the triumph, which he defyred fo much. Then Ariobarzanes departed the listes: and the Prince withoute any great resistence wan the prize and victory. And so with sounde of diuerse instruments the prize borne before him, he was throughout the citie honorably conveyed, and among other, the senefcall still waited vpon him with mery countenance, greatly praising and exalting the valiante of the yong Prince. The king which was a very wife man, and many times hauing experience of the chialrty of his Senefcall at other Tourneis, Lists, Barriers, and Battels, and always finding him to be prudent, politike, and for his perfon very valiant, knewe to well that the fall of his launce was not by chaunce but of purpose, continued his opinion of his Senefcall's liberalitye and courage. And to say the trouth, such was his exceeding curtesie, as fewe may be found to imitate the same. We daily se that many be liberall of Fortune's goods inuetinge some with promotion, some with apparel, Gold and Siluer, Jewels and other things of great value. We see also noble men, bountifull to theyr fervants, not onely of mouable thimgs, but also of Castels, Lands, andCities: what shal we speake of them, which will not sticke to sheade their owne bloud, and many tymes to spende theyr lyfe to do their frendes good? Of thofe and such like examples, all re-
cordes be full: but a man that contemneth fame and glorye or is of his owne honour liberal, is neuer founde. The victorious Cap-
tayne after the bloudy battayle, giueth the spoyle of his ennemies
to his fouldiers, rewardeth them with prifoners, departeth vnto
them the whole praye, but the glory and honor of the battel he
referueth vnto himselfe. And as diuinely the father of Romaine
eloquence doth fay, how that philofophers by recording the glo-
rious gestes and dedes of others, do feke after glory themfelves.
The king was difpleased with thefe noble dedes and curtefie of his
Senefcall, becaufe he thought it not mete or decente that a Sub-
jecte and fervant fhould compare with his lord and mayfter: and
therfore did not bare him that louing and chereful countenance
which hee was wont to doe. And in the ende, purposed to let
him know, that he spent his brayns in very great errour, if he
thought to force his mayfter to be bound or benefical vnto him,
as herafter you fhal perceiue. There was an auncent and approved
cuftome in Perfia, that the kinges yerely did Solemnize an Annuier-
farye of theyr Coronation with great feaft and tryumph, vpon
which day all the Barons of the kyngdome were bounde to repayre
to the courte where the king by the space of viii. dayes with
fumptuous bankets and other feaftes kept open houfe. Vpon the
Annuierfary day of Artaxerxes' coronation, when al things were
difposed in order, the king defirous to accomplifh a certayne
conceiued determination commaunded one of his faythful cham-
berlaynes fpedely to fecke out Ariobarzanes, which he did, and
telling him the kinge's meffage, fayde: "My lorde Ariobarzanes,
the king hath willed me to fay vnto you, that his pleafure is,
that you in your owne perfon eu'en forthwith fhal cary your white
fteede and Courfer, the mace of gold, and other enfanges due to
the office of Senefcal vnto Darius, your mortal enemy, and in his
maieflye's behalfe to fay vnto him, that the kyngge hath geuen him
that office, and hath clerely difpofted you thereof." Ariobar-
zanes hearing thofe heauy newes, was like to dye for forrowe, and
the greatter was his grief, becaufe it was geuen to his greateft
enemy. Notwithstanding lyke a gentleman of noble ftomacke,
would not in open appearance signifie the difpleaure which hee
conceiued within, but with mery cheare and louing countenaunce
Ariobarzanes answered the chamberlayne: "Do my right humble commendations vnto the king's maiefty, and say vnto him, that like as he is foueraine lord of all this land, and I his faythful subieæte, euен fo mine office, my lyfe, landes and goods, be at his disposition, and that willinglye I wil performe his heift." When he had spoken those woordes hee rendred vp his office to Darius, who at diner servied in the fame. And when the king was set, Ariobarzanes with comly countenance fate downe among the rest of the lords, which sodenlye deposition and depreviation, did maruelously amaze the whole assembly, euery man secretely speking their mind either in praise or dispraise of the fact. The king all the dinner time, did marke and note the countenance of Ariobarzanes, which was pleasaunt and merie as it was wont to be, whereat the kinge did greatlye maruell: and to attaine the ende of his purpose, hee began with sharpe wordes in presence of the nobilitie to disclose his discontented minde, and the grudge which he bare to Ariobarzanes: on the other fyde the king suborned diuers persons diligently to espy what he faide and did. Ariobarzanes hearing the king's sharpe wordes of rebuke, and stimulated by the persuasion of diuers flatterers, which were hired for that purpose, after he percieued that his declared pacience, that his modest talke and his long and faithful seruice, which he had done to the king, his losse and hinderance sustained, the perill of his life, which so many tyme he had suffred preuayled nothing, at length vanquished with disdayne he brake the bridle of pacience, and forted out, of the boundes of his wonted nature, for that in place of honoure he receiued rebuke, and in fede of reward was depruyed of his office, began in a rage to complayne on the king, terminge him to bee an vnkynd prince, which among the Perfiæans was esteemed a worde of great offence to the maiefty: wherefore faine he would haue departed the court, and retired home to his countrey, which he could not doe without fpeciall licence from the king, and yet to craue the fame at his handes, his heart would not serue him. Al these murmures and complaintes which he secretly made, were tolde the king, and therefore the king commaunded him one day, to be called before him, vnto whome he sayd: "Ariobarzanes, youre grudging complaintes and enuious quarels, whyche you
brute behinde my backe throughout my Courte, and your continuall rages outragioufly pronounced, through the very Windowes of my Palace haue pierced mine eares, whereby I understand that thing which hardly I would have beleued: but yet being a Prince as well inclined to favour and quiet hearinge of all cause, as to credite of light reportes, would faine know of you the cause of your complaints, and what hath moved you thereunto: for you be not ignorant, that to murmur at the Persian king, or to terme him to be vnkinde, is no leefe offence than to blasphe the Gods immortall, because by auncient Lawes and Decrees they be honored and worshipped as Gods. And among all the penaltyes conteyned in our lawes, the vyce of Ingratitude is moste byterlye corrected. But leaving to speake of the threatens and daungers of our lawes, I pray you to tell me wherein I have offended you: for albeit that I am a king, yet reason persuadeth me, not to give offence to any man, which if I should doe (and the Gods forbid the fame) I ought rather to be termed a tyrante than a Kinge." Ariobarzanes hearing the king speake so reasonably, was abashed, but yet with stout countenance he feared not particularly to remember the woordes which he had spoken of the king, and the cause wherefore he spake them. "Wel (said the king) I perceiue that you blushe not at the words, ne yet feare to rehearse the fame vnto my face, wherby I do perceiue and note in you a certayne kind of stoutenes which naturally procedeth from the greatnes of your mynd. But yet wisdome would that you should consider the reason and cause why I haue deprivued you from your office. Do you not know that it appertaineth vnto me in all myne affaires and deedes to be liberal, curtious, magnificent, and bounteous? Be not those the virtues that make the fame of a Prince to glister among his subiectes, as the Sunne beams doe vpon the circuit of the world? Who oughte to rewarde wel doers and recompence eche wight whiche for any trouell haue al the dayes of their lyfe, or els in some perticuler seruice vfed their enuer, or aduentured the peril of their life, but I alone being your souere-raygne Lord and Prince? To the vertuous and obedient, to the Captayne and the Souldiour, to the pollityke and to the learned and graue, finally, to eche wel deseruing wight, I know how to vse the noble princely vertues of curtesie and liberality. They be the
ARIIOBARZANES.

comly ensignes of a kynge. They be the onely ornaments of a prince. They be my perticular vertues. And will you Ariobar-
zanes, being a valiaunt Souldioure, a graue counsayler, and a polli-
tyke perfonage, goe about to dispossiffe me of that which is myne? Wil you whiche are my seruaunte and Subiecke of whome I make greateste accompt and haue in dearest estimation, vpon whom I did beftow the greatest dignity within the compas of my whole Monarchie, grate benefite at my handes, by abusinge those vertues whiche I aboue other do principally regard? You do much abufe the credite which I repose in youre greate wifedomde. For bee in whome I thought to fynde most graue aduife, and deemed to bee a receptacle of al good counfel, doth seeke to take vpon him the personage of his Prince, and to vfurpe the kinglye qualitie which belongeth only vnto him. Shal I be tyed by your desernes, or bound by curteous deeds, or els be forced to rendre recompence? No, no, so long as this imperieall crowne shal rest on royal head, no subiec% by any curteous deede of his, shal straine vnwilling mynde, which mente it not before. Tel me I beeech you what reward and gift, what honour and preferment haue I euer bestowed vpon you, fithens my first arraial to this victorius raigne, that euer you by due defert did bynde me thereunto? Which if you did, then liberal I cannot be termed, but a slauish Prince bound to do the fame, by subiec% merite. High and mightie kinges doe reward their men, haung respect that their gift or benefite shal exceede deserte, otherwife that preferment cannot bee termed liberal. The great conquerour Alexander Magnus wan a great and notable Cittie for wealth and spoyle. For the principalitie and gouernment wherof diuers of his noble men made fute, alleging their paynful service and bloudy wounds about the getting of the name. But what did that worthy king? was he moved with the bloudhead of his captaynes? was he styrred with the valiaunce of his men of warre? was he prouoked with their earnest futes? No truely: But calling vnto him a poore man, whome by chaunce he found there, to him he gauethe riche and wealthy citie, and the gouernmente thereof, that his magnificence and his liberalitie to a perfon so poore and bafe, might receiue greater fame and es-
timation: and to declare that the conferred benefyte didde not
proceede of deferte or dutie, but of mere liberalitie, very curtesie, true munificence and noble disposition, derived from princely heart and kinglye nature. Howbeit I speake not this that a faithfull seruant should be unrewarded (a thing very requisite) but to inferre and prove that reward shoulde excell the merite and service of the receuier. Now then I say, that you going about by large desert and manifold curtesie to binde mee to recompence the fame, you feele thy next waye to cut of the meane whereby I should be liberall. Do not you see that through your vnaduyfed curtesie I am preuented, and letted from myne accustomed liberalitye, wherewith dayly I was wont to reward my kynde, louing and loyal seruantes, to whom if they deferred one talent of golde, my manner was to geue them two or three: if a thousand crownes by the yeare, to geue them v. Do you not know that when they looked for most rewarde or preferment, the foner did I honour and aduaunce them? Take heede then from henceforth Ariobarzanes, that you live with such prouidence and circumspection as you may bee knowne to be a seruant, and I reputed (as I am) for your fouerayne Lord and mayster. All Princes in myne opinion require two things of theire seruantes, that is to say, fidelity and loue, which being hadd they care for no more. Therefore he that lift to contende with me in curtesie, shal fynde in the ende that I make female accompte of him. And he that is my trufty and faithfull seruant, diligente to execute and do my commaundementes, fauythful in my secret aaffayres, and duetyfull in his vocation, shal truely witte and most certaynlye feele that I am both curteous and liberall. Which thou thy selfe shal well perceiue, and be forced to confesse that I am the same manne in dede, for curtesie and liberalitye whom thou indeuoreft to furmount.” Then the king held his peace. Ariobarzanes very reuerently made answera in this manner: “Moist noble and victorious Prince, wel vnderstanding the conceiued grief of your inuincible mind pleafeth youre sacred maiefty to geue mee leauue to anfwer for my self, not to aggravate or heap your wrath and displeasure (which the Gods forbid) but to difclofe my humble excufe before your maiefty that the fame poized with the equall balance of youre rightful mind, my former attempts may nether seeme presumptuous, ne yet my wel meaning
mind, well measured with justice, ouerbold or malapert. Most humbly then, prostrate vpon my knees I say that I never went about, or else did think in mind to exceed or compare with your infinite and incomprehensible bounty, but invested by all possible means to let your grace perceive, and the whole world to know that there is nothing in the world which I regard so much as your good grace and favour. And mighty Iowes grant that I do never fall into so great error to presume for to contend with the greatnes of your mynde: which fond desire if my beastly mynd should apprehend, I myght be lickned to the man that goeth aboute to bereave and take away the clereneffe of the Sun, or brightnesse of the splendid stars. But ever I did thinke it to be my bounden duety not only of those fortunes goods which by your princely meanes I do injoy to bee a distributer and large giuer, but also bound for the profite and aduauncement of your regal crowne and dignitie, and defence of your most noble person, of mine owne life and bloud to be both liberall and prodigall. And where your majestye thinketh that I have laboured to compare in curteous dede or other liberall behavioure, no dede that ever I did, or fact was ever enterprised by me for other respect, but for to get and continue your more ample favour and daily to encreafe your loue for that it is the seruants part with all his force and might to aspyre the grace and fauoure of his soueraygne lorde. Howbeit (most noble prince) before this tyme I did never beleue, nor hard youre grace confessè, that magnanimity, gentlenes and curteyse, were vertues worthy of blame and correction, as your majestye hath very manifeastly done me to vnderstande by wordes feuere, and taunting checkes, vnworthye for practise of such rare and noble vertues. But how fo ever it bee, whether lyfe or death shal depend vpon this prayfe worthy and honourable purpofe, I meane hereafter to yeld my dutye to my souerayne lord, and then it may please him to terme my dedes courteous or liberal or to thinke on my behavioure, what his owne princely mynde shal deme and judge." The king vpon those wordes rofe vp and sayd: "Ariobarzanes, now it is no tyme to continue in further disputation of this argument, committing the determination and judgement herof, to the grave deliberation of my counsel who at convenient leasure aduisedly shal
according to the Persian lawes and customes concludef the same. And for this present time I say vnto thee that I am disposed to account the accusatfon made agaynfe thee to be true, and confessed by thy self. In the mean tyme thou shalt repayre into the countrey and come no more to the court til I commaund thee." Ariobarzanes receiuinge this anfwreare of his fouerayne lorde departed, and to his great contentation, went home into his countreye merye, for that he should be absent out of the daylye fighf of his enemies, yet not wel pleased for that the king had remitted his caufe to his Counfcell. Neuertheffe minded to abyde and suffer al Fortune, he gaue him felfe to the paftime of huntinge of Deere, runninge of the wylde Bore, and flyinge of the Hauke. This noble Gentleman had two onyfe daughters of his wife that was deceafed, the moft beautiful Gentlewomen of the countrey, the eldef of which two was peereleffe and without comparifon, older than the other by one yeare. The beauty of those fayre ladies was bruted throughout the whole Region of Persia, to whome the greatef Lordes and Barons of the countrey were great and importunate futers. He was not in his countrey refiant the space of fouer monethes, which for falubritie of ayre was moft holzone and pleafant, full of lordlike libertyes and Gentlemanlike paftimes, afwel to bee done by the hound as followed by the fpaniell, but one of the kinde Haraulds fente from the Court, appeared before him with meffage to this effe£te, faying vnto him: "My lord, Ariobarzanes, the kinge my fouerayne Lord hath commaundedyou to fend with me to the Court the fayref of your two daughters, for that the reporte of their famous beautie hath made him hardlie to beleue them to be fuch, as common bruite would fayne doe him to vnderfand." Ariobarzanes not well able to conceiue the meaning of the king's commaundiment, revolued in his mynde diuers thinges touching that demaund, and concludinge vpon one which fel to his remembrance, determined to fend his younger daughter, which (as we haue fayde before) was not in beautie comparable to her elder fifter, whereupon hee causeth the mayden to be fend for, and fayde vnto her these wordes: "Daughter, the king my master and thy foueraigne Lord, hath by his meffanger commaundedyou to fend vnto him the fayref of my daughters, but
ARIOBARZANES.

for a certaine reasonable respect which at thys time I purpose not to disclose, my mynde is that thou shalt goe, praying thee not to say but that thou thyselfe art of the twayne the fayreft, the concealinge of whiche mine aduife wil breede vnto thee (no doubt) thy great aduauancement, besides the profite and promotion that shal accrue by that thy silence: and the disclosing of the fame may hap to engendre to thy deere father his everlafting hindrance, and perchaunce the depruation of his lyfe: but if so be the Kinge doe beget the with childe, in anye wife keepe close the fame: and when thou seest thy belly begin to swell, that no longer it can be closely kept, then in convenient time, when thou seest the kinge merily disposed, thou shalt tell the kinge that thy fyster is far more beaufull than thyselfe, and that thou art the yonger fister." The wife maiden well vnderstanding her father's minde, and conceiving the summe of his intent, promisde to performe his charge, and so with the Harauilde and honorable traine, he caufed his daughter to be conveyed to the Court. An easie matter it was to deceuie the king in the beauty of that maiden: for although the elder daughter was the faireft, yet this Gentlewoman seemed fo peereleffe in the Courte, that without comparison she was the most beaufull that was to be found either in Courte or countrey: the behauiour and emblance of whiche two daughters were so like, that hard it was to judge whether of them was the eldref: for their father had so kept them in, that feldome they were seene within his houfe, or at no time marked when they walked abroad. The wife of the king was dead the space of one yeere before, for which caufe he determined to mary the daughter of Ario- barzanes, who although she was not of the royall bloud, yet of birth she was right noble. When the kinge sawe this Gen- tlewoman, he judged hir to be the faireft that euer he sawe or heard of by report, whom in the presence of his noblemen he solemnly did marry, and sent vnto her father to appoynt the Dowry of his married Daughter out of hande, and to returne the fame by that messenger. When Arioabarzanes hearde tell of thy vnhoped mariage, right joyfull for that suceffe, sent vnto his Daughter the Dowry which he had promisde to geue to both his Daughters. Many of the Court did maruell, that the kynge beinge in aged
yeares woulde mary fo yongue a mayden, specially the daughter of his Subiect, whom he had banished from the Courte. Some praysted the kinge's Disposition for taking hir whom he fanstied: ech man speakingne his feuerall mynde accordynge to the dyuers customes of men. Notwythstandinge there were diuers that mowed the kinge to that mariage, thereby to force him to confesse, that by takinge of the goods of Ariobarzanes, he might be called Courteous and Liberall. The mariage being folemnized in very fumptuous and princely guife, Ariobarzanes sent to the kinge the like Dowry which before he had sent him for mariage of his daughter, with message to this effect: That for so mutch as hee had Assign-ed to his Daughters two certayne Dowries to mary them to their equal feeres, and feeinge that hee which was without exception, was the husbande of the one, his duety was to beflow vpon his grace a more greater gift, than to any other which shoule haue bene his fonne in law: but the king would not receiue the increase of his dowry, deeming himselfe wel satisfied with the beauty and good condicions of his new spoufe, whom he entertyned and honored as Queene. In the meane time she was with childe with a Sonne (as afterwardes in the birth it appeered) which so wel as shee could shee kept close and secret, but afterwardes perceiuinge her Belly to wax bigge, the greatnesse whereof she was not able to hide, beinge vppon a time with the kinge and in familiar disporte, she like a wife and sobre lady induced matter of diuers argument, amonges which as occasion ferued, she disclosed to the king, that she was not the fayrest of hir father's daughters, but hir elder sister more beautifull than she. The king hearing that, was greatly offended with Ariobarzanes, for that he had not accomplisshed his commandement: and albeit hee loued well his wife, yet to attaine the effect of his desire, he called his Haraulde vnto him, whom he had first sent to make request for his wyfe, and with him returned agayne his new maried spoufe vnto her father, commaunding him to say these wordes: "That for so mutch as he knew himselfe to be vanquished and overcome by the king's humanity, his grace did maruell, that in place of curtefie, he would ufe such contumacy and disobedience, by sending vnto him, not the fairest of his daughters, which he required, but futch
as he himselfe liked to sende: a matter no doubt worthy to be
sharply punished and requited: for which cause the king beinge
not a little offended, had sent home his daughter agayne, and willing
him to sende his eldest daughter, and that he had returned the
Dowry which he gave with his younger." Ariobarzanes receyued
his daughter and the dowry with willinge minde, and sayd theefe
words to the Haraudle: "Mine other daughter which the king my
Soueraygne Lord requireth, is not able presently to goe with thee,
bycaufe in her bed she lieth sicke, as thou mayft manifeftly perceive
if thou come into her chamber: but say vnthe king, that
upon my fayth and allegiancse so soon as she is recovered, I
will sende her to the court." The Haraulde seeing the mayden
lye sicke on her bed, weake and Impotent, not able to travel, re-
turned to the king, and told him of the sicknesse of the eldest
Daughter of Ariobarzanes, wherewithall beinge satisfied, he attended
the successe of his defired sute: the Gentlewoman no sooner beinge
recovered, but the tyme of the other's childbirth was come, which
brought forth a goodly Boy: both the Mother falsely brought to
Bed, and the childe strong and lusty. Whych greatly contented
and pleased Ariobarzanes, and the greater grew his ioy thereof,
for that hee sawe the Childe to be like vnthe kinge his father:
and by that time the yong Gentlewoman was ryfen from her
childbed, the sitter was perfectly whole, and had recovered her
former biewe and beauty, both which beinge richely apparelled,
Ariobarzanes with an honourable trayne, sent vnthe kinge,
instruetinge them first what they ought to say and do. When they
were arrived at the courte, one of the pryuy chamber aduertised
the king that Ariobarzanes had not onely sent one of his daughters,
but both of them. The kynge hearinge and feeinge the liberalty
of Ariobarzanes, accepted the same in gracious part, and deter-
mined for that curtesie, to vse him with futch princely liberality,
as he should be forced to confesse himselfe overcome. And before
the meffanger which had brought the yong gentlewoman did
departe, he caufed to be called before him his only fonne called
Cyrus, vnthe whom he sayd: "Bycause Cyrus the time of thy
yeares bee futch, as meete they be to match the in Mariage, for
hope I haue to see some Progeny proceede of thee before I die,
Vol. II.
my minde is that thou shalt mary this goodly Gentlewoman here, the syfter of my Wyfe. To which hys father's heft, the yong gentleman willingly assented. Then the kyng toke agayn his owne, and ordayned a royall feast, for the mariage of his Sonne, which was celebrated and done with great triumph and solemnity, continuinge the space of 8 daies. Ariobarzanes hearinge these good newes, would not yet acknowledge himselfe to be overcom, and seeinge that his purpose was nowe brought to an extremity, determined to send the little childe, a little before begotten of hys daughter, to the kyng, which fo resembled the kyng's face and Countenaunce as was possible: and therefore causd a cradle to bee made of the fairest Ivory that was to be gotten, emboffed and garnished with pure Golde, adorned and set wyth most precious Stones and Jewels, wherein he causd the childe to be placed, and covered wyth rich clothes of fyneft gold and filke, and together with the Nourice, accompanied with a pompous trayne of Gentle men, he sent him to the kyng, the very time that the solemn mariage should be celebrated: and the kyng beinge in his great Hall, which was hanged with maruellous rich and costly Arras, attended vpon with a great number of his Barons and noble men, hee that had the charge of the conduccion of the child, vpon his knees presented the same before him, lyinge in the Cradle. The king and the Noblemen, meruelling what that did meane expected what the Messenger would say, who holding the Cradle by one of the Pomels, sayd these wordes: "Most renouned and victorious Prince, in the behalfe of Ariobarzanes, my Lorde and your Subie&ct, most humbly I present vnto your maiestie, with al Submiffion and reverence, this gift: and my sayd Lord doth rendre infinite thankes vnto your highneffe, for the great curtefie it hath pleas’d you to vs, by vouchsafinge to entertayne him into your alliaunce: for which not to seeme vmmindfull, this present (and therewithall he opened the Cradle) by mee hee hath sent vnto your maiestie.” When the Cradle was discovered, there appeared a goodly yong Chylde, Smilinge and Laughing vpon his father, the joyfull est figh that euer his father sawe, and so like vnto him, as the halfe Moone is lyke the proportion of the rest. Then every of the Standers by began to say his minde touchinge the resemblaunce of the Chylde
to hys Father, hardly protesting the same without doubt to be his owne. The kyng could not be latiffied with the sight of his child, by reaSon of the great delight he had to looke vpon him, and of the generall opinion whych all men auouched touchinge his lykeneffe. The Chylde agayne vpon the common reioyce made vpon hym, but specially of hys Father, wyth pretay motions and sweete laughinges, reprefentinge two smilinge pyttes in his ruddy Cheekes, crowed many tymes vpon his father, toyinge vp and downe hys tender handes: afterwaRdes the kyng behelde the workmanship of that fumptuous cradle, and demaunded whereof the subftaunce was. Vnto whom the Meffenger described the Hyftory and whole content of that incomparable Jewell: who hearinge that discourse, caused the Queene to be called forth, and by her was further certified of her father's noble difposition, wyth exceeding contentation, and wonderfull reioyce, he receyued the little Chylde, and confessed hym felte in maner vanquifhed: notwylhstandinge seeming to be thus furmounted, he thought if he did not furpaffe this curtefy, his noble and princely minde should be disgraced: wherefore he determined to vfe a kind of magnanimity, thereby eyther to over- come Ariobarzanes, or elfe hauinge apparant occaSon altogether to fall out and to conceyue a mortall malice agaynft hym. The Kynge had a Daughter of the age of 21 yeares, a very fayre and comely Lady (accordinge as her Royall education and princely bringinge vp required) whom as yet he had not matched in mariage, meaninge to beftowe her vpon some kyng or great Monarch with a dowry of Ten hundred thousand Crownes, beides the pryncely and great costly Apparel and Jewells whych her owne mother lyinge vpon her death Bed did bequeathe her. The kyng then purpofinge to excell Ariobarzanes, mynded by couplynge hym wyth hys Daughter, to make hym his fonne in lawe: whych to a Lady of Royall Linage, appeareth some debacinge of her noble bloud, to be matched with a man of inferiour byrth: the lyke to a Man how honourable so euer he be cannot chaunce, if he take a Wyfe of Degree neuer fo Bafe: for if hee be borne of Noble and Gentle kynde, hee doth illuBrate and aduaunce the Woman whom he taketh, all be it thee were of the meaneftr trample of the popular forte, and the Children whych be borne of them
by the Father's means, shalbe Noble and of a gentle kynd: but a woman, although she be most Noble, if she bee married to her inferior, and that her husband be not so Noble, the children that shall be borne of them shall not receive the honour of the mother's flock, but the state of the father's lotte, and so shall be vnnoble. Sutch is the Renurence and Authoritie of the Sexe of man, whereupon doeth ryse the companyon of the wyfe, which doth resemble the man vnto the Sunne, and the Woman to the Moone. For wee see that the Moone of hir selfe doth not glie light, ne yet can yelde any brightness to the darknesse of the Night, if she did not pertake some shining of the Sun, who with his liuely flames at times and places doth brighten the starres, and maketh the moone to shine: even so the woman dependeth of the man, and of hym doth take hir nobility. The kyng therefore thought the match not meete for Ariobarzanes to marry his Daughter, and feared he should incurre some blemish of his house: but for all respect and feare of shame, the emulation whyche hee had to be victourious of his forced curtseie did furpasse. Wherefore he sent for Ariobarzanes to come vnto the Court: who vpon that commaundement came: and so foone as hee was entered the palace, he repayed to do his reverence vnto the kinge, of whom he was welcomed with glad and joyfull entertaynment: and after they had a whyle debated of divers matters, the kyng sayd vnto him: "Ariobarzanes, for so mutch as thou art without a wyfe, we minde to bestowe vpon thee a Gentlewoman, which not onely wee well like and loue, but also is sutch a one, as thou thy selfe shalt be well contented to take." Ariobarzanes aunswered: That he was at his commaundement: and that sutch choyse as please his maiesty, sholde very well content and satisfie him. Then the kyng caufed his daughter, in riche vestures sumptuously attired to come before him, and there openly in presence of the whole Court commaunded that Ariobarzanes should marry her: which with seeming ceremonies being consummate, Ariobarzanes shewed little joy of the parentage, and in apperance made as though he cared not for his wyfe. The Nobles and Gentlemen of the Courte wondred to see the straunge behauiour of the bridegroome, consideringe the great humanity of their Prince towards his Subject, by takinge him for
his Father, and Sonne in lawe: and greatly murmured to see the obstinacy and rudeness of Ariobarzanes, towards the kynge and the Fayre newe maried Spoufe, mutch blaminge and rebukinge hys vnkinde demeanour. Ariobarzanes that day fared as though hee were besides himselfe, voyde of ioy and mirth, where all the rest of the Courte spent the tyme in sport and Triumph, the Ladies and Noble women together with the kynge and Queene themselues, dauncinge and makkinge, vntil the time of night did force eeh Wyghte to Retyre to their Chaumbers. Notwithstandinge the kynge did marke the Gexture and Countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, and after the Banket the Kynge in Solempne guife and great Pompe caufed hys Daughter to bee accompanied wyth a great Trayne to the Lodginge of Ariobarzanes, and to be caried with hir, hir Pryncely Dowry, where Ariobarzanes very Honourably receyued hys Wyfe, and at that Instant, in the presence of all the Noblemen and Barons that wayted vpon the Bride, hee doubled the Dowry receyued, and the same wyth the Ten hundred thoufand Crownes geuen hym by the kynge, hee sent back agayne. This vnmeasured Liberality feemed paffyng Straunge vnto the kynge, and brede in him futch difdayne, as doubtful he was whether to yelde, or to condemne him to perpetuall Banifhment. The kynge thought that the greatnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde was Invincible, and was not able paciently to suffer, that a subieft in matters of curtesie and liberalty, should fiill compare wyth his king and maifter: herewithal the king conceiving malice, could not tell what to fay or do. An eafy matter it was to perceiue the rage and furie of the king, who was fo fore difpleased, as he bare good looke and countenaunce to no man: and becaufe in those dayes the Perfian kings were honored and reuerenced as Gods, there was a lawe that when the king was driuen into a furie, or had conceiued a iuft difpleafure, he shoule manifeft vnto his Counfellers, the caufe of his anger, who afterwards by mature diligence hauing examined the caufe and finding the kynge to be vnjuftly difpleased shoule feke meanes of his appeaing: but if they found his anger and difpleafture to be jufly grounded, the caufe of the fame, according to the quality of the offence, little or great, they shoule punifh, eyther by banifhment or capital death: the fentence of whom
should paffe and be pronounced without appeale. Howbeit Lawfull it was for the Kynge to mitigate the pronounced sentence, eyther in al, or in part, and to diminifh the payne, or clearely to affoyle the party: whereby it evidently appeared, that the Counfellers Sentence once determined, was very iusifice, and the kynge's wyll if he pardoned, was meere grace and mercy. The kynge was conftrayned by the statute of his kyngdome to dicloufe vnto his Counfell the caufe of his displeasure, which particularly he recited: the Counfellers when they heard the reafons of the kynge, sent for Ario-barzanes, of whom by due examination they gathered, that in diuers caufes he had prouoked the kynge's dyspleasure. Afterwards the Lords of the Counfell, vpon the proposed queftion began to argu, by inveftigation and search whereof, in the ende they iudged Ario-barzanes worthy to loose hys head: for that he would not onely compare, but alfo go about to ouertoppe him in thinges vndecent, and to shewe himfelfe discontented with the mariage of his daughter, and vnthankfull of the benefites fo curteously be-flowed vpon him. A cuftome was obferued amonge the Perfians, that in euery acte or enterprize, wherein the feruaunt en-duered to furpaffe and vanquifh his lord and maifter (albeit the attempt were commendable and prayfeworthy) for respect of want of duety, or contempt to the royall maiesty, he should lofe his beft ioynt: and for better confirmation of their judgement, the Counfellers alleaged a certayne difinitiue fentence, re-gestr in their Chronicles, whilom done by the kyngs of Perfia. The caufe was this: one of the kyngs of that Region difpoled to difporte with certayne of his noble men abrode in the Fields, went a Hauking, and with a Faucon to fly at diuers game. Within a while they sprang a Hearon, and the Kynge commaundde that one of the falcons which was a notable swift and foaring Hauke, should be caft of to the Hearon: which done, the hearon began to mount and the facon speedely purfued, and as the Hauke after many batings and intercourse, was about to seaze vpon the hearon, he efpiied an Egle: the foute Hauke feeing the Egle, gaue ouer the fearfull Hearon, and with swift flight fiewe to-wardes the hardy Egle, and fiercely attempted to faze vpon her: but the Egle very floutly defended her felfe, that the Hauke was
forced to let goe hir holde. In the ende the good Hauke, with her sharpe talentes, agayne seazed vpon the Egle’s neck, and wyth her beake strake her starke dead, wherewithall she fel downe amid the company that wayted vpon the king. At the Barons and Gentlemen highly commended and prayd the Hauke, affirminge that a better was not in the worlde, attributing vnto the fame futch prayfe, as they thought meete. The king for all the acclamations and shoutes of the troupe, spake not a worde, but floode musing with himselfe, and did neyther prayfe nor blame the Hauke. It was very late in the eueninge, when the Faucon killed the Egle, and therefore the kinge commaunded eich man to depart to the Citty. The next day the king caused a Goldsmith to make an exceeding payre crowne of golde, apt and meete for the Falcon’s head. Afterwards when he saw time convenient, he ordayned that in the market place of the Citty, a Pearche shoule be erected, and adorned with Tapestry, Arras, and other costly furnitures, futch as Prynces Palaces are bedecked withall. Thither with found of Trumpes hee caused the Faucon to be conveyed, where the kinge commaunded one of his noble men to place the Crowne vpon his head, for price of the excellent pray atchieued vpon the Egle. Then he caused the hangman or common executioner of the Citty, to take the Crowne from the Faucon’s head, and with the trenchant sword to cut it of. Vpon these contrary effects the beholders of this fight were amazed, and began diuerfly to talk thereof. The king which at a window floode to behold this fact, caused silence to be kept, and so opened his princely voice, as he was wel heard speaking these words: “There ought (good people) none of you all to Murmur and grudge at the present fact executed upon the Faucon, bycause the same is done vpon good reason and iust caufe as by proceffe of my discoursse you shall well perceiue. I am perfuaded that it is the office and duetty of euery magnanimous prince, to know the valor and difference betwenee vertue and vice, that all vertuous actes and worthy attempts may be honoured, and the contrary chastifed and punished, otherwise he is not worthy of the name of a Kyng and Prynce, but of a cruel and trayterous Tyrant: for as the prince beareth the title by principality and chiefe, so ought his life chiefly to excell other, whom he gouerneth and ruleth. The
bare title and dignity is not sufficient, if his conditions and mode-
ration be not to that supreme state equivalent. Full well I knew
and did consider to be in this dead Faucon a certayne generofity and
floutnesse of minde, ioyned with a certayne fierce actuity and
nimblenesse, for which I Crowned and rewarded hir wyth thys
golden Garland, bycaufe of the floute slaughter which she made
upon that myghty Egle, worthy for that solemne guife. But when
I considered how boldly and rafhely she aflayed and killed the
Egle, which is hir Queene and Mayftresse, I thought it a part of
Juftice, that for hir bolde and vncomely act, she shoulde suffer the
payne due to hir defehte: for vnlawfull it is for the feruaunte, and
vnduetiful for the subie{t, to irnure his handes in the bloud of his
Soueraygne Lord. The Faucon then hauinge flayne hir Queene,
and of all other Birdes the Soueraygne, who can with rea{on blame
me for cuttinge of the Faucon's head? Doubtlesse none, that
hath re{pect to the quiet state betweene the Prince and Subie{t.”
This example the Iudges alleaged against Ariobarzanes when they
pronounced sentence: and applyinge the fame to him, ordained
that first Ariobarzanes, for his Magnanimity and liberal curtefe
should be Crowned wyth a Laurell Garland, for the generofity of
his minde and exceedinge curtefe, but for his great emulation,
earnest endeouer, and continuall dyeice to contende wyth hys
Prynce, and in Liberality to shew him felfe superior, byfides the
mutteringe speeche uttered agayn{t hym, his head ought to be
strike[n off. Ariobarzanes beinge aduertised of thys seuer{e con-
demnation, hee purposed to suftayne the Venemous Darte of Fort-
ume, as hee had endured other bruntes of that Enuious incon-
stant Lady, and in futch maner behaued and directe[d his Geftes,
and Countenaunce, as no Sygne of Choler or Dy{paye appeared in
him, onely Pronouncinge thys Sentence with ioyfull Cheare in the
pre{ence of many: “Glad I am that at length there ref{eth in me
so mutch to be liberall, as I employ my life and bloud, to declare
the fame to my Soueraygne Lorde, which right willingly I meane
to do, that the World may know, how I had rather los[e my lyfe,
than to faynt and geue ouer in mine accustomed liberality.”
Then callinge a Notary vnto him, he made his Wyll (for {o it was
lawfull by the Pers{ian lawes) and to his Wyfe, and Daughters hee
increased their Dowries, and to his kinsfolke and freendes he bequeathed divers rich and bountifull Legacies. To the kyng he gaue a great number of most precious Jewels. To Cyrus the king's sonne, and his by mariage (besides a great maffe of money) he bequeathed all his Armure, and Weapons, with all his instru-
ments for the warres, and his whole stable of horffe. Laft of all he ordayned, that if (perhaps) his wyfe should be found with chylde, and brought to Bed of a Sonne hee should be his vnierfall heyre: but if a Woman chylde, to haue the dowry that his other daughters had. The rest of his goods and cattel he gaue indifferently to al III. equally to be deuided. He prouided also, that all his feruantes according to their degree, should be rewarded. The day before he should be put to death (according to the custome of Perßa) his prayses and valiant factes, as wel by Epitaphes fixed vpon poafts, as by proclamation, were generally founded throughout the Realme, in such wife as ech wight judged him to be the moft liberall and noble perfonage that was in all the Countrey, and in the borders confininge vpon the fame. And if there had not bene some enuous perfons nere the kyng, which studied and practised his ouerthrow, al other would haue deemed him vnworthy of death. Sutch is enuys the maliciously disposed, that rather than they would see their equals to be in better estimation with the pryncse than themselfes, study and deniue all pollicy eyther by flattery or false surmise to bringe them in dis-
credite, or to practise by false accusation, their vetter subuerion by Death or Banishment. But whiles Ariobarzanes was deposing his thinges in order, his Wyfe and Daughters with his Friends and Cousins, were affected with great sorrow day and night, compla-
nying for the heavy state of that noble Gentleman. The eight day being come (for the lawe allowed that space to the condemned, for disposition of their thynge) a Skaffolde was made by com-
maundement of the king, in the midde of the Market place, al couered with black cloth, and an other right ouer against the fame with Purple and Silk, where the kyng (if he lift) in the mids of the Judges, should fit and the indiment redde, judgement (by the kynges own mouth declared) should be executed, or if it pleased him, discharge and assoyle the condemned. And the
kynge unwillinge to be present, gaue to one of the eldest judges hys full power and authority. But yet sorrowfull that a Gentleman so noble and valiant, his father and sonne in lawe, shoulde finish his life with a death so horrible, would needes that morning before that execution, as well to see the continent and floute ende of Ariobarzanes, as also to take order for his delivery. When the time was come, Ariobarzanes by the Sergeant and Garde was brought vnto the Skaffolde, and there Aperelle in rich Vestures, the Laurel Crowne was set on his head, and so continuinge for a certayne space, the garment and Crowne was taken of agayne together with his other Apparell. The executioner attendinge for commandement to do his office, and lifting vp his Sworde to do the fact, the king desirde to see the countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, who neuer chaunged colour for all that terrour of death. The king beinge the great confancy and invincible mind of Ariobarzanes, spake aloud that all men might heare hym, these wordes: "Thou knowest Ariobarzanes, that it is not I, which haue wroughte thy condemnation, ne yet by enuous defyre haue foughte thy bloude, to brynge thee to thy extremity, but it hath bene thy ill disordred life, and the flatutes of this Realme, which haue founde thee guilty, and thereupon sentence and death pronounced, and execution now ready to be done, and the minister ready to aduance his arm, to play the laft act of this Tragedy: and yetfor that our holy lawes doe geue liberty that I may affoyle and deluyer whom I lift, and them restore to their former flate, if nowe thou wilt acknowledge thy selfe vanquished and overcome, and accepte thy lyfe in gratefull part, I will pardon thee, and restore thee to thyne offyces and promotions." Ariobarzanes, hearyng these wordes, kneeleed downe wyth hys heade declyned, and expeting the blow of the Sworde, lyfted vp hys elfe, and turnynge his face to the kynge, perceyuing his malice not so fore bent against hym as the enuy and malice of his enemies defirde, he determined to proue and vfe the pitiful liberality and fauour of his Soueraigne Lorde, that his Foes by his death might not Triumph, ne yet attayne the thinge, for which so long they aspired. Wherefore in reverent wyfe kneelinge before his majesty, with a floute and perfect voyce sayd these wordes: "Moit vyctorious and mercifull So-
ueraygne Lord, in equall worship and honour to the immortall Gods, 
fith of thy abundant grace and mercy it hath pleased thee to 
graunt me lyfe, I do most humbly accept the same, which if I wyft 
should be prolonged in thy dißgrace and wrath, could not be plea-
saunt vnto me, and therefore do confesse my selfe in curtesie and 
liberality altogether surmounted and overcome. I most humbly 
then do geue thee thankes for preseruation of my lyfe, hopinge 
hereafter to employ the uttermost of myne endeouour for the bene-
fite and honour of thy Crowne and dignity, as readily and without 
supplication made in my behalfe, thou haft vouchesafed to re-
store the same: and fith thy clemency hath renuied me thynfe 
humble vallfall, I befeech thy maiesty to give me leave to say my 
minde, truftinge thereby to do thee to vnderstand the effect and 
caufe of that my former presumption." The kinge made signes 
that he shoule arise and boldly speake the summe of his desire. 
When he ftoode up, silence was proclaymed, who then began to 
speake thefe wordes: "Two things there be, (most sacred Prince) 
which doubtelefe do Resembe the raging Waues of surginge Seas, 
and the mutability of vnstable winde, and yet great is the folly 
of an infinite numbre, which imploie their whole care and dili-
gence to the purfute thereof. These two thinges whereof I speake, 
and be so deereely beloued of flattering Courtiers, are the grace 
and favour of their foueraygne lord, and the luringe loue of Amo-
rous Dames: whych two do fo often beguyle the courtly gentle-
man, that in ende, they engender nought elfe but repentance: and 
to begin with the loue of Ladies, they, as by common experience is 
proued, most commonly do recline to their Inferiours. It is dayly 
seen by to mutch vnhappy proowe, that a yongue Gentleman by 
Byrth noble, and otherwyse riche, vertuous, and indue with many 
goodly gyfts, shall chooſe and worship one for his foueraigne 
Lady and maistrefse, and her shall fereue and honour with no leffe 
fayth and fidelity then is due to the immortall Gods, and shal not 
sicke to employ for her loue and seruice all the possible power 
and trauell he is able to do, and yet she in dispite of all his humble 
endeouer, shall imbrace an other voide of all vertue, makynge him 
poffeffor of that benefite, after which the other seeketh, and shee 
not longe conſtant in that minde, afterwards wil attend to the
first Suter, but in futch mouable and disdaynfull fort, as the 
wendringftarres (through their natural instability) be moued to 
and fro, and him in the ende will suffre to fall headlong into the 
bottomlesse pit of dispayre: and to him that asketh hir the rea 
on of this variety, she maketh none other aunfwere but that her 
pleasure is futch, and wilfull will to dally with her futors: so that 
seldome times a true and perfitt lover can fasten his foote on cer 
tayne holde, but that his life is tossed vp and downe like the 
whirling blastes of inconstant windes. The like succedeth in the 
Courtes of Kings and Princes, he which is in fauoure with his 
foueraigne Lord in al mens eyes, so great and neare, as it seemeth 
the Prince is dispofed to resolue vpon nothing without his aduife 
and counsell, when such fauored person shal employe his whole 
care and industrie to maintaine and encreafe the commenced grace 
of his foueraigne Lord, behold, vpon the sodaine the minde and 
vaine of his Lord is changed, and an other without defert, which 
neuer carked to win good will, is taken in place, cherished as 
though hee had serued him an hundred yeares before: and he that 
was the first minion of the Courte in greateft grace and estima 
tion, is in a moment dispylede, and oute of all regarde: an other within 
ewe dayes after, shal supplie the place of the other twaine, verye 
dyligent and careful to serue a man trained vp in courtly exercife, 
whose mindfull mind shal bee so caring ouer his lord's affayers, 
as vpon the safegard and preseruation of his owne life: but all his 
labour is employed in vayne: and when the aged dayes of his ex 
pired life approch, for the leaft displesure he shalbe thruft out 
without reward for former trauel, that right aptly the Common 
Prouerbe may be applied: the common Courtier's life is like a 
golden miferie, and the faithfull seruant an Affe perpetuall. I 
haue seene my felfe the right wel learned man to serue in Court 
for want of meate, and a blockish beast voyde of vertue, for luft, 
and for merite, aduanced and made a Gentleman: but this may 
chaunce bicaufe hys Lord is not dispofed to vertue, nought esteem 
inge those that be affected with good scinces, and that onely 
for lacke of carefull trayninge vp in youthfull dayes, or else for that 
his minde cannot frame with gentle spyrts, the clofets of whose 
breasts be charged and fraught with infinite loades of learninge,
and haue not bin nofeled in trade of Courtes, ne yet can vse due
courtly speech, or with vnblushinge face can shuffle themselues in
presence of their betters, or commen with Ladies of dame Venus
toyes: or race of birth not mingled with the noble or gentle Sire:
for these causes perhaps that vertuous wighte cannot attain the hap
of fortune's giftes. Which person though he in Court he be not
esteemed, yet in schoolehoufe of good arte he is deemed famoufe,
and for his worthy skil right worthy to be preferred aboue the
heauens. In semblable wife, how oftentimes and commonly is it
seeane that the man perchance which neuer thou fawest before, so
fone as he is seeene of the, sodaynly he is detested lyke a plague,
and the more earneft he is to do the seruice and pleasure, the greater
is thy wrath bent towards him? Contrarywise, som other vpon
the first view shal so content and please the, as if he require the bestow-
ing of thy life, thou haft no power to deny him, thou arte in loute
with him, and let him thwart thy mind and wil neuer so much,
thou carest not for it, all is well he doth: but that these varieties
do proceede from some certayn temprement of bloud within the
body conformed and moued by som inward celestial power, who
doubteth? And surely the foundation of these Courtly mutations,
is the pricking venomous Goade of pestiferous Enuye, whych contin-
ually holdeth the favour of Prynces in ballaunc, and in a mo-
ment hoifteth vp him which was below, and poizeth downe agayne
him that was exalted: so that no plague or poifon is more pestifer-
ous in Courts, than the hurtfull diseafe of Enuy: all other vices
with litle paine and leffe labour may easely be cured, and so pacified
as they shall not hurt thee: but rooted Enuy by any meanes is
discharged, with no pollicye is expelled, ne yet by any Drugge or
medicine purged. Veryly wythout great daunger, I know not
which way the poynant bittes of Enuy can be auoyded: the
proude man in Courte, the arrogant and ambitious, the lofty
minded Foole, more elevate and lustie than Pride it selfe, if rever-
ence bee done to him, if he be honoured, if place be giuen to him,
if he be prayfed and glorified aboue the heauens, if thou humble
thy selfe to him, by and by he will take thee to be his frend, and
wyll deeme thee to bee a curteous and gentle companion. Let
the lacyuious and wanton person giuen to the pleasures and luft
of women, fixing his mind on nothing else but upon fugitive pleasures, if his love bee not impeached, ne yet his wanton toys reprooved, if he be prayed before his Ladie, he will ever be thy friend: the couetous and gluttonous carle, if first thou make hym quaffe a Medicine, and afterwardes byd hym to thy table, the one and other disease is speedily cured: but for the envious person, what Phisicke can be fought to purge his pestiferous humour? which if thou go about to heale and cure, rather muste thou remedye the fame by wafting the life of him that is so possessed, than find caufes of recouerie. And who knoweth not (most facred Prince) that in your Courte there be some attached with that poifonned plague, who feeing me your majestie's humble vassall in greater fauoure with your grace than they, my service more acceptable than theirs, my prowess and exercisef in armes more worthy than theirs, my diligence more industrious than theirs, my advife and counsell more auayleable than theirs, all nine other deeds and doings in better Eftimation than theirs: they I say, dallied in the lap of the cancred witch dame Enuy, by what meanes are they to be recouered? by what meanes their infection purged? by what meanes their mallice cured? If not to fee me depreied of your grace, expelled from your Court, and caft headlonge into the gulfe of death extreme? If I shoulde bribe them with great rewards, if I should honour them with humble reuerence, if I should exalt them aboue the Skyes, if I shoulde employ the vtttermoft of my power, to do them seruice, all frustrate and caft away: they wil not ceaue to bring me into perill, they will not spare to reduce me to misery, they will not sticke to ymage all deuyles for myne anoyance, when they see al other remedies impotent and vnable: this is the poifonned plague which enuenometh all Princes courtes: this is the mischiefe which destroyeth all kyngdomes: this is the monstrie that denoureth all vertuous enterprifes and offendeth eche gentle spirte: this is the dim vale which so overhadoweth the clerenes of the eyes as the bright beams of verity cannot be seene, and so obscureth the equity of iustice, as right from falsihood cannot be discerned: this is the manifest caufe that breadeth a thouand errors in the worke of men: and to draw nere to the effecte of this my tedious talke,
ARIOBARZANES.

briefly, there is no vice in the worlde that more outrageously cor-
rupteth Princes courtes, that more vnfriendly vntwineth frendship's band, that more unhappely subuerteth noble houses, then the poyfone of Enuy: for he that enclineth his eares to the enuious person, he that attendeth to his malignant deuifes, vnpossible it is for him to do any dede that is eyther good or vertuous: but to finishe and end for auoyding of wearines and not to fay your maiesty from your waughtie affayres, I fay that the enuious man reioiceth not so much in his own good turnes nor gladdeth him-
selv so greatlye with his owne commodityes, as hee doth influte, and laugh at the difcommodityes and hinderance of others, at whole profite and gain he foroweth and lamenteth: and to put out both the eyes of his companion, the enuious man careth not to plucke out one of his own. These wordes (moft inuincible prince) I purpofed to speake in the presence of your maiesty, before your gard and courtlyke train, and in the vniuersal hearing of all the people that eech wighte may understand how I not of your maies-
tie's pretended malice, or mine owne committed faulte, but through the venemous tongues of the enuious fel into the laple of your displeaure.” This mofte true oration of Ariobarzanes greatly pleased the noble Prince, and although he felt himself somewhat touched therwith, and knowing it to bee certayn and true and that in tyme to come the same mighte profite all fortes of people, hee greatlye praied and exalted him in the presence of all the assembly. Wherefore Ariobarzanes having recouered his lyfe confessed himselfe to bee vanquished and ouercome by the king, who knowing the valoure and fealty of that noble Gentleman, and louing him with harty affection, caused him to come down from the mourning Scarfode, and to affend the place where he was him-
selv, whom he imbraced and kiffed, in token that al displeaure was remitted: all his auncient offices were restored to him agayne: and for his further aduancement, he gaue him the Cittye of Passagarda where was the olde monument of kinde Cyrus, and made him lieuetenaunt generall of his realmes and dominions, commaundinge euery of his subiects to obey him as himselfe. And so the kyng refed the honourable father in law to Ariobarzanes, and his louinge fonne by mariage crauing stil in al his enter-
pryfes, his graue aduyfe and counfell: and there was neuer thing of any importance done, but his liking or disliking was firste demaunded: Ariobarzanes then returned into greater grace and fauour of his fouerayne lord than before, and for his singular vertue hauing disperced and broken the aimes and malyce of all his enimies, if before he were curteous and liberal after these so stoute adventures, he became more then princely in his dedes, and if sometymes he had done one curteous act now he doubled the same. But such was his Magnanimitye, so noble were his in- deuors, tempred with such meafure and equanimity, as the whole worlde clerely might deferne, that not to contend with his fouerayne lorde but to honour and ferue him, therby to express the maiesty of his Prince, he employed his goodes and lining al which the kinge and fortune had bountifully bestowed vpon him: who vntil his dying day famoufly mayntayned himselfe in the good grace and fauour of his prince, in such wyfe as the kyng more clerely then the shining Sunnebeames, knew Ariobarzanes to bee framed of nature for a chriftalline mirrour of curtefie and liberal- litye, and that more easie it was to bereiue the fyre of heate, and the Sonne of lighte then defpoyle Ariobarzanes of his glorious dedes. Wherfore he ceaflled not continually to honour, exalt and enrych him, that hee might vse the greater liberality, and to say the treuth, althoughse these two vertues of curtefie and Liberality be commendable in all persons, without the which a man truely is not he whereof hee beareth the name yet very fitting and meete for everye ryche and welthie subieeet, to beware how he doth compare in those noble vertues with Princes and great men, which beyng ryght noble and pereles vpon yearth canne abyde no Comparifons.
ARISTOTIMUS THE TYRANT.

THE FIFTH NOUELL.

Lucius one of the garde to Aristotimus the Tyrant of the citye of Elis, fell in love with a faäre mayden called Micca, the daughter of one Philodemus, and his cruelty done vpon her. The stoutneffe also of a noble matron named Megistona in defence of hir husbande and the common wealth from the tyranny of the said Aristotimus: and of other actes done by the subieétes vpon that Tyrant.

You haue heard, or as it were in a manner, you haue beeholden the right images and courteous conditions of two well conditioned persons mutually ech towards other obferued: in the one a Prince-ly mind towards a Noble Gentleman his subieéte: in the other a duetieful obedience of a louing vassal to his soueraigne Lord and Maister: in both of them the true figure of Liberality in liuely orient colours described. Now a contrary plotte, grounded vpon extreame tiranny, is ofred to the viewe, done by one Ariftotimus and his clawbacks againfte his humble subieéts of the City of Elis, standyng in Peloponeffus, a country of Achaia (which at this tyme we cal Morea.) This Ariftotimus of nature was fierce and passing cruell, who by faavour of king Antigonus was made Tyran of that City: and like a Tyran governed his countrye by abufe of his authorithy with newe wronges, and straunge crueltyes vexing and afflictig the poore Cityzens and all hys people: which chaunced not so much for that of himself he was cruell and tyrannous, as for that his counfellours and chiefe aboute him were barbarous and vicious men, to whom he committed the charge of his kyngdome and the guarde of his person: but amonges all his milchiefes wrongfully done by him which were innumerable, one committed agaynst Philodemus (the fame which afterwarde was the cause of the deprivacion of his lyfe and kingdome) is specially remembred. This Philodemus had a daughter called Micca, that not onely for hir chaft qualityes and good condicions whiche vertuoufly flourished in hir but for her extreame and gooldy beautye, was in that city of passig fame and admiration. With this faäre maiden one of the Tyrant's guarde called Lucius fel in loue,
if it deferue to be called loue, and not the rather, as the end ful wel declared, a most filthy and beastly luft: this Lucius was deere belo-ued of Aristotemus, for the siendifh resemblence and wicked nere-nesse of his vile and abominable condicions: and therfore feared and obeyed as the Tyrante's owne perfon: for which caufe this Lucius fent one of the yeomen of the kinge's chamber to commaunde Philodemus at an appoynted hour, al excufes fet apart, to bring his daughter vnto him. The parentes of the mayden hearing this fodayne and fearful mefUAGE, confrayned by Tyrante's forse and fatal necelfity, after many tears and pittious fighes, began to per-feade their daughter to be contented to goe with him, declaringe vnto her the rigour of the magifratre that had fente for hir the extremety that would be executed, and that ther was no other remedy but to obay. Alas, how fore agaynff their willes, with what trembling gefiture, with what horror the good parentes of this tender puiff were affected, to confider the purpose of that dreadefull mefilage, all dere fathers and naturall mothers can tell. But this gentle mayden Micca which was of nature ftrue, and yet vertuousley leffoned with fundry good and holffome infftrufions from hir Infante's Age was Determined rather to Dye, then to fuffer her felfe to be Defloured. This vertuous Mayden fell downe Prostrate at her Father's Feet, and clafping him faft about the Knees, louingly did pray him, and Pitifully befought him, not to fuffer hir to bee haled to fo filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged fword to kill her, that therby she might be rid from the violation of those fleffly and libidinous varlets, faying, that if her virginity were taken from hir, she fhould live in eternal reproch and fhame. As the father and daughter were in these termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delaye, dronke with the Wine of lechery, made impacient and furious, with curfed speede pofted to the house of Philodemus, and finding the maiden prostrate at her father's feete weeping, her head in his lappe with taunting voice and threatning wooordes commaunded prefently without longer delay she fhould ryfe and goe with him: She re-fusing his hafty refquest, and crying out for Father's help, who (God wot) durft not reffit, floode still and would not goe: Lucius feeing hir refufal ful of furie and proude disdaine, began furiously
to hale hir by the garments, vpon whose straggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures of hir head and shoulders, that hir alabaster necke and bosome appeared naked, and without compassion tare and whipte hir flesh on every side, as the bloudy ranne downe, beating that tendre flesh of hirs with manifold and greuous blowes. O vile tyrant, more wood and fauage than the defert beast or mountaine Tigre: could cruelty be so deepling rooted in the hart of man which by nature is affected with reafon's instinct, as without pity to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tendre body of a harmlesse Maide? Can such inhumanity harbor in any that beareth aboute him the shape of man? But what did this martyred maiden for all this force? Did she yeld to violence, or rendre hir selfe to the disposition of this merciless man? No surely. But with so great frownnersse of mind, she suffred those impressed wounds, that no one word founding of sorow, or womanly shriech was heard to found from hir delicate mouth: howbeit the pore father and miferable mother at that rueful and lamentable sight, mowed with inward grief and natural pity, cried out aloude. But when they sawe that neyther playnt nor fayre speech coulde deliver their Daughter out of the hands of that cruell monster, they began with open cryes and horrible exclamacion to implore helpe and succour at the handes of the immortall Gods, thinking that they were vnworthely plaged and tormented. Then the proud and moff barbarous wretch, mowed and disquieted by cholers rage and fume of chafinge Wyne, sodaynly caught the most constant virgin by the hayre of the head, and in her father's Lap did cut her white and tender throte. O deteable fact, right worthy iuft reuenge. But what did this vnfaythfull and cruell Tyrant Aristotimus, when by the blustering bruit of people's rage he heard of this vengeable murder, not only he shewed himselfe contented wyth the fact, but had him in greater regard than before, and towards them which made complaint hereof, greater cruelty and mischye was done and executed. For in open strete, lyke beastes in the Shambles, they were cut and hewed in peeces, which seemed to murmure at thyss bloudy and vnlawfull act: the rest were banished and expelled the cytty. Eight hundred of these exiled persons fled into Etolia (a province adioyninge to Epirus, which now is called
Albania.) Those people so banished out of their country, made
instant fute to Aristotimus to suffer Wyues and children to repayre
to them: but their suite was in vayne, their peticions and sup-
plications seemed to be made to the deafe, and disperfed into the
wyndes: notwithstandinge, within few dayes after, he caufed by
found of trumpet to be openly proclaymed, that it should be lawful
for the wyues and children of the banished to passe wyth their
baggage and furniture to their husbands in Ætolia. This Pro-
clamation was exceeding joyfull to al the women whose husbands
were exiled, which at the leaft by common report were the numbre
of 6 hundreds: and for more credite of that Proclamation, the
wicked Tyrant did ordayne, that al the company shoulde depart
vpon a prefixed day. In the meane time, the joyful Wyues glad
to visit their poore husbands, prepared horfe and wagon, to
cary their proviſions. The appoynted day of their departure out
of that City being come, all of them assembled at a certayne gate
asfeyned for their repayre, who that time together reforted with
their little children in their hands bearing vpon their heads their
garments and furnitures, some on horseback, and some bestowed in
the wagons according as ech of their fates required: when al
things wer in a readinesse to depart, and the gate of the City
opened, they began to iffue forth. They wer no foner gone out of
the City walles, and had left behind them the foile of their natu-
ritu, but the Tyrants guard and Sergeants brake vpon them,
and before they were approched they cried out to fly and go no
further vpon pain of their liues. So the pore amazed women,
contrary to the promife of the Tyrant, wer forced to retire. Which
fodain countremauand was fowefull and woful vnto the afflicted
flock: but there was no remedy, for procede they could not.
Then thofe Termagants and villains caught theyr horfe by the
bridles, and droue back again theyr wagons, prickings the pore
oxen and beasts with theyr fpeares and Iauelins, that horrible it is
to report the tyranny vfed towards man and beft, in such wyfe as the
pore miferable women (God wot) contrary to their defyres, were
forced in difpyte of theyrs teeth to retourn. Som alack fell of
theyr horfe wyth theyr little babes in theyr lappes, and were
miserably troden vnder the horfefeete, and ouerrun with the
wholes of the wagons theyr brains and guts gushting out through the weight and comberance of the cairiage, and (which was most pitiful) one of them not able to help an other, and much leffe to rescue theyr yong and tendre fucking babes, the vyle sergeants forcing ech wight with theyr flaues and weapons maugre theyr desirous mindes to reenter the City. Many died by the constrained meanes out of hand, many were troden vnder the horfefeete, and many gasping betwene life and death: but the greatest saert of the little infants were slaine out of hand, and crusht in pyeces: thofe whych remayned alyue, were commytted to Pryfon, and the goods which they caried wyth them altogther seafed vpon by the tyrant. Thys wycked and cruell facte was most intollerable and greucose vnto the Cytyzens of Elis, wherevppon the holy dames confecrated to the God Bacchus, adorned and garnyshed wyth theyr pryestly Garments, and bearlyng in theyr Handes the sacred mystersyes of theyr God, as Ariftotimus was paffyng through the Streete garded with bys Souldyers and Men of Warre, wente in procelyon to fynde hym oute. The Sergeauntes for the reuerence of thofe religious women disclofed, and gaue them place to enter in before the Tyrant. He seing thofe Women apparelled in that guiife, and bearing in their hands the sacred Bachanal mysteries, floode fil, and with silence heard what they could say: but when he knew the caufe of their approch, and that they wer come to make fute for the poore imprifoned women, sodainly poffesed with a diuelfh rage, with horrible hurly burly, bitterly reprehended his garrifon for sufferinge thofe women to come so neare him. Then hee commaunded that they shoulde be expelled from that place without respect, and condemned euery of them (for their presuming to intreat for such caitiue prisoners in 11. Talents a piece. After these mishiefs committed by the tyrant, Hellanicus one of the pryncipal and beft esteemed perfons of the City, although that he was decrepite, and for age very weake and feeble, cared not yet to aduenture any attempt what soever, fo it might extend to the deliuerie of his countrey from the vnspakeable tyrannie of moft cruel Ariftotimus. To this gray haired perfon, bicause he was of aged yeares, void of children which were dead, this Tyrant gaue no great hede ne yet employed any care, thinking that he
was not able to raise any mutine or tumult in the City. In the mean space, the Citizens, which as I have said before, were banished into Eotlia, practyfing amongs them selves to prove their Fortune, and to seeke al meanes for recovery of their countrey, and the death of Aristotimus: wherfore having leuied and assembl'd certaine bands of Souldiers, they marched forth from their banished seat, and never rested till they had gotten a place hard adjoyning to their City, where they might safely lodge, and with great commodity and advantage besiege the same, and expel the tyrant Aristotimus. As the banished were incamped in that place, many citizens of Elis daily fled forth, and joyned with them, by reason of which auxiliaries and daily assemblings they grew to the full number of an army: Aristotimus certified hereof by his espials was brought into a great chafe and fury, and even now began to preface his fall and ruine: but yet meaning to foresee his beast advantage, went vnto the pryfon where the Wyues of the banished were fast inclosed, and bicause he was of a troublesome and tyrannical nature, he concluded with him self rather to use and intreat those wifes with feare and threates, than with humanity and faire wordes: being entred the pryfon, hee sharply and wyth great fiercenesse commannded them to write vnto their husbands that besieged him without, earneisly to persuade them to give ouer their attempted warres: "Otherwyse (fayd he) if ye do not follow the effect of my commanndement, in your own presence I will first cause cruelly to be flayne al your little Children, tearyng them by piece meale in pieces, and afterwaeres I wyll cause you to be whipped and scourged, and lo to dye a most cruel and shamefull death." At which fierce and tyrannical newes, there was no one woman amongs them that opened theyr mouthes to answere him: the most wycked and vile tyrant seing them to be in such silence, charged them vpon theyr liues to answere what they were disposed to doe: but although they durst not speake a word, yet with silence one beholding eche other in the face, fared as though they cared not for hys threats, more ready rather to dye than to obey his commandement. Megifona then, which was the wife of Timolion, a matrone aswell for hir husband's nobility as hir owne vertue, in great regard and estimation, and the chief amongs
all the Women, who at his comming in would not rise, but kept her place, nor vouchsafing to doe any reverence or honor vnto hym, and the like the bad the rest: in this wyse fitting vpon the ground with vnlofed tongue and liberty of speach, stoutly she anfwered the tyrant's demaund in this manner: "If there were in thee, Ariftotimus, any manly prudence, wisedome, or good discretion, truly thou wouldeft not commaund vs poore imprifoned women to write vnto our husbands, but ratheruffer vs to goe vnto them, and vfe more moderate wordes and myld behaviour, than wherewith of late thou diddeft entertaine vs, by scoffing, mocking, and cruelly dealyng with vs, and oure pore children: and if now thou being voyd of all hope, doeft seeke to persuade by our meanes likewise to deceive our husbands, that be come hither to put theyr Lyues in Peryll for our deliveraunce, I affure the thou vainly begileft thy felfe, for wee henceforth do purpose never to bee deceyued of the: wee require thee alfo to thinke and ftedfaftly beleuee, that our husbands heads bee not fo much bewitched with Folly, as defpying their Wyves and Chyldren, Neglecting their duetyes towards them, wyll, being in this forwardnesse, abandon their pre feruation and geeve ouer the Liberty of theyr countrey: think alfo that they little esteme or wy the regard of vs, and theyr children, in respect of the great contentation they fhall attaine by vnyoking the liberty of theyr countrey from thy pride and intollerable bondage, and which is worfe of al, from that tyranny which neuer people felt the like: for if thou were a king as thou art a tyrant, if thou were a Gentleman borne of noble kind as thou arte a slauke, proceding from the deuil, thou wouldeft neuer execute thy curled cruelty against a feble kind, such as women be, and wereft thou alone ioyned in singular com bat with my valyant and dere beloued husband, thou durft not hand to hand to shew thy face: for commonly it is seene, that the Courtyly Ruyfyan backed on wyth fuch mates as he is himself, careth not what attempt he taketh in hand, and stares with hayre vpright, loking as though he would kil the deuyll, but when he is preaft to seruice of the field, and in order to encountre with his Prynce's foc, vpon the small fway by shocke or pufh that chaunceth in the fight, he is the first that taketh flyght, and lafte that
flangeth to the face of hys ennimy. Such kind of man art thou, for so long as our husbands wer farre of, absent fro theyr Country, not able to rid vs from thy thrall, thou wroughtest thy malyce then against theyr wyues at home, doyng the greatest crueltie towards them and theyr fuckyng babes, that ene deuyl could do vpon the damned fort, and now thou feest them arrived here vnder our country walles, thou flyest and seckest help at women's hands, whose power if it serued them according to their wille, would make thee taft the fruit of thy commytted smart.” And as the would haue proceded further in hir liberal talk, the Casytie tyrant not able to abyde any further speach, troubled beyond measure, preffently commaunded the little child of hir to be brought before him, as though immediatly he would haue killed him, and as his feruants sought him out, the mother espied him playing amongs other children, not knowinge for his small stature and leffe yeres, wher he was becom, and calling him by his name, saide vnto him: “My boy, come hither, that first of al thou mayft lofe thy life, to feele the proufe and haue experience of the cruel tyranny wherin we be, for more grieuous it is to me to see the serue against the nobility of thy bloud, than dismembred and torn in pieces before my face.” As Megiftona stoutly and vnfearefully had spoken those words, the furious and angry tyrant drew forth his gliftring blade out of the sheath, purposing to have sminke the gentlewoman, had not one Cilon the familiar frend of Aristimus sayd his hand, forbidding him to commit an act so cruel. This Cilon was a fayned and counterfayt frend of the tyrant, very conuersant with other his familiar frends, but hated him with deadly hatred, and was one of them that with Hellanicus had conpired against the tyrant. This gentleman then seeinge Aristotimus wyth so great fury to waxe wood agaynst Megiftona, imbraced him, and sayd, that it was not the part of a gentleman proceeding from a Race righte honourable, by any meanes to imbrue hys Handes in Woman's bloud, but rather the signe and token of a cowardly knyght, wherfore he befought him to stay his hands. Aristotimus persuaded by Cilon, appeafe his rage, and departed from the imprisioned women. Not long after, a great prodige and wonder appeared in this fort: before supper the tyrant and his wyfe with-
ARISTOTIMUS THE TYRANT.

But huge contem-bled familiar (although which was confirmed, and tryed for his diviune to declare the signification of this Augurye, which greatly troubled his minde. The Southfayer bad him to be of good chere, for that it did portend the great fauour and lOue which Jupiter bare vnto him. But the prophet of the City whom the Cytizens had wel tryed and proued to be faithfull and trufty, manifefted vnto them the great daunger that hong over the tyrant’s head, fuch as the lyke never before. The confederats which had conspired wyth Hellanicus, made great speede to prosecute theyr enterpryfe, and the next night to kil the tyrant. The very fame night Hellanicus dreamed that he saw his dead fonne to speake vnto him these woords: “What meane you father this long tyme to sleepe, I am one of your fonnes whom Aristotimus hath flayne, know you not that the fame day you attempt your enterpryfe, you fhalbe cap-taine and prince of your country?” By this vifion Hellanicus confirmed, he rofe bytimes in the morninge, and exhorted the conspirators that day to execute the benefit of their country. That time Aristotimus was certified how Craterus the Tyrant of another Citty, with a great army, was comming to his ayde agaynst the Banifhed people of Elis, and that hee was arrived at Olympia, a Citty betweene the mount Offa, and the mountayne Olympus. With whych newes Aristotimus beinge encouraged, thought already that he had put to flight and taken the banifhed persons, which made him to adventure hymselfe abroade wythout Guard or garrifon, accompanied only wyth Cilon and one or two of his familiar frendes, the very fame time that the conspirators were assembled to do the facte. Hellanicus seeing the time so convenient to deliver his beloued countrey by the death of the traiterous tirant, not attending any figne to be geuen to his companions (although the fame was concluded vpon) the luyf old man liftinge
vp his handes and eyes vnto the heauens, with cleare and open voyce cried out to his companions and sayd: "Why stay yee, O my Cityzens and louinge countrymen, in the face of your Citty to finifh this good and commendable act?" At whych words, Cilon was the first which with his brandifling blade killed one of those that wayted vpon the Tirant. Thrafibulus then and Lampidus affayled Ariftotimus, vpon whose fodayne approche, he fled into the Temple of Jupiter, where hee was murdred with a thousand wounds vpon his body, accordingly as he deferred. He beinge thus deferredly slayne, his body was drawn vp and down the freetes, and proclamation of liberty founded vnto the people: whereunto ech Wyght assembled, amonges whom the imprifoned Women also brake forth, and reioysed with their countrey deliuerers of that egregious enterprife, by fires and bankets outwardly disclofinge their exceedinge great joy wythin, and in mid of their mirth the people in great thronges and companies ranne to the Tyrant's Palace, whose Wyfe hearinge the people's noyfe, and certifed of her husband's death, inclofed her selfe in a chamber with her two daughters, and knowinge how hatefull she was vnto the Citizens, with a fastned cord vpon a beame she hong her selfe. The chamber dores being broke open, the people viewed the horrible fight of the strangled Lady, wherewithall not mooed they tooke the two tremblinge Daughters of the Tyrant, and caryed them away, purpofinge to Rauifh and Violate the fame, firfte to faciate their lust with the fpoyle of theire virginitie, and afterwardes to kyll them (thofe gentlewomen were very beautiful and marrigeable) and as they were about to do that fhamefull deede, Megiftona was told thereof, who accompanied with other Matrons sharpelye rebuked theire furye fayinge: that vncomely it were for them which fought to eftablishe a ciuill state, to do such a fhameles act as tyrant's rage would scarce permit. Vpon that noble matron’s authoritye and interception, they ceafted from their filthy fact: and then the woman tooke the virgins out of the people's handes, and brought them into the chamber where there strangled mother was. And vnder standing howe it was decreede that none of the tyrante's bloude shoulde refl a liue: shee turned her face to the two yonge gentlewomen and sayde: "The chiefest
pleasure which I can do vnto you, refteth in this choyfe, that it
shall be laufal for eyther of you to chose what kind of death you
lifth, by knyfe or halter, if you wil to dispatch your liues from the
headles peoples greatter fury, vpon whose two whyte and tender
bodies if they do feaze the goddes do knowe and we do feare the
cruelty and great abuse which they do mean to vfe, I thinke not
for deffyte of you, but for the iuft reuenge of your moft cruell
father’s actes, for the tyrannous life of whom the goddes do thun-
der downe the boltes of their displeasure, afflicting his nearest
blood and bethbeloued wyfe and children, with vengeance poured
from heauens.” Vppon the sentence of this the fatall ende, the
elder mayden of the twayne vnlofed a gyrdle from her middle,
and began to tye the fame to hang hir felle, exhorting her yonger
fifter to do the lyke: and in any wife to beware by sparing of her
life, to incur the beastly rage of the monstrous people, which
cared not to do ech vile and filthy act, vnworthy theyr eftate.
The yonger fifter at thofe wordes, layd bandes vpon the fastened
corde, and befought hir right earneftly first of al to fuffer hir to die.
Wherevnto the elder aunfwered: “So long as it was lawfull for
me to liue, and whiles we led our princely time in our father’s
courte, and both were free from enimie’s danger, all things betwene
vs two were common and indifferent, wherefore the gods forbid
(that now the gates of death be opened for vs to enter, when
with the Ghostes of our deere Parentes our soules amid the infer-
nall fieldes be predefin’d to raunge and wander) that I shoulde
make denyall of thy request. Therfore goe to good fifter mine,
and shrink not when thou feelst the vgly face of her, that muft
confume vs all: but yet (dere fifter) the deadly fight of thee
before my felle, will breede to me the woe and smart of double
death.” When she had fo sayd, she yelded the coller to her fifter,
and counfelled hir to place the fame fo neere the necke bone as
fhee could, that the sooner the halter’s force might stop her breath.
When the vnfearefull yonger fifter was dead, the trembling hands
of the dreadlesi elder maid vntied the girdle from her neck, cover-
ing in comely wife her fenfelesi corps. Then turning hir self to
Megistona, she humbly prayd hir not to fuffer their two bodies to
be feene naked, but fo fone as she could, to bury them both in one
Earthly graue, referring the frutes of their virginity to the mould wherof they came. When she had spoken these wordes, without any stay or feare at all, with the selfe fame corde she strangled herselfe and so finished her fatal dayes. The guiltlesse death of which two tender maydes there was none of the citizens of Elis (as I supposè) so stonye hearted and voyde of Nature’s force, ne yette so wrothe agaynst the tyrant father, but did lament, as wel for the constant stoutenes and manner of their death, as for their maydenlyke behaviour and right honest petitions made to that noble matrone Megisthona, who afterwardes caused the other dames to bury those two bodyes in one graue. O how happy and famous had these two sisters bene, if they had not bene the daughters of so wicked and cruell a father? But parentes offence or childrens trespas ought not to deface the vertuous dedes of their posterity.
TWO ROMANE QUEENES.

THE SIXTH NOUELL.

The marwauylous courage and ambition of a gentlewoman called Tanaquil, the Queene and wife of Tarquinius Priscus the fift Roman king, with his persuasions and policy to hir husbande for his aduancement to the kingdom, her lyke encouragement of Servius Tullius, wherein also is described the ambition of one of the ii. daughters of Servius Tullius the fift Roman king, and her cruelty towards her owne natural father: with other accidents chaunced in the new erected common welth of Rome, specially of the laft Romane king Tarquinius Superbus, who with murder atteined the kingdome, with murder maynteined it, and by the murder and infolent lyfe of his fonne was with al his progeny banished.

Ancus Marcius beynge the fourthe king (after Romulus the first builder of that Cittye) there came to dwell in Rome one Lucumo, a lufty gentleman, ryche and desirous of honour, who determined to continue his habitation there. The same Lucumo was the son of one Demaratus, a Corinthian, that for sedition fled his owne countrye, and dwelt in Hetruria amongethe flocke of the Tarquines: and after he was maried he begat ii. sons, one of them was this Lucumo, and the other was called Aruns. Lucumo was heire to his father, for that Aruns died before leaung his wife gret with child, the father not knowing that his daughter in law was with child, gaue nothing in his wil to his nephew: for which cause the child was called Aruns Egerius Lucumo being the sole heire of his father, maried a noble woman named Tanaquil, and bicause the Thufcans could not abide to see a straunger grow to abundance of welth and authoritie, thee defpised hir owne countrey rather than she would suffer her husband in any wise to be dishonoured. Wherfore the deuyled to forfake the Tarquinians and to dwel at Rome, where she thoughte among that honourable forte and new erected state that her husband beyng stout and valiant shoule attayne some place of refiaunce. For she shal be called to remembrance that Tatius the Sabine, Numa borne of the flocke of Curetes and Ancus, broughte forthe by a Sabine woman.
all strangers, did rayne and became noble and mightye. Thus ambition and desire of honoure easly doth persuade any deuile: wherfore carrying with them all their substance they repaired to Rome. It chaunced when they came to Ianiculum, as he and his wife were sitting in a Wagon, an Eagle hooueringe hir wings ouer Lucumo, suddenlie took away his Cappe, which don she foared ouer the Wagon with great force, then she retourned againe, as though he had bene commaundd by some Celeffyall prouidence, and aptly placed his cappe againe vpon his head, and then foared away vp into the element. Tanaquil conceiving this act to be some Augurie or Prophecie, being cunning in that knowledge (as commonly all the people of Hetruria be) embraced hir husband and willed him to be of good cheere and to expect great honour. And as they were ymaging and consultling vpon these euentes, they entred the City, and when they had gotten a houfe for him and his family, he was called Tarquinius Priicus. His riches and great welth mad e him a noble man amongst the Romans, and through his gentle entertainment and courteous behauior, he wanne the good willes of many, in so much as his fame and good reporte was bruted through out the pallace. At length he grew in acquaintance with the king him selfe, who seeing his liberall demeanor and duetifull service, esteemed him as one of his familiar and dere frends, and both in his warres and also at home he imparted to him the secrets of his counsell, and hauing good experience of his wisedome, by his late will and testament appointed him to be tutor of his children. Ancus raigned xxii. yeres, a man in peace and Warre, in pollicy and vanilice with any of his predeceffours comparable: his children were very yong, and for that caufe Tarquinius was more infant to summon a parliament for creation of a kyng. When the day was come he sente the young children abroade a huntyng, and then ambitiously presumed to demaunde the kyngdome, beinge the first that euer attempted the like. For the better conciliation and obteynyng of the peoples good will, hee vftered his oration: "I do not presume to require a straunge or newe thynge: that was neuer before put in praete, nor yet am the first, but the third stranger and foraine borne that affected and aspired this gouernment: for which con-
fideration there is no caufe why any man ought to mufe or mar-
well more than behoueth. It is evidentl known that Tatius, not
only being a stranger but also an enmy, was made king. Numa
also was made king, being altogether a Forraine and Stranger borne,
not through his owne request, but rather voluntarily accited and
called thereunto by the Romaynes: but for my parte, after I was
able to gourne my selfe, I repayred to dwell at Rome with my
Wyfe, my Children, and all my substance, where I haue spent
the chiefest portion of my lyfe; specially after it was mature and able
to execute ciuile magiftery, which I choæ rather to beflowe at
Rome than at home in myne owne country. I haue learned the
Romane rites and lawes, aswell futch as be meete to serue abroade
in the warres, as also necessary to be praætifed at hoame, at the
handes of mine olde maifter Ancus Martius your late king, a
mayster right worthy and famous in all poynctes to bee followed:
I shewed myselfe an humble and obedient subieæt to the kyng
and in freundhip and familiariy toward others, I contended with
the kyng himselfe." When he had spoken these woordes, which
in deede were very true, wyth the whole conSent of the people
he was fuluted kyng: and as all thyynes succeded his Noble
request, euen so after hee was settled in hys kyngdome, hee gaue
himselfe to amplifie the common wealth: hee chose an hundred
graue persones, which he called the Fathers of the leffer Countyes.
He warred first with the Latines, and wan the Citty of Appiolas,
who bryngynge from thence a greater spoyle and booty than was
looked for, ordayneed richer and more gorgeous Playes than any
of hys predeceæours: hee buylded certayne Galleries and other
places of assembly aboute the Forum, hee walled the City round
about wyth Stone: and as he was doing these things, the Sabines
intuerented him vpon the sodayne, in so much as they were pased
the Ryuer of Anienes before the Romane hoæe was in a readyn-
esse: whyc he was an occasioun of great feare and frayre at Rome.
In the ende after the battayles were ioyned betweene them both,
a cruell and blouddy slaughter was commytted, the victoye falling
to neyther parte. Then the Romanes fought meanes to renue
theyr force, by addyng to theyr armye a further bande of horfe-
men. Wherefore Tarquinius sent to the Rammenfes, Titienfes,
Luceres: to the bandes that Romulus had conscribed, hee added other newe trouipes of horfemen, purpofing that the fame shoulel contynue in memorye of him after hys death: and bicaufe Romu-lus dyd the fame without aduyfe of the Southfayers, one Accius Nauius, the notableft Prophecie in thofe Dayes, wythfode that constitutyon, affyrmyng that it was not lawfull for him eyther to appoynt a newe order or to alter the olde, except the byrdes and auguries did affent thereunto: wherewith the kynge was displeased and deluding that Scyence, faid: “Go to M. Southfayer: tell me now” (quod he) “is it poffeble to bring that to passe which I haue now conceiued in my mynd?” “Yea,” quod the Southfayer, “if you tel me what it is.” “Then” quod Tarquinius, “I haue deuifed that thou shalte pare thine owne skin with a rafer: therafore take thy skin and doe as thy byrdes doe portend and signifie.” And as it was reported he pared his owne Skin in deede: in memory whereof an Image of Accius was ereated, with his Head couered: after that tyme there was nothing attempted without thofe auguries. Notwithstanding, Tarquinius proceeded in thofe confytutyon, and added to the Centurias an other number, for that 1800 horfemen wer conteyned in the three Centurias: the latter addytion was called alfo by the fame name, whych afterward were doubled into vi. Centurias. When hys Numbre was thus increafed, once again he ioyned battell wyth the Sabines, who by a notable pollicy recovered a great victory: and bicaufe the Sabines doubled a fresh onfet without any order of battell or good aduylemcnt, they were ouerthrown, and then confrained to make petition for peace: the City of Collatia, and the Country confining vpon the fame, was taken from the Sabines. The Sabine warres beinge in this forte ended, Tarquinius in triumphaunt maner retourned to Rome. At that time a prodyge and myracleous wonder chaunced to bee feene in the Palace. The head of a Chyld whose name was Seruius Tullius lying a flepe in the palace, was feene to burn. The kyng was brought to fee that myracle: and as one of his feruants was going to fetch water to quench the fie, he was flayed by the Queene, who commaunded that the child shoulel not once be touched vntyll he awaked of hymfelfe: and fo foone as hee rofe
from sleepe, the fire vanythde: then she tooke hir hufbande aside, and sayd: "Do you see this Chyld whom we haue very bafely and negligently brought vp? I affure you fyr (sayd she) he wil be the onely safeguaund and defender of this our doubtfull state, and will be the priferer of our household when it is afflycted: wherefore let vs make much of him, that is lyke to be the ornament and a worthy fty to all our famly." After that they had accompted him amongs the Number of theyr Chyldren, and traded him vp in thofe Arts, which excyte all good dispositions to aspyre vnto honoure, the pleasure of the Gods appeared in shorte tyme: for the child grew to a royall behauior, in so much, as among all the Romane youth there was none more mete to mary the daughter of Tarquinius. This Seruius Tullius, was the fonne of one Seruius Tullius that was a Captaine of a towne called Corniculum, at the apprehension whereof, it chaunced that the sayd Tullius the father was slayne, leaving his wife great with child: the mother being a captiue and bondwoman was deluyered of hir Child at Rome, in the house of Prifcus Tarquinius. After Tarquinius had raigned 38 yeres, the yong man began to grow to great honor and effimation, afwell with the kinge himfelfe, as alfo with the Fathers. Then the Romanes conceiued a hateful indignation against the king, for that he being put in truft to be the tutor and gouernour of Ancus children, displaced them from theyr ryght inheritance, and specially for that he himfelfe was a ftranger, fearyng alfo that the kingdome shoulde not return again to the election of themfelves, but degenerat and grow into feruile bondage. They also caled to remembrance, that the city continued one hundred yeres after the fublation of Romulus, an intier kingdome within one city, and that it was a flame for them to fuffer a bondman, borne of feruile kind, to poffeffe the fame, and would redounde to their perpetuall ignominie, hauing the progenie of Ancus aliue, to fuffer the fame to be open to ftrangers, and bondmen: wherefore they determined to defend the grieue of that iniury, and to be revenged rather vpon Tarquinius, than upon Seruius. In fite, they committed the execution of that fact to two shepheardes choen out for that purpofe: who deuised this pollicy: before the entry into the Palace they fell togyther by the eares, vpon whIch fray at the kinge's

VOL. II.
officers assembled and repaired thither to know the cause of theyr falling out, when they were parted, they appealed to the king, with such exclamation as they were heard to the Palace: beyng called before the king, both of them fell to brauling, and one of them stroued of purpofe to hinder the tale of the other. The king's sergeant rebuked them, commandung them to tel theyr tales in order: when they were a lyttle quieted, one of them beginneth to discouer the tale. And as the king was attentife to heare the plaintif, the other tooke vp a hatchet and threw it at the kyng, and leauing thee weapon stickinge in the wound, they conueyed theymfelues out of the dores. Thofe that wayted upon the kyng, made haft to releue him, and the Sergeantes followed to apprehend the malefactor. Wyth that a hurly burly rose amongs the people, every man maruellinge what the matter shoule be. Tanaquil commaunded the Palace Gates to be shut, and seeketh remedy to cure her husband, as though some hope fayled of his recovery, she called Seruius before her (whych maried her daughter) and shewed vnto him her dead husband, holdinge him fast by the right hande, the intreated hym that he would not suffer the death of his father in the law to be unreuenged, to the intent he might not be ridiculious to the traytours, faying to him further these wordes: "If thou bee a man of thy handes (O Seruius) the kyngdome is thyne and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the handes of other haue committed thy abominable fact: wherefore put forth thy self, and the Gods be thy guide: for they did portend this noble head to be the gouernour of this city, at such tyme as they circumfulted the fame with a fire descending from aboue. Let that heavenly flame excite thy courage: be throughly awaked: we beyng straungers sometymes haue raigned. Thinke and consider what thou art, and not from whence thou camest: if the strangenesse of the cafe do affray the, my counsel from time to time shall relieue thee." The cry and stirre of the people being vnmeasurable, that one could scarce heare an other, Tanaquil opened the windowes that had their prospect to the new way (for the king dwelt at the temple of Iupitor Stator) and then spake to them in thys wyse: "Be of good cheere (good people) the king is but amazed with the sodaineesse of the stroke, the wound is not very deepe, for euen
nowe he is come agayne to hym selfe, and the wounde being opened and dreffed there is good hope of life: I truft within thefe fewe dayes you shall see hym: in the meane time, I pray you to shewe your obedience to Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes, and to doe all other afayres in the abfence of my husbande.” Seruius occupyinge the state and authoritye of the kyng, executed the lawes in fome cafes, and in other fome made the people beleue that he would confult with the king him felle. The death of the king was concealed and kept clofe a certaine fpace til fuch tyme as Seruius had gathered his force about him. After the death of the kyng was difclofed, Seruius being garded with a strong garrifon, toke vpon him to be king, not by the confente of the people, but by the will of the Fathers. The children of Ancus vnderftanding that the kyng was alie, and that Seruius power and force was greate, conveyed themfelues in exile to Suefâ Pometia: and leafe the children of Tarquinius fhould attempte lyke enterpryfe againft him, as the children of Ancus did agayne Tarquinius, hee maryed ii. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns the chyldren of Tarquinius. But yet the deuife of man could not breake the neceffity of fate and conftellatyon, for the hatred conceiued in defire of ambitious gouernment, made all thyngs vnftable and vnfaythfull amongs domeftical frends: but yet to quyet and pacifye the prefent tyme, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cytyes of Hetruria: wherein the Fortune and valiance of Tullius excelled: for when he had given an ouerthrow to the ennemy, leafe the people’s and fathers good will should be withdrawne, he returned to Rome: who then attempted and broughte to paff a notable worke in the common wealth. He instituted a certayne yerely taxe and reuenew, to fatisfiue and dischарge all charges fufteinved in the tyme of peace and warre, with sundry other notable lawes and deuifes for the defence of the publique state. After that he had mustered the whole nombre of the Citizens in the field called Martius, the same amounted to lxxx.m. and as Fabius Pictor faith, there were fo many that were able to beare armure. Then the hilles Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquillie, were added to the Citye. He compaffed the town round about wyth a vamure, enuironyng the fame with a double trench. He deuyded
the Romanes into v. bandes called Claffes, and into Centurias, whych bee bandes of an hundred men. He also builded a temple to Diana, with the helpe and assistaunce of the Latine people. Amongs the Sabines there chaunced an Ox in the Houfe of an Hufbande Man to bee broughte forth, of an huge bignesse and maruellous shape (the hornes whereof were placed at the porche of Diana’s temple for a monument long time after.) The South-layers prophicie that where the same Ox should bee firft sacrificed to Diana, there the Chyefe empire and principall gouernment should remaine: which prophicie came to the knowledge of the Chyefe minifter of Diana hir Temple. One of the Sabin’s expect- ing for a day mete to be employed in that sacrificie, brought the sayne Ox to Rome to the Temple of Diana, placing the same before the altar. The chiefe Minifter calling to remembrance the oracle, and saw that the greatnesse of that sacrificie should be famous, spake to the Sabine these wordes: “What doft thou meane (thou impure Straunger) to prepare sacrificie to Diana, before thou bee purified and clenfed in the lyuelye Riuer of Tiber? Here belowe in this valley the sayne riuer doth runne: go get the hence and waft the.” The Sabine attached with a religious feare, goeth downe to the Riuer, and while he is washing himself a Romane doth offer the Sacrifice, which was right acceptable both to the kyng and his country. The king althoughe that of longe tyme he had raigned, yet vnderstoode that the elder Tarquinius which was maried to one of his daughters, did brag and report eftones that his father in law obteined the gouernment and kingdom without the contenct of the people: wherfore the king through his lyberalty by dyuyding the conquest atchyued of the Ennymye amongs the common people, conciliated theyr favor and good wils: in fo much as he affirmed that he would raigne in de- spite of them all, and that there was no king at any tyme that raigned with a more generall contenct: all whych did nothing diminish the hope and desire of Tarquinius. He had a Brother whose name was Aruns, being of a quiet and gentle disposition. Both they mar- ried two of the king’s daughters, which were of manners and conditions very vnlike. The yonger daughter being the wife of Aruns, the sharper shrew, and fiercer of nature, seeing that hir hufbande
was nothing giuen or plyant to match with hir vngracious deuice or ambicious stomack, attempted hir brother, whose condicion was correspondent to hirs, and sayd vnto him, that he was a Man in deede, and one worthy to be accompted to be borne and proceede of the bloud Royall. Then she began to conteme hir fifter, for that she hauing such a man to hir husbande, would suffer him to neglect fo meete and iuft occaion for recovery of the kingdom. Their natures being of one disposition, as commonly one myfchyef procureth an other, al things began to be disquieted throughge the attempt of that vngracious woman. To be shorte, they two deuyfed meanes, that Aruns hys Brother, and the Elder Tullia hir fifter were flain: which done, they two maried together. The wicked woman ceaft not daylye to animate and prouoke hir husbande from one parricide to an other. And amongst all hir wicked talke and cruel inftigations, she vfed these words: "If thou be that man vnto whom I thinke I am maried, then I wil call the both husband and king: but if thou bee not hee, then the alteratyon is changed to the worfe, and crueltie is matched with cowardife. But why doest thou not put thy felfe in a readines? Why thou commest not newe from Corinthe, or from the Hetrurian Tarquines, to atchieue and conquere newe kingdoms as thy father did. The familiar Gods and the Gods of thy countrey, the nobility of thy father, and thy royal bloud, thy fately feate within thine own houfe, and thy name Tarquinius, do create and make kyng. But if in al these occasions thou doft wante stomacke, why doft thou make the whole Citye conceyue a falfe opinion of thee? Why doft thou not shewe thyfelfe to be the fonne of a king? Auoide hence I fay, and go to the Tarquinius, or to Corinth, retire again to thy firste lynage: thou doft rather refemble thy brother's effe- minate hart, than the valiant stomacke of thy father." With these wordes and futch like, she pricked forward hir husbande, and she hir felf could in no wife bee quiet. Then Tarquinius went forth to the fathers of the leffer countries, and called to theyr remembranunce the benefits vnto them by hys father extended, defiring the like to bee shewed and rendered vnto hym, he allured the yonger sort of the City by giftes and other lyberall rewardes, promifing them if he atteined his purpofe, more frankly to recom-
pence them. By this means the king became odious and offensive to the people. Tarquinius seeing his time, guarded with a bande of Men, entred the market place, wherewith the common people were greatly abashed, then he mounted into the palace, and placed himselfe in the royal seate of the same, cauſinge the Fathers to be cited before hym by the haraulde, vnto whom he repeted the petigree of Seruius, and his first entrance into the kingdom. As he was speakeing these wordes, Seruius in great hafte repayed to the Palace, and fyndyng Tarquinius sitting in his place, sayd to him these wordes: “Why? what is the matter Tarquinius (quod he?) Howe dareft thou be fo bolde fo long as I am liuing to call the Fathers, or yet presume to fit in my feat?” Wherunto Tarquinius fiercely replyed: “That hee possiſed but the roume of his father, which was more mete for a king’s fonne and heyre, than for fuche a bondeaman as hee was, and that hee had long enough abuſed his lorde and maſters.” Wherewithal a great hurly burly and tumult began to rife by the fautors of both parts, fo that he was like to attaine the Garland, which best could daunce for it. Tarquinius forced to giue the laſte aduenture, beyng more luſty and stronger than the other, tooke Seruius by the myddle, and caryinge hym oute of the Courte, threwe hym downe the Staıres, whyche done, hee caufed the Senate to retourne into the Palace. Then the kynge wyth all hys trayne of Offyerers, and other hys ſeruaunts ranne away, and as they were flying, hee was flayne by thosse that Tarquinius fent after to pursue hym, in the streete called Cyprius. Tullia vnderstandyng that Seruius hyr father was flayne, she bafhed not in hir Wagon to come into the market place before all the afsemblye there, called hir husband out of the Court, and boldly was the fyrst that called him king. But being rebuked and commaunded by him to auoid out of that greate throng of people, she retirèd home agayn, and when she was paſſe the upper ende of the faid streete called Cyprius, the wagoner dryuing toward the right hand to the Hill called Exquiliæ, hee flayde the Wagon, and shewed his Ladye the bodye of hyr Father, lyinge ſlarke deade in the streete. In memory of which shamefull and vnnatural faqt, long tyme after ther contynued a Monument: for the fame streete was called Vicus Sceleratus. Some report that
she caused the wagon to be dryuen ouer the dead corps of hir father, wyth the bloud of whom and hir husband, hir wagon being contaminated, she presented the fame to hir Gods: after which abhominable beginnings, like end enfued. This Seruius Tullius raigned xl. yeres. Then Tarquinius began to raigne, vnto whom Superbus was added for his furname: this wicked fonne in law would not suffer the dead body of Seruius to be buried. His confcience being pricked with the abhominable gaine of hys kyngdom, fearying alfo leaft other might conceiue like example, he guarded his perfon with a band of armed men, executing all things wyth force and tyranny, contrary to the aduyse and con-

sents of the Senate and people. He caufed the fautors and frendes of Seruius to be put to death, whereby the numbre of the Fathers was diminished, whose places he suffred none other to supply, of purpofe to bring that honourable order to contempt. He go-

uerned the common welth by his own domestical and priuate Counsel: War, peace, truce, society of the Cyties adioining, he vfed as he lift, without any further affent. The Latines he specially regarded, to the intent that through forreine aide hee might raign in more surety at home, with the chief of which country he ioyned affinity. One Octauius Manilius, a Tufculan born, was the prince and chief ruler of that country, descending from the stock of Vlifes, and the Goddefle Circes, if the fame be true, vnto whom Tarquinius gaue his daughter in mariage: by reafon whereof he conciliated great alliance and frendes. Tarquinius beinge of great authority among the Latines, appointed them vpon a day to assemble at a woode called Ferentina, there to intreat of matters concerninge both the states. To which place the Latines repaired upon the breake of the day, but Tarquinius came not thither till the Sunne was set. During whych time many things were in talke. There was one amonges them called Turnus Her-
donius, whych in Tarquinius abfence had inuyed vehemently agaynst hym, affirminge that it was no maruell though he was called Superbus by the Romanes. For what prouder mock could be infoerd to the Latines, than to make them wayt a whole day for hys pleasure. “Dyuers Princes and Noblemen (quod he) that dwel far of, be come according to the appointment, and he which
tirft allotted the day, is not present. Heereby it moft evidently appeareth in what fort he will vfe vs if he myghte once attayne the foueraynty. And who doubteth in thys so manyest appa-
rance, but that he went about to affect the Dominion of the Latines? If the Romanes haue had iuft caufe to beleue him, and if their Kyngdome had ben but gotten and not violently rapt and stolne by parricide, then the Latines mighte also beleue hym, who being but a firanger to them, had no great caufe to beleue hym. Hys owne subiects do repent the time that ever he bare rule: For some be slayne and heaped vpon the dead bodies of other, some be banished, some haue lost their goods: what other frutes than these maye the Latine people expexte and look for? Therefore if they would be ruled, he required every man to returne home to his owne house, and geue no more attendaunce for the day of Counfel, than he doth which firft appointed the same: But the worde and such like, this sedicious and desperat man declared: Whole talke Tarquinius interunented, and vpon his comming every man converted him selfe to salute him. Then Tarquinius began to excuse his long tariance, for that he was appointed an arbitrator betwene the father and the sonne, for whose reconciliation he was forced to stay that longe space, and to spend the time of that day. Wherefore he appointed the next day. The conceit of which excuse Turnus could not kepe secret, but sayd: that a matter betwene the father and the sonne might be ended in few wordes: for if the childe would not be obedient to his father, some mischye must needs lyght vpon him. Tarquinius vnderstanding these inuictions made againste hym by Turnus, immediatly deuyfeth meanes to kill him, to the intent he myght inculcate like terror to the Latines, that he did to his owne subiects. And bicaufe he was not able to fort his purpose to effect by secrete malice, he attempted to accuse him of Treafon, and suborned (by means of diuers of the Citty of Aricia) his owne man whom with gold he had corrupted to bring in a forged accufation, which was that his maister had prepared in one night a number of men with Munition and weapon to destroy the Nobility of the Latines, of purpose to recouer the principality of the fame. This matter began to be suspicuous, by reafon of the Tumult made the day beefore against Tarquinius, and therefore the people the foner
did credit the case. In fine, Turnus was condeemned, and therefore a new kind of death deuised for him. Who being laide vpon a Hurdle his face vpward, was thrown into the water of Ferrentina. This execution being done Tarquinius reuoked the Latines to Counfel, wherein he praifed them for their Iustice extended vpon Turnus, and then spake these wordes: "I may by an old order and constitution iustlye lay thus much vnto you. The whole nation of the Latines descending from the City of Alba are bounde to obeure that truce which the Albanes wyth all their colonies annexing themselues to the Romane Empyre in the tyme of Tullius Hostilius, were firmely obliged to accomplishe. The renouation whereof will nowe conduce more aduantage and vtylity to them al, than euer it did befoore. For throughse this Truce the Latines shall poffede and participate parte of the prosperus succeffe of the Romane people. Better it were in this fort to ioyne themselues togethers, than to see Desstruccion of either Cities, Depopulacions and spoiles of their countries, whych in the tyme of Ancus (my father then raygnyng) he suffered. The like also (if you do forfake this offer) ye may styll expefte and suffer." The Latines herevnto were foone perswaded, a Day was appointed when the lusieste forte of the\n\nyr Countrie should be ready armed at the wood called Ferrentina. Being ioyned in order of battel, they marched towards the Volsciens, and wanne the Citye of Suefla Pometia, the spoile wherof Tarquinius folde for xx. Talents, impoying the fame vpon the Temple of Iupiter. Afterwards he assaulted the Gabinians, and when he faw he coulde not by force obteyne the fame, he furmised a pollicy. Who seeming to bend him self wholly vpon the building of the Capitole and to set aside the affaires of his warres, deuised with his fonne Sextus, which was the youngest of the three, that he should runne to the Gabinians, and complayne of his father's intollerable crueltie, whych accordingly he did. Who shewing hymselfe as a voluntarye exyle, sayd that hys father had converte\nthys tyrannye from other, and began to execute the fame vpon his owne freendes, and that he was also weary of the presence of his owne chyldren going about to remoue hys domeficall consu\nsants oute of hys howfe, as he had done the like out of the Court, to the intent hee would leaue no offpring or heyre behinde
him to poiffe his kingdome: adding further, that he was escaped even through the midde of his father's weapons and fury, thincking no place better for his safegarde and refuge, than to seeke succour amongs his ennimies. "And bicaufe (quod he) ye shall not be deceived, he is even now preparing of warres against you, and purpofeth vpon the fodaine to fet vpon you. Now if there be no place of abode for me your humble suppliant amongs you, I muft needs wander through Italy, and firft I will attempt the Volfcians, afterwardes the Æquians and Hernicians, tyll fuch tyme as I finde some Nation willing to defend the poore Chylde from the cruell and wicked furye of the Father: and perchaunce (quod he) ye shall wynne hym that may bee an Instrument and courage vnto you all, to repreffe that proude kyng and cruell Natyon." The Gabinians delyberating what was best to be done in this cafe, the young man feemed as though he were offended, and would in al haft depart, and seeke refuge of others, then they curteoufly interteined him: thyse yong man was had in great estimation amongs them, throughe craftye and vaine perfuafions, makynge them beleue that he would conduct their army euen vnder the walles of Rome, with sundry other fained inftigations to bryng hiselfe the more in credite. At length he was choisen captain of their warres, and recovered sundry victories for the Gabinians: whereby the foolife Nation both of the lower and chiefeft fort, beleued that their captayne was sent vnto them by the prouidence of the Gods. He fufteined perill and payne in like fort as the common Souldier did, liberally deuidinge his spoiles and booties amongs them. He was fo well beloved, that his father Tarquinius at Rome was of no greater authority than hee was among the Gabinians. When he thought that he had recovered force enough to anfwer his father's expectation, he sent a poft to Rome to know his father's pleafure, although the gods had giuen him sufficient authority amongs the Gabinians. And bicaufe Tarquinius was doubtful of the truft and fidelity of the messenger, hee would anfwer nothing by worde of mouth, but carying the messenger into a garden, hard adjoyning his house, with a wand which he caried in his hand, he cut of the heads of the higheft Poppies that grew in the garden, meanyng therby that hee shoulde difpatche the
heads of the chiefest and principal in the City. Wherupon the meffanger without anfwer by mouth returned. But by declaryng those signes and circumstances which his father vfed in the garden Sextus conceived his meaning. Then like a naturall fonne, following the stpepes of his father, he cut of the heads of the Gabinian nobility, wherupon fom ran away, vpon whose departure the goods as wel of them as of other that were put to death were devoided. The state of the Gabinians being in this doubtful cafe, void of al counsell and succour, at length was surrendred to the Romanes. Then Tarquinius conclufed peace with the Æquians, and renued a truce with the Thufcanes and wholly bent him felf to the af Fayres of the City. This Tarquinius was the father of him that ruinshed the noble Lady Lucretia: the lamentable hiftory whereof, is recited in my former Tome, by the end of which ftock, remembred in that hiftory, and begining of the fame decribed in this Nouell, may be gathered, what fruyftes Ambytyon and lothfome lufte bryng forth. For Tarquinius Prifcus repairing out of Hetruria, to dwell at Rome, by the ambycyous wyll of hys wyfe aspired and at-chyened the kyngdome, which was by the fundry deuyce of Tullia, the daughter of Seruius Tullius mainteyned, and by the libidinous defire of Sextus Tarquinius, the fomne of Superbus the 6 Romane kyng ended, and the whole race expelled and everlaftingly bani shed out of that City. So meete an example for thofe that breath, and longe after the Rightes, titles, and Kyngdomes of other, as may bee read in any Author. For although the Springe appeare very fresh and lufty, of fome degenerate grifft planted vpon fome auncient ftock, yet the fruyft moft commonly in tafe eateth fromwhat fower, and the Retlifhe in mouth not altog ether fo pleaflaunt, as that which both in foyle and flocke, is duely planted.
THE SEVENTH NOUELL.

The unhappy end and success of the love of King Maffiniffa, and Queene Sophonisba his wyfe.

If men would have afore consideration of theyr owne doings, before they do attempt the fame, or els premeditate and study the scope and success thereof, I do verely beleue that a number would not cast themselves headlong into so many gulfs of miseryes and calamities as they do, specially Noblemen, and Prynces, who oftentimes doe exceede in temerity and rashnesse, by letting the Raynes of theyr own Luftes, to farre to raunge at large, wherein they deeply Plunge thymselfes to theyr great Preiudice and Dishonour, as teacheth thys goodly hyftorie ensuinge, whych declareth that there was a Prynce called Maffiniffa, the Sonne of Gala kynge of Maffezali, (a people of Numidia): who warfaring with the Carthaginians in Spaine agaynft the Romaynes, hauinge first fought honourably agaynft kyng Syphax in Numidia, it chaunced that Gala hys Father dyed, vppon whose death hys Kyngdome was invaunded and occupied by other, wherefore sustayninge stoutly the furges of adversity combatinge wyth hys Enemyes, sometymes getting part of hys Kyngdome, and sometymes losinge, and many tymes molestinge both Syphax and the Carthaginians, was in dyuers Confllicts lyke to be taken or slayne. Wyth thefe hys travelys, impacient of no payne and trouble, he became very Famous and Renoumed, that amongst the people of Affrica, he acquired the name and title of a valiant and puissant Souldier, and of a politique and prouident Captain: afterwards he was generally welbeloved of the Souldiers, bicaufe not like the king's sonne or a prince, but as a private souldier and companion, his conversation and vfull trade of life was amongst them, calling every man by his propre name, cherishing and esteeming them according to their defert, obseruing nevertheless a certaine comelineesse of a Superior: This Maffiniiffe by meanes of one Syllanus being in Spayne, priuely entred acquaintance and familiarity with that Scipio which afterwards was furnamed Afficanus, and who in
those dayes with the authoritie of Proconsul in that province, victoriously subdued the Carthaginians: the same Maffinifla entred league with the Romanes and inviolably so long as he liued observed amity with the Romane people, and lefte the same to his children and posteritie as an inheritance. When the Romanes began warres in Affrica, speedily with that power he was able to make, he repaired to his old friend Scipio: within a whyle after Syphax beyng ouerthrown in battell and taken, Maffinifla and Lælius were sent to surprize the chief city of that kingdom, which sometimes were king Syphax owne, called Cirta. In that city remayned Sophonifba, the wyfe of Syphax and daughter to Hafdrubal of Giscon, who had alyenated hir husband from the Romanes, being in league with them, and by hir persuasions went to aide and defend the Carthaginians. Sophonifba perceiving that the ennimies were entred the City of Cirta: and that Maffinifla was going towards the palace, determined to meete him, to proue his gentlenesse and cortefie, whereupon in the middes of his Souldiers thronge, whych were already entred the Palace, she stoutly thrust, and bouldly looked round aboute, to proue if she could espye by some signes and tokens the personage of Maffinifla. She amongs that prease perceiued one for whose apperel, armure and reuerence don vnto him, semed vnto hir that without doubt the same was the king: and therefore incontinently kneeled downe before him, and pitiously began to speake in this manner: "For so mutch (O puifante prince) as felicity and good fortune, but specially the fauour of the Gods immortall haue permitted, that thou shouldest recover thine auncient kingdome descended vnto thee by righte and lawfull inheritaunce, and therewithall haft taken and vanquished thine ennimi, and now haft me at thy wyll and pleasure to faue or fpyll, I poore wretched myferable woman brought into bondage from Queenelyke state, whilom leading a delicate life in Princely Courte, accompanied with a royall traine of beautifull dames, and nowe at thy mercifull disposition, doe humbly appeale to thy mercye and goodnesse, whose Princely maiesty and comfortable aspect, chereth vp my woefull heart to loke for grace, and therefore am bold thus to presume with most humble voice to implore and crie out, beseechynge thee to reach me
rather my victorious handes to kisse and salute." This Lady was
a passing faire gentlewoman, of flourishing age and comely beha-
viour, none comparable vnto her within the whole region of
Africa: and so much the more as byr pleasant grace by amiable
gesture of complaint did increasе, so much the heart of Massinissa
was delyted, who being lusty and of youthly age (according to
the nature of the Numides,) was easilly intrapped and tangle
in the nettes of Loue: whose glutting eyes were neuer ful, nor fiery
hart was fatified in beholding and wondering at hir moft excel-
 lent beauty: not foreseeing therefore, or taking heed of the daun-
erger effect of beautie's snares, his heart being so fiercely kindled
with the flvangyng flames of loue, who cauing hir to rife, exorted
hir to prosecute hir suppecution: then the began to procede as
foloweth: "If it may be lawfull for me thy pryfoner and bond-
woman (O my foueraign lord) to make requete, I humbly do
befeech thee, by thy royall majestie, wherein no long time past
my husband and I were magnificently placed in so kynglike guise
as thou art now, and by that Numidicall name, common vnto thee
and my husbande Syphax, and by the sauinge Gods and Patrons
of this City, who with better fortune and more ioyfull successe do
receyue thee into the fame, that expelled Syphax out from thence:
it may please thy sacred state, to have pitty on me. I require no
hard and difficult thinges at thy handes, vie thine imperiall
governement ouer me, fuch as law of armes and reason of Warre
require: caufe me if thou wilt, to pyne in cruel Pryson, or do me
to fuch death with torments, as thou lift to vse, the fharp, fierce
and cruel death that any wight can suffre, or Perillus Bull shal
not be dreadfull vnto me, but more deare and acceptable than
wonted life in pleasures led: for no death shal bee refused of mee,
rather than to be rendred into the proud handes of the moft
cruell Romanes. Rather had I taft the trust of a natuue Numidie,
borne with me in Affrike foyle, than the faith of straungers kinde:
I know full well that thou doft knowe what curtsey a Carthagin-
nian and daughter of Hafdrubal, shal surely looke for at the Ro-
manes hands: whose mind is fearfull of nothing more than of
theyr pride and glory intollerable: if thou (my lord) haddest
fisters of thine owne, or daughters of thy royall bloud brought forth
think that they may chaunce (if fortune frown) to slide into the
Pit of aduerse lucke, so well as I am nowe: of that forme Fortune's
wheele is made, whych we dayly see to be vnstable, turninge and
dyvers, that now peace and now warre it promifeth, now euill it
threatneth, now mirth, now forrow it bringeth, now aduauncinge
aloft, now tumbling downe the clymbers up. Let Syphax bee
cleaue and liuely Example to thee, whych couldc neuer finde any
fiedfaft stay vnder the Moone's Globe. He was the mightiext and
the richest kinge that raigned in Africa, and now is the most
miserable and vnlukey wight that liueth on Land. The Gods graunt
that I bee no Prophet or Diuiner of future euill, whose omnipotency
I devoutly befeech to suffer thee and thy pofterity in Numidie
land and most happily to raygne. Vouchsafe then to deliuer me
from the Romanes thraldome, which if thou bee not able safely to
bryng to passe, caufe death (the eafe of al woe) to be inflicted vpon
me." In speaking those words, he tooke the kynges's right hande
and many times sweetly kissee the name. And then her teares
turned to pleasan cheare, in such wife as not onely the mynde
of the armed and victorious Prynce was moued to mercy, but
strangely wrapped in the amorous Nets of the Lady, whereby the
vitour was subdued by the vanquished, and the Lord surpryzed
of his Captive, whom with tremblinge voyce thus he aunswered:
"Make an end, O Sophonisba, of thy large complaynt, abandon
thy conceyued feare, for I wil not onely ridde the from the Ro-
mayne handes, but alfo take thee to my lawfull wyfe (if thou thre-
wyth shalt be content) whereby thou shalt not leade a prifoners
life, but passe thy youthfull dayes and hoarye age (if gods doe
graunt thy life fo long) as Queene vnto a king, and wife vnto a
Romane frend." When he had sayd fo with weeping teares, he
kissee and imbraced her. She by the countenaunce, Sygnes, Geftes,
and interrupted Woordes, comprehending the Minde of the Numide
king to be kindlee with fervent loue: the more to inflame the
name beemoned her self with such heauinesse, as the beastly
heartes of the Hircane Tygres would haue bene made gentle and
dispoiled of al fiercenesse, yt they had beheld her: and againe she
fel downe at hys feete, kissee the armed Sabbatouns vpon the
name, and bedewinge them with hir warme teares. After many
fobbes and infinite sighes, comforted by him, she sayd: "O the the glorie and honor of all the kynges that euer were, bee or shall bee hereafter: O the saffest aide of Carthage mine vnhappy country without defert, and now the present and most terrible astonishment: if my hard fortune and distresse after so great ruine might haue bene relieued, what greater fauour, what thing in all my life, coulde chaunce more fortunate, vnto me, than to bee called wife of thee? O, I blessed aboue all other women to haue a man so noble and famous to husband. O mine aduenturous and moft happy ruine. O my mofte fortunate mifery, that such a glorious and incomparable mariage was prepared for me: but bicaufe the Gods be so contrary vnto me, and the due ende of my life approcheth (my deare fouraygne lorde) to kindle againe in me, my hope half dead, or rather consumed and spent, bicaufe I see my self wrapped in a flate, that in vayne against the pleafures of the Gods, I go about to molest thee: a greate gift (and to say truthe) a right great good turne, I make accomplte to haue received of thee, if mine owne death I should procure by thee, that dyinge by thy means or with thy handes, (whych were more acceptable,) I shoulde escape the feare of the Romaynes thrall and subiection, and this soule deluiered of the fame, should streight passe into the Elyfian fieldes. The final scope of this my humble plaint, is to ryd me from the hands of the Romanes, whose thraldom to suffer I had rather die. The other benefit which thou dost frankly offer to me pore wretch, I dare not desire, mutch leffe re- quire the fame, bicaufe the present flate of my milhap dareth not presume so high. But for this thy pity and compassion joined with louing regard and mind toward me, mightye Ioue with al the other Gods reward and bleffe thy gotten kingdom in long raign, enlarging the fame with more ample bounds to thine eternal re- noun and praiſe: and I do not only render humble thanks for this thy kynd and louing entertainement, but also yeld my self thine own, so long as lyfe gouerneth this caitif corps of mine." These words wer pronounced with such effect, as Maffiniffa was not able for pity to hold his teares, which watred fo his comely form, as the dew therof soaked into his tender heart, and not able a long time to speake, at laft thus she sayd: "Gyue ouer (O my quene)
these cares and thoughts, dry vp thy cries and plaints, make an end of all these dolorous futes, and rejoyce, that frowarde Fortune hath changed hir mind: the Gods no doubt with better succeffe, wil perfourm the rest of thy liuing dais. Thou shalt henceforth remain my Quene and wife, for pledg whereof the sacred Godheads I cal to witneffe. But if perchaunce (which the thundring mighty God aboue forbid) that I shalbe forced to render thee the Romanes prifoner, be well aſfured, that on liue they shall not posſeſſe the.”

For credit and accomplifhment of this promiffe, and in figne of his affured faith, he reached his right hand to Sophonifba, and led hir into the inner lodging of the king’s Palace, wher afterward Maffinifla with himſelf considering how he might perform hys promifed faith, vexed and troubled with a thousand cogitations, feing in a maner his manifeft ouerthrow and ruine at hand, prouoked with mad and temerarious loue, the very fame day in open presence he toke hir to wife, solemnizing that mariage, which afterwardes bred vnto hym great vexation and trouble, meanynge by the fame to haue dyſcharged Sophonifba from the Romanes rule and order. But when Laelius was come and hearde tell thereof, hee fretted and chafed, and wyth threatnyng Wordes command-ed Maffinifla to fend his new maried wife (as the booty and pray of the Romanes) together wyth Syphax, to their captaine Scipio. Notwithstanding, vanquifhed with the supplications and teares of Maffinifla, referring the matter wholy to the judgement of Scipio, he diſpatched Syphax with the other prifoners and bootie, to the Romane campe, and he himſelf remained with Maffinifla for the recouerie of other places of the kingdome, minding not to returne before the whole prouince were brought vnder the Romane subiection. In the meane time Laelius gaue intelligence vnto Scipio, of the succeffe of Maffinifla his mariage: who knowing the fame to be fo haftilye celebrated, was maruellously offended and troubled in Minde, mutche maruellynge that Maffinifla woulde make futch poſthhaft before the comming of Laelius. Yea and vpon the very firſt day of his entrie into Cirta, that hee would confummate that vnaduifed wedding: and the greater was Scipio his diſpleaſure towards Maffinifla, for that the loue which he had conceiued of that woman, was vnſemely and diſhoneſt,
wondering not a little that he could not find out some Lady within the region of Spain of semblable beauty and comlineffe, to please and content his honest and commendable intent: wherfore he judged Maffinifla his fact to be done out of time, to the prejudice and great decay of his honor and estimation. Howbeit like a wife and prudent personage he dissembled his conceived gryefe, expecting occasion for remedye of the same. Now the time was come that Lælius and Maffinifla were sent for to the Campe. But to declare the teares and lamentable talke, the great mone and sighes vttred betwene this new married couple, time would want, and tediousnesse would overcome the Reader. He had scarce lyen with his beloued two or thre Nyghts, but Lælius (to their great grief and forow) claymed hir to bee hys pryfoner. Wherfore verye forowfull and penfue hee departed, and retourne to the Campe. Scipio in honourable wyfe accepted him, and openly before his Captaines and men of warre, gaue thanks to Lælius and him, for their proueffe and notable exploites. Afterwards sending for him vnto his Tent, he saide vnto him: "I do supplie (my dere frend Maffinifla) that the vertue and beneuolence which you saw in me did first of all prouoke you, to tranffrete the straits, to visit me in Spaine, wherein the good will of my valiaunt frend Syllanus did not a little auable, to follicite and procure amity betwene vs. And the same afterwards inducing your constant minde, to retire into Affrica, committed both your selfe and all your goods into my hands and keeping. But I well pondering the quality of that vertue which moued you thereunto, you beinge of Affrica, and I of Europa, you a Numidian borne, and I a Latine and Romane, of divers cuftomes and language different, thought that the temperance and abstinence from venerial pleasures which you haue fene to bee in me, and experience therof wel tried and proued, (for the which I render vnto the immortal Gods most humble thankes) would or ought to have moued you to follow mine example, being vertues which abowe all other I doe most esteme and cherishe. For he that well marketh the rare gifts and excellent benefits wherewith dame Nature hath arraied you, would thinke that ther should be no lacke of diligence and trauell to subdue and overcome the carnall appetytes of temporal beauty:
which had it bene applied to the rare giftes of nature planted in you, had made you a personage to the posterity very famous and renowned. Consider wel my present time of youth, full of courage and youthly luft, which contrary to that naturall race I stay and prohibite. No delicate beauty, no voluptuous declamation, no feminine flattery, can intice my youth and state to the perils and dauners wherunto that heedleffe age is most prone and subject. By which prohibition of amorous passions, temperately raigned and governed, the tamer and subdue of those passions, cloing his breast from lascivious imaginations, and stopping his eares from the Syrenes, and Marmaydes, of that fexe and kinde, gettet a greater glorye and fame, than wee haue gotten by our victory agaynft Syphax. Hanniball the greateft ennimy that euer we Romanes felt, the stoutest gentleman and captain without peere, through the delites and imbracements of women effeminated, is no more the manlike and notable emperor that hee was woult to be. The great exploits and enterprifes which valyantly you haue done in Numidia, when I was farre from you, your care, readineffe, animofity, your strength and valor, your expedition and bold attempts, with all the reste of your noble vertues worthy of immortal prais, I might and could particularly recite, but to commend and extol them my heart and minde shall never be satiffied, by renouacion wherof I should rather giue occasion of blushing, than my selfe could be contented to let them sleepe in silence. Syphax as you know is taken prifoner by the valyance of our men of warre, by reason whereof, him selfe, his wife, his kingdome, hys campe, landes, cities, and inhabitantes, and briefly all that which was king Syphax, is the pray and spoile to the Romane people, and the king and his wife, albeit she was no Citizen of Carthage, and his father, although no captayn of our enemies, yet we must finde them to Rome, there to leaue them at the pleasure and disposition of the Romane Senate and people. Doe you not know that Sophonisba with her toyes and flatteries did alienat and withdraw king Syphax from our amitie and friendship, and made hym to enter force of armes against vs? Be you ignoraunt that she, full of rancor and malice agaynst the Romane people, endeououred to set al Affrica against vs, and now by her
fayre inticementes hath gayned and wonne you, not I say our ennemy, but an ennemy so farre as shee can, with her cruell Inchauntments? What Damage and hurt have lighted vpon dyuers Monarches and Prynces through fugred Lippes and Venemous Woordes, I wyll not spend tyme to recite. With that provocations and conjured charmes shee hath already bewitched your good nature, I wyll not now imagine, but referre the same to the deepe consideration of youre wifdome. Wherefore Maffinifla, as you have bene a Conquerer ouer great nations and provinces, be now a conquerer of your own mind and appetites, the victorie whereof defuereth greater prayfe than the conquest of the whole world. Take heede I say, that you blot not your good qualities and conditions, with the spots of dishonor and pusillanimitye. Obfcure not that fame which hitherto is aduaunced aboue the Regyon of the glytterynge Starres. Let not thys wyce of Femynine Flatterye spoyle the defertes of Noble Chyualrye, and utterly deface those merytes with greater ignomynie than the caufe of that offence is worthye of dispersye."

Maffinifla hearynge these agree and sharpe rebukes, not onely blushed for Shame, but bytterly Weeping, sayde: that hys poor prisoner and wyfe was at the commaundement of Scipio. Notwithstanding, so instantly as Teares coulde suffer hym to speake, he befoughte hym, that if it were poissible, hee woulde gyue hym leaue to obserue hys saythe foolislye assured, bicause hee had made an othe to Sophonisba that with life shee shoulde not bee delyuered to the Handes of the Romanes. And after other talke betweene them, Maffinifla retired to hys pauylyon, where alone wyth manifolde signes, and most bytter teares and plaintes, vettered wyth futch houlinges and outcryes, as they were hearde by thoes whych stode neare hande, hee refted al the daye bewailynge hys presente state: the most part of the nyghte also hee spent with lyke heavynesse, and debating in hys mind vpon diners thoughts and deuifes, more confused and amazed than before, hee could by no means take rest: somtimes he thought to flee and passe the straights commonly called the Pilars of Hercules, from thence to faille to the Fortunate Islandes with his wife; then agayne hee thought with hir to escape to Carthage, and in ayde of that City to serue agaynft the Romanes, somtimes hee proposed
by fworde, poyfon, halter, or som such meanes to end his life and
finish his dolorous days. Many times hee was at pointe by prepared
knife and fworde to pierce his heart, and yet stayed the fame, not
for feare of death, but for preferuation of his fame and honor.
Thus thys wretched and miserable louver burned and consumed in
loue: toffing and tumbling him felfe vpon his bedde, not able to
find comfort to eafe his payne, thus began to say: "O Sophonisba,
my deare beloued wyfe, O the life and comfort of my life, O the
deynty repaft of my ioy and quiet, what shall become of vs? Alas
and out alas I crye, that I shall fee no more thine incomparable
beauty, thy furpaffyng comely face, thofe golden lockes, thofe glis-
tering eyes which a thousand times have darkned and obscured
the rayes and beames of the Sunne it self: Alas I say, that I can
no longer be suffed to heare the pleasaunt harmoyne of thy voice
whofe sweetenesse is able to force Jupiter himselfe to mitigate his
rage when with lightning Thunderbolts and stormie claps in his
greatest furie he meaneth to plague the earth. Ah that it is
not lawfull any more for me to throw thefe vnhappy armes about
thy tender neck, whose whitenesse of face entermingled with
femely rudds, excelleth the Morning Rofes, which by sweete nightly
dewes doe sproute and budde. The Gods graunt that I doe not
long remaine on lyue without thy sweete haunt and company, which
can no longer draw forth this breathing ghoste of myne, than can a
Bodye lyue wythoute like Breathe in it. Graunt (O Myghty Jupiter)
that one graue may clofe vs twaine to lyue among the ghostes and
shadowes that be already past this world for like right lousing
fits, if intent of life be ment to mee without thy fellowship and
deleatable presence. And who (O good God) shall be more bliss-
ful amongst the Elyfian fields, wandryng amids the spirites and
ghostes of departed foules, than I, if there we two may iette and
falte amongs the shadowed friths and forrests huge, befette with
Mirtle trees, odoriferous and sweete? that there we may at large
recount and finge the sweete and fower pangs of thofe our passed
loues without anye fay or let at all: that there I fay we may re-
membre things already done, rejoycing for delights and fighing
for the paines. There shall no harde hearted Scipio bee found,
there shal no marble minded captain rest, which haue not had re-
SOPHONISBA.

gard of Loue's toyes, ne yet haue pitied bitter payns, by hauing no experience what is the force of loue. He then with ouer cruell wordes shal not goe aboue to persuade me to forfaie thee, or to deliuer thee into the Romane handes, to incurre miserable and moft cruell bondage: he shal there neuer checke me for the feruent loue I beare thee: we shal there abide without fuspition of him or any other: they can not seperare vs, they be not able to deuide our sweetest companye. I would the Gods aboue had graunted me the benefite, that hee had neuer arriuied into Affrica, but had ftil remayned in Sicilia, in Italy or Spayne. But what fand I vpou these termes, O I fole and beast! what meanes my drouifie head to dreame futch fanfies? if he hadde not paffed ouer into Affrica, and made war againft kinge Syphax, how shalde I haue euer seene my faire Sophonifba, whose beauty farre furmounteth eche other wight, whose comelines is withoute peere, whose grace infpakeable, whose maners rare and incomparable, and whose other qualities generally disparsceled throughoute dame Nature's mould by fpeach of man can not bee described? If Scipio had not tranfraitied the feas to arriue in Affrike foile, how shalde I, (O onely hope and laft refuge of my desires) haue knownen thee, neither shalde I haue bene thy feere, ne yet my wife thou shouldeft haue ben, but great had ben thy gaine and losse not much, neuer shouldeft thou haue felt the prefent painfull fstate, wherein thou art, thy life (whereof moft worthy no doubt thou art) shoulde not haue lien in ballance poize, or ref ted in doubtfull plignt, which now in choyce of enimies thrall thou maift prolong, or elfe in Romanes handes a praye or spoile by captiue fstate. But I beeech the gods to preuent the choyce to be a Romane pryfoner. And who can thinke that Scipio euer ment to graunt me the life of one, and goeth about to spoile me of the fame? Did not he give me the pardon of one, when he fent me to befeige the City of Cirta, where I found fayre Sophonisba which is my Life? A ftraunge kinde of pardon, by givine me a pardon to di deporte me of the fame. Who euer hard tel of fuch a pardon? So much as if he faid to me, thus: 'Maffinifha, go take the paine to caufe the city yeld, and ranfack it by force, and I wil pardon thee thy lyfe. And not wyth the onely benefite, but with Craefus goods I wil inrich thee, and make thee owner of
the happy foyle of Arrabia, and when I haue fo done and rafed the walles by myne indeuor, wherein myne onely lyfe and ioy did ref, at my retourne for guerdone of that Noble fact, in fteepe of lyfe hee choppeth of my head, and for fayre promyfe of golden mountes, hee strips me naked, and makes mee a Romane flaua: accordyng to whych cafe and flate he deales wyth me. For what auails my Lyfe, if in gryefe and sorrowes guiffe I drown the pleaures of the fame? Doth not he berieue my life and bredes my death by diuiding me from my fayre Sophonisba? Ah Caitife wretch, what lucke haue I, that neither storme nor whirle Wynde could fende him home to Italian Shore, or fet him packing to Sicile land? what ment cruell Scipio, when fo fone as Syphax was taken, he did not ftreight wyse dispatch him to Rome, to present the glorious sight of the Numidian king to the Romane people? If Scipio had not beene here, thou Sophonisba frankly hadft bene mine: for at Laelius hands I could haue found some grace: but surely if Scipio did once fee Sophonisba, and reclined his eyes to viewe hir pereleffe beauty, I doubt not but he would be moued to haue compaffion vpon hir and me, and would judge hir worthy not onelye to be queene of Numidia but of all the prouince beides. But what, do I make this good accompt? The common prouerbe fayth, that he which counteth before his hofte, muft reckon twice: and fo perhaps may be my lot: for what know I if Scipio did wel view hir, whether himselfe would be inamored of hir or not, and fo utterly deprue me of that Iewel? He is a man no doubt as others be, and it is impoffible me think, but that the hardnesse of his heart muft bow to the view of fuch a noble beauty. But (beaft as I am) what mean these wordes? what follies doe I vaunt by finging to the deafe, and teaching of the blyud? O wretch, wretch, nay more than myferable Wretch. Marke the words of Scipio, he demaundeth Sophonisba, as a thing belonging vnto him, for which caufe he fayeth that she is the pray and part of the Romane spoile: but what shall I do? shall I gyue hir vnto hym? He wyll haue hir, hee confraynes me, hee exhorts mee, hee prays mee, but I know full well wherevnto those intreaties tend, and vnder the Graffe what lurking Serpent lieth. Shal I then put into his hands mine own Sophonisba? But before I fo
doe, the armipotent God aboue, with his flashing fires and flamming brands shall thunder me downe into the depth of Hell. The gappyng ground receive my corps, before I yeld to that request, the trampling fleetes of saunge kinde do teare my members in thousand gobbets, the defert beasts consume my fleth, the rauening gripes and carrain kites pick out my tongue and eyes, before I glitte his rauenous mind with that demand to break the fayth which by holy othe I haue promised to performe. O cursed caitif, but what shal I doe then? it behoueth to obey, and in despite of my teeth to do that which the Romane Emperour commandeth. Alas, by thinking vpon that straight and needefull lot, I die a thousand deaths: wherfore of euils to chose the leaft of twaine, and to preserve my plighted faith, O fwete Sophonisba, thou muft die, and by means of thy beloued feere, shalt voyd the yoke of Romans thral, for so it pleafeth vnmindeful Ioua to appoynt. The wretched Heauens by cruel fate have thrown their lot, that I of mine owne mischiefe shal be the minifter. And so (O life most deere) I shal performe the effecte to kepe the fayth whych laft of all, before thy face I did confirme." By this speech and maner of talke, the good Prince bewayled his cafe, excogitating by what means he myght doe to death the thing which aboue al the world he loued best: at length it came vnto his minde to fende hir a draught of poysoned drink, which deuife he had no sooner founde, but he was driuen into a new kinde of fury, and kindled with diflayne, his braynes were on fire with extreme madneffe, and as though Sophonisba had bene before him, hee talked and raued in Bedlemwyfe: somtimes with taunts he checked hir to hir teeth, somtimes lamented hir vnfortunate state, sometimes with pawes displayed, he seemed to rampe into hir face, and then agayne into amorous toies his paffions drove him forth. When I doe thinke what kinde of a man Maffiniffa was, who in deede was a crowned and moft noble king, and who with fuch prudence gauerned his new conquered and recovered kingdoms, and so constantly perfeuered in amity of the Romane people, I pray to God to graunt my frendes and myselfe alfo, not to enter into so intricat and louefome Labyrinth, wherein this Noble Prince was tangled, and wyth more temperaunce to gouerne
our beloved things. But retourninge agayne to this afflicted gentleman Maffinisa. He sent vnto his beloved wyfe and Queene a pot of poyfon to rid hir of hir life: but yet stayinge his messenger, he cried out these words: God forbid that I should commit this infamous murder vpon hir whom I most dearly loue, I would rather conuay hir into the extreme partes of the vnknowne sandy Coafte of Libia, where the countrey is full of venomous beasts and crawling poyfoned Serpents, in which we shalbe fafe and sure from the danger of cruell and inexorable Scipio, by which means he shal neuer fee the rare and divine beauty, which the serpents once beholding, will mitigate and affwage their bitter poyfon, and for whose fake they will not annoy ne yet hurt me hir louing husband and companion: wherefore let vs make haft to flye thither, to auoide the bondage and death prepared for vs: and if so be we be not able to cary with vs gold and filuer, yet shal we not want there fome reliefe to maintayn our liues: for better it is to feede on bread and water, then to liue in perpetual thraldome.

And liuing with thee (fteete wyfe) what pouerty and beggary am not I able to sufayne? The flormes of exile and penury, I haue already suffred: for beinge driuen out of my kingdome many times, I haue repayred to obfcure dens and caues, where I haue hidden my felfe, and liued in the Wilderneffe among the fauage Beasfts. But what meane I thus to fay of my felfe, whom no mifaduenture can affray or myflyke? But thou deare wyfe whych haft ben trayned vp and nourished amongst the delicacies and bankets of the Court, accompaniued wyth traynes of many fayre and noble ladies, liuing lyke a Queene in al kinde of pleasures and delights: what shal I doe wyth thee? I know thy heart will not fuffer thee to follow me, and yet if the fame would ferve thee, from whence shal I procure prefent fhippinge? Vpon the Sea the Roman fleete beares fwinge, vpon the land Scipio wyth hys Army occupieth euer Coaft, and is generall Lord of the field. What then shal I moft miserable and vnfortunate caitefe do? for whileft I am thus makinge my bitter playnts, the night is paft away, day light approcheth, and the bright fhining mornyng beginneth to cleare the earth. And behold yonder commeth the General’s meffanger for Sophonisba, whom I muft eyther deliuer into his hands or
else commit her to present slaughter, being assured that she had rather make choice to dy, than fall into the Laps of the cruel Romans." Whereupon he determined to send hir the poyson, and for very sorrow fell downe vpon the ground like a man halfe deade. Afterwards being come agayne to him selfe, he cursed the Earth, the Ayre, the Fyre, Heauen, Hell, and all the Gods of the fame, and exclaming in lamentable wyfe he called vnto him one of his most faithfull seruants, who according to the custome of those dayes, alwaies kept poyson in store, and sayde vnto him: "Receyue thy Cuppe of Golde, and deliuer the fame with the poyson, to Queene Sophonisba now abiding within the City of Cirta, and tel hir that I with greatest good will would fayne haue kept the mariage knot, and the firste fayth which I plighted vnto hir, but the Lorde of the Fielde, in whose power I am, hath utterly forbidden the fame. I haue affayled all possible meanes to preferue hir my Wyfe and Queene at liberty, but he which commandeth me, hath pronounced such hard and cruel sentence, as I am forced to offend my self, and to be the minister of mine own mischief. Thys poyson I send hir with so dolefull Message, as my poore hearte (God knoweth) doth only fele the smart, being the most sorrowfull prefent that ever was offerd to any fayre Lady. This is the way alone to faue hir from the Romanes handes. Pray hir to consider the worthines of hir father, the dygnity of hir country, and the royal maiesty of the 11. kings hir husbands, and to do as hir mynd and wil shall fanifie beft. Get the hence with all possible speed, and lose no tyme to do thyf Message: for thou shalt carry the bane and present death of the fairest Ladye that euer Nature framed wythin hir fayerst mould." The seruanunt with this commaundment did departe, and Maffiniffa lyke a Chylde beaten with the rodde, wept and cried. The messenger being come to the Queene, and giuing hir the cup with the poyson, declared his cruel ambaflage. The Queene took the poyfoned Cuppe, and sayd vnto the messenger: "Receyue the king thy myafter myne humble thankes, and say vnto hym, that I receyue and Drynke thys Poyfon wyth a wyll fo good, as if hee had commaundmed me to enter in Tryumph wyth Laurel Garlande over myne ennymyes: for a better gifte a husband can not gyue to wyfe,
than accomplishement of assured fayth the funerall weroef shall bee done wyth present obsequie.” And sayinge nothyng else vnto the messinger, shee tooke the Cuppe, and mynglynge well together the poyfon wythin, shee vnfearfully quafft it vp: and when shee had dronke it shee deluyered the messinger hys Cuppe agayne, and layed hir selfe vpon hir bed, commaunding hir gentle-women in comely wyse to couer hir wyth Clothes, and withoute lamentation or Sygne of feminine minde, shee stoutly weighted for approching death. The Gentlewomen which wayted vpon hir, bewayled the ruffull state of their Maystrefe, whose plaints and frcitches were heard throughout the palace, whereof the brute and rumor was great. But the good Queene vanquished with the strong force of the poyfon, continued not long before she died. The messanger returned these beauie newes vnto Mafliniffa, who so sorrowfully complained the losse of his beloued wife, in such wise as many tymes hee was lyke to kyll hymselfe, that hys Soule might haue accompanied the ghoft of hir, whych was beloued of hym aboue all the dearest things of the Worlde. The valiant and wyse capitayne Scipio vnderstanding the newes hereof, to the intente Mafliniffa shoule not commit any cruelty agaynst hymselfe, or perpetrate other vncomely deede, called hym beeore him, and comforted hym wyth the sweetest wordes he could devise, and frendly reproved him. The next day in the presence of al the armie hee highly commended him, and rewarded hym wyth the kyngdome of Numidia, geuing hym many rych Iewels and treafures, and brought hym in great Estimation amongs the Romaynes: whych the Senate and people of Rome very well approved and confirmed with moost ample Priuileges, attributinge vnto hym the title of kyngge of Numidia, and freende of the Romaynes. Sutche was the ende of the vnhappy loue of kyngge Mafliniffa, and of the fayre and lucklesse Queene Sophonisba.
THE EIGHTH NOUELL.

The cruelty of a Kynge of Macedone who forced a gentlewoman called Theoxena, to persuade hir children to kill and poyson themselves: after which fact, she and hir husband Poris ended their lyfe by drowninge.

But now we haue beegon to treate of the stoutnesse of certayne noble Queenes, I wyll not let alfo to recite the Hystory of a lyke vnfearfull dame of Thessalian land, called Theoxena, of right noble Race, the Daughter of Herodicus Prynce of that Countrey in the tyme that Phillip the Sonne of Demetrius was kynge of Macedone, tolde also by Titus Liuius, as two of the former be. Thys Lady Theoxena, first was a notable example of piety and vertue and afterwardes of rigorous cruelty: for the sayd kynge Philip, hauinge through his wickednesse first murdred Herodicus, and by succession of time cruelly done to death alfo the husbands of Theoxena and of Archo hir naturall sister, vnto eyther of them being Wydowes remayninge a Sonne: afterwardes Archo being maryed agayne to one of the principall of their Countrey named Poris, of him she had many children. But when she was dead, the sayd Lady Theoxena hir sister, who was of heart more conftant and stout than the other, still refused the second mariage, although fused vnto by many great Lordes and Princes: at length pityinge her nephewes state, for fere they shoulde fall into the handes of some cruell Stepdame, or that theyr father would not bryng them vp with futch diligence, as tyll that tyme they were, was contented to bee espoufed agayne to Poris, (no lawe that time knownen to defend the fame) to the intente she might trayne vp hir sister's children as her owne. That done she began (as if they were hir owne) to intreate and vfe them louingly, with great care and induftrie: wherby it manifestly appeared that she was not married againe to Poris for hir owne commodity and pleafure, but rather for the wealth and gouvernment of those hir sister's children. Afterwards Philip king of Macedone, an vnquiet Prince, determininge to make newe warres vpon the Romanes (then through-
out the worlde famous and renouned for theyr good fortune) exiled not onely the chiefe and noble men, but almost al the auncient inhabitants of the Cities along the sea coaste of Thessalia, and theyr whole and entier families into Peonia afterwards called Emathia, a Countrey farre distant from the sea, giving their voided Cities for the Thracians to inhabite, as moyst propre and faithful for the Romains warres, which he intended to make: and hearinge also the cursilles and maledicitions pronounced against him by the banished people, and vniversally by al other, thought he was in no good surety, if he caused not likewyse all the fonnes of them, whom a little before he had flayne, to be put to Death. Wherefore he commaunded them to be taken and holden vnder good gard in prifon, not to do them al to be slain at once, but at times now one and then an other, as occasion servd. Theoxena understanding the edict of this wicked and cruell king, and wele remembring the death of hir husband, and of him that was husband to hir fitter, knew wel that hir fonne and nephew incontinently should be demaunded, and greatly fearinge the king’s wrath, and the rigour of his guard, if once they fell into theyr hands, to defend them from shame and cruelty, sodainly applied hir minde vnto a strange device: for she durst to laye vnto hir husband their father’s face, that shee she would kil them with hir owne handes, if otherwise she could not warraunt them, then suffer them to bee at the will and power of kinde Philip. By reafon wherof Poris abhorring so execrable cruelty, to comfort his wife and to faue hys Childrend, promptlyd hir secretelye to transporte them from thence, and caried them him selfe to certayne of hys faythfull Fryendes at Athens, whych done wythoute longe delaye, hee made as though hee woulde goe from Thessalonica to Aenias, to bee at the Solemnytye of certayne Sacrifices, which yearel ye at an appoynted tyme was done wyth greate ceremonies to the honour of Æneas the founder of that Citty, where spendinge the time amonges other in solemne bankets, the thirde watch of the night when euery man was a sleepe, as though he would haue returned home to his countrey with his wyfe and children, priuely embarked himselfe and them, in a ship hired of purpose to passe into Euboea, and not to retourne to Thessalonica. But his intent was cleane altered and chaunged, for his ship was no sooner vnnder faile, but at that instant a contrary winde and tempeft
rofe, that brought him back againe, in despite of their labour, and all the endeavour they were able to doe. And when daye lighte appeared, the king's garriſon descreed that shippe, and manned out a boate, to bring in the fame, which secretly they thoughte was about to escape away, giuing them straight charge, that by no meanes they should returne without her. When the boate drew neare the shipp, Poris bent him self to encourage the mariners to hope vp faile againe, and to make way with their oares into the Sea, if it were possible, to auoide the imminent and prestent daunger, to faue the life of him selfe, his wife and children: then hee lyfted hys handes vp vnto the heauens to implore the helpe and succor of the Gods, which the floute Gentlewoman Theoxena perceiving, and manifestly seeing the Daunger wherein they were, callinge to hir minde hir former determinate vengeance which the ment to do, and beholding Poris in his prayers, he prosecuted hir intente, preparing a poysoned drink in a cuppe, and made readye naked fwordes: al which bringing forth before the Childrens face, she spake these words: "Death alone must bee the revengue of your fiely liues, wherunto there be two wayes, poison or the fworde. Every of you choose which ye lift to haue: or of whether of them your heart shall make the frankeft choice. The king's cruelty and pride you must auid. Wherfore deare children be of good chere, raife vp your noble courage: ye the elder aged boyes, shew now your felues like men, and take the fword into your handes to pierce your tender hearts: but if the bloody smart of that most dreadfull death shal feare and fright your greene and vnripe age, then take the venomed cup, and gulppe by sundry draughtes this poifoned drinke. Be franke and luftie in this your deftene Death, fith the violence of Fortune, by Sea, doeth let the lengthning of your life. I craue this requête of choyfe, and let not the fame rebound with fearfull refufe of thys my craued heft. Your mother afterwardeſe shal pafs that straught, whereof the prayeth hir babes to bee the paftes: ye the vaunt currours, and thee, with your louing fire, shal end and finifhe Philip's rage bent agaynſt vs." When she had spoked these woordes and sawe the enimies at hand, this couragious dame, the deuifer of the death, egged and prouoked theſe yong trembling children (not yet wel resolued what to do) with her encharmed woords in futch wyfe, as in the ende, some dranke the poyfon, and
other strake them felues into the body and by hir commaundement were thrown over board, not altogether dead, and so she set them at liberty by death whom tenderly she had brought vp. Then she imbracing hir husband the companion of hir death, both did voluntarily throw themselves also into the sea: And when the kinge's espials were come aborde the ship, they found the fame abandoned of their praye. The cruelty of which fact did so move the common people to detestation and hatred of the kinge, as a generall curse was pronounced against him and his children, which heard of the Gods aboue was afterwardes terribly revenged uppon his stocke and posterity. Thys was the end of good Poris and his stout wyfe Theoxena, who rather then she would fall into the lapse of the king's furie, as hir father Herodicus, and hir other husbande did, chose violently to dye with hir own hands, and to caufe hir husbande's children and hir owne, to berieue them felues of Lyfe, whych although agaynst the lounging order of naturall course, and therefore that kinde of violence to bee abhorred, as horrible in it selfe, yet a declaration of a stout mind, if otherwise she had ben able to reuenge the same. And what coward heart is that, that dare not vpon such extremity, when it seeth the merciless ennemy at hand, with shining blade ready bent, to sryke the blowe, that without remedye must ridde the fame of breath, especielly when it beholdeth the tremblyng babe, naturally begotten by hys owne kinde and nature, before the face imploring father's rescue, what daftarde heart dare not to offer himselfe, by singular fight (though one to twentye) either by desperate hardinesse to auoyd the same, or other anoyance, aduenture what he can? which in Christians is admitted as a comely fight, rather than wyth that Pagane Dame to do the death it selfe. But now returne wee to describe a fact that passeth al other forced deedes. For Theoxena was compelled in a maner thus to do of meere constraint to eschue the greater tormentes of a tyrants rage and thought it better by chosen death to chaunge hir lyfe, than by violent hands of bloody Butchers to be haled to the slaughter. But thys Hidrusian dame was weary of hir owne life, not for that she feared losse of lyfe, but desperate to think of Fortune's fickle staye: whych if fortune's darlings would regard in time, they would foresee theyr slippery holde.
THE NYNTH NOUELL.

A strange and marvellous use, which in old time was observed in Hidrufa, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a magistrate ordained for that purpose, for every man, and woman that lieth, to kill them selues.

Bandello amounges the company of his Nouels telleth this history: and in his owne person speaketh these words. If I should begin to tell those things which I saw in the tyme that I sayled alongs the Leuant seas, very tedious it would be for you to heare, and I in reporting could not tell which way to ende, because I saw and heard thynges ryght worthy to bee remembred. Notwythstandinge, for satisfaction of dyuers that be my frendes, I will not fliske to rehearse some of them. But first of all one straunge custome, whych in the Romayes tyme was vsed in one of the Ilandes of the sea Aeguem, called Hidrufa, in these dayes by the trauaylers called Cea or Zea, and is one of the Ilandes named Ciclades, whilome full of Populous and goodly Cities, as the ruins therof at this day do declare. There was in olde tyme in that Iland a very straunge lawe and ordynaunce, which many hundred yeares was very well and perfectly kept and obserued. The Law was, that every person inhabitant within the sayd Ile, of what sexe and condition so euer, being through age, infirmity, or other accidents, weary of their lyfe, might chooſe what kind of death that liked them best: howbeit it was prouyded that the partye, before the dooing of the same, should manifest the cauſe that moued him thereunto, before the Magistrate elected by the people for that speciall purpose, which they constituted because they fawe that diuers persons had voluntarily killed themselues upon trifling occasions and matters of little importance: according to whiche lawe very many Men and Women, hardly with so merry chere went to theyr Death, as if they had gone to some bankette or mariage. It chaunced that Pompeius Magnus the dreadfull Romane, betwene whom and Iulius Cæfar were fought the greatest battailes for superiority that euer were, failing by the Sea Aeguem, arryued at Hidrufa, and there
goynge a land vnderstoode of the inhabitantes the maner of that law and how the same day a woman of great worship had obtained licence of the Magistrate to poyson hir selfe. Pompeius hearing tell hereof, was driuen into great admiration, and thought it very fraunge, that a woman which al the dayes of hir life had liued in great honour and estimation, shoule vpon light cause or occasion poyson her selfe fith it was naturally giuen to ech breathying wyght to prolong theyr liuing dayes with the longest threede that Atropos could draw out of dame Nature's webbe. Whervpon he commanded the said matrone to be brought before hym, whose Death for hir vertue was generallye lamented by the whole Countrye. When the gentlewoman was before hym, and had vnderstanding that she was fully resolued and determined to dye, hee began by greate persuasions to exhort hir, that she should not wilfully caft hir selfe away, vpon consideration that she was of lufty yeares, riche and welbeloued of the whole countrey: and how greate pitye it were but shee shoulde renue hir Mynde and gyue hir selfe still to lyue and remayne, till Natural courfe dyd ende and finysh hir life: howbeit his graue and earnest persuasione could not diuert hir from hir intended purpofe. But Pompeius loth to haue hir dye, ceafted not styll to prosecute hys former talke with newe reaasons and stronger arguments. All which shee paciently heard with fixed countenaunce, til at lengthe with cleare voyce and smiling cheere she anwered him in this maner: "You be greatly deceyued (my lord Pompeius) if you do beleue that I wythout very great prouidence and mature aduife goe about to ende my dayes: for I do know and am fully persaued, that eche creature naturally craueth the prolongation and lengthninge of lyfe, and so mutch abhoreth to die, as the defrous to lyue deteseth the poyson whych I haue prepared for confumation of my lyfe. Whereupon as I haue divers times thought, considered and discoursed with my selfe, and amongs many consideraions oftentimes debated in my minde, there came into the same the instabillity and fickle change of Fortune, whose whirling wheele neuer ceafteth, ne yet remayneth stedfaft. It is dayly see how she doth exalte and aduaunce some man from the lowest and bottomeffe Pit, euen to the top of high Heauens, endowinge him with so mutch Substaunce as he can
desire. An other that was most happy, honoured in this world
lyke a God, vnto whom no goods and welfare were wantinge, who
might wel haue bene called in his lyfe, a three times happy and
blessed wyght, fodaynly from his honour and state depriued and
made a very poore man and begger. Some man also, that is both
riche and lufty, accompanied with a fayre wyfe and goodly Child-
dren, lyuinge in great mirth and ioylity, this wicked Lady Fortune,
the deouerer of all our contentations, depriueth from the inef-
tiable treausre of health, caueth the fayre Wyfe to loue an other
better than hir husbannde, and with hir venomous Tooth biteth the
children, that in short space myfferable death catcheth them al
within his dreadfull Clouches whereby he is defrauaded of those
children, whom after his death he purpofed to leaue for hys Heyres.
But what meane I to confume tyme and words in declaration of
Fortune’s vnsteady slay, which is more cleare than the beams of
the Sunne, of whom dayly a Thoufande thoufande examples be
manifest: all histories be full of them. The mighty countyre of
Graecia doth render ample witneffe wherein so many excellent
men were bred and brought vp: who desirous with their finger to
touch the higheft heauen, were in a moment thrownowne:
and so many famous Cities, which gouerned numbers of people,
now at this prefent day we fee to be thrall and obedient to thy
City of Rome. Of these hurtfull and perillous mutations (O noble
Pompeius) thy Romane City may be a most cleare glaffe and Spec-
tacle, and a multitude of thy noble Citizens in tyme past and pre-
fent, may gseeue plentifulfull witneffe. But to come to the caufe of
this my death, I fay, that fyndyng myself to haue liued these
many yeares (by what chaunce I can not tell) in very great pro-
perity, in al which tyme I neuer did suffer any one myffhappe,
but flyll from good to better, haue paffed my time vntil thys daye:
nowe fearyng the frowynyng of Ladye Fortune’s face, and that she
will repente hir long continued fauour, I feare, I fay, leaft the
fame Fortune shoulde chaung hir fiile, and begynne in the middeft
of my pleasaunt life to sprinckle hir poyfoned bitterneffe, and
make mee the Receptacle and Quiuer of hir sharpe and noyfome
arowes. Wherefore I am nowe determined by good aduym, to
rid my selue from the captivity of hir force, from all hir misfortunes,
and from the noyfom and grieuous infirmitie, which miserably be incident to vs mortall Creatures: and beleue me (Pompeius) that many in theyr aged dayes haue left their life with little honour, who had they bene gone in their youth, had dyed Famous for euer. Wherefore (my lord Pompeius) that I may not be tedious vnto thee, or hinder thyne affayres by long discours, I befech thee to geue me leaue to follow my deliberate disposition, that frankly and freely I may be vnburdened of all daunger: for the longer the life doth grow, to the greater annoyfaunce and daunger it is subject.” When she had so sayd, to the great admiration and compassion of all those which were present, with tremblinge handes and fearefull cheare, she quaffed a great Cup of poysioned drynke, the which she brought with hir for that purpose, and within a while after dyed. This was the straunge vse, and order obserued in Hidrufa. Which good counfel of the Dame had the noble and valiaunt captayne followed, no doubt he would have bin contented to have bin brought to order: and then he had not lost that bloudy battel atchieued agaynst hym by Iulius Caesar at Pharsalia in Ægypt. Then hee had not sustayned so many ouerthrowes as he did, then had hee not ben forfaken of his frendes, and in the ende endured a death so miferable. And for so much as for the most part hitherto we haue intreated of many Tragical and bloudy chaunces, respyring now from those, let vs a little touch some medicinable remedies for loue, some leffons for gouvernment and obedience, some treaties of amorous Dames, and hauty Geftes of Prynces, Queenes and other persons, to variate the chaunceable diet, wherewith dyuers bee affected, rellishinge their Stomaches wyth some more pleasaunt Digestions than they haue tafted.
THE TENTH NOUELL.

The dishonest Love of Faustina the Empresse, and with what remedy the same love was removed and taken away.

True and most holy is the sentence, that the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other wyght of Female kinde, of what degree or condition soever she be, be she fayre, fowle, or yl favoured, cannot be endued with a more precious Pearle or Iewell, than is the neate and pure vertue of honesty: which is of such valour, that it alone without other vertue, is able to render her that glistereth in her attire, most famous and excellent. Be she more beautiful than Helena, be she mightier than the Amazon, better learned than Sappho, rycher than Flora, more louinge than Queene Dido, or more noble than the best Empresse and Queene of the worlde, or be she full of any other vertue, if she want the name of chast, she is not worthy so much as to beare the title of honour, nor to be enterayned in honest company. Yee shall peruse hereafter an history of a Countesse of Celant, that was a passing fayre Dame, singularly adorned with Nature's gifts. She was fayre, pleasaunt, amiable, comely, and perchaunce not altogether barrayne of good erudition and learninge: she could play vpon the instruments, finge, daunce, make and compose witty, and amorous Sonets, and the more her company was frequented, the more amiable and gracious the same was esteemed. But because she was unshamfaft and leffe chast, she was voyde of honest regard. Such as bee dishonest, do not onely hurt themselues, but gieue cause to the common people to mutter and grudge at their parentes education, at their husbands governement and institution of their Children, causing them most commonly to leade a discontented and heauy lyfe. Thinke you that Augustus Caesar (albeit he was a victorious Emperour, and led a triumphant raygne) liued a contented life when he saw the two Iulii, one of them his daughter, the other his Niece, to vide them selues like common flrumpets, constrained through their shameful acts to pin, and close vp himselfe, shunning the convercation of men, and once in minde to cut his Daughter's Vaynes
to let out hir Lufty blond? Was not he wont (the teares trickling
downe his Princely Face) to say, that better it was never to haue
children and to be deade without them, than to haue a fruteful
wife and children fo difordred? He termed his Daughter to be a
Carriion lump of flefe, full of ftenche and filthinesse. But if I
lif to speake of women of this age, from noble to vnnoble, from
an Emperor’s Daughter to a Ploughman’s modder, whose liues
do frame after Iulia hir lore, my pen to the flumpes would weare,
and my hande be wearied with writing. And fo likewise it would
of numbres no doubt in these dayes that folow the trace of Lu-
crece line, that hufwisely and chaftly contriue the day and nightes
in pure and Godly exercife. But of the naughty forte to speake,
(leauing to voyde offence, futch as do flourifh in our time) I will
not conceale the Emprefs Meffalina, that was Wyfe to the empe-
rour Claudius, not only vnworthy of Empresse degree, but of the
title of Woman: who being abudef by many, at length arriued
to futch abominable lust, as not contented with dayly adulterous
life, would refort to the common fteues, where the ruffians and
publike harlots haunted, for little hire, and there for vilest price
with eche flawe did humble herfelfe: and at night not satified,
but weared, returned home to hir Palace, not afhamed to difclofe
hir felfe to any that lift to looke vpon hir: and for victory of that
beaftly game, contended with her lyke. But not to lay fo much
of hir as I finde in Plinie his naturall history, in Suetonius, and
Cornelius Tacitus, I leaue hir to hir felfe, bycaufe I haue made
promise to remember the dishonest loue for example fake, which
I read of Faufina, whose beauty of al Writers is vouched to be
most excellent, if excellency of good life had thereunto ben coupled.
She was the daughter and wyfe of two holy and vertuous Empe-
rours, the one called Antonius Pius, the other Marcus Antonius.
This M. Antonius in all vertuous workes was perfect and Godly,
and singulerly louted his wife Faufina, and although she was
infamous to the world, and a Fable to the people, yet he cared not
for the fame, futch was the paffing loue hee bare vnto hir. Leaue
we to speake of hir beaftly behauioir amongst the noble fort,
without regard vnto hir moft noble hufbande, and come wee to
trate of a certaine fauage kind of lust she had to one of the
Gladiatores, which were a certaine sort of Gamsters in Rome, which we terme to be Maisters of defence. She was so far in loue with this Gladiator, as she could not eat, drink, or sleepe, ne take any rest. This Faustina was so vnshamefast, as not regarding hir state, being as I sayde before the daughter and wife of two most worthy Emperors, dyfdayned not to submitte her Body to the Bafenesse of one of the vilest fort, a Rafcal Fencer, and many times would goe to Caieta, a Citie and hauen of Campania, to ioyne hir felfe with the galye flaues there. Hir husbande which loued her dearely, comfortying his feble louing wyfe so well as he coulde, caufed the beft Phyficians he could finde, to come vnto hir for recovery of hir health. But all the deuyfed phyſike of the world was not able to cure her, she was so louesick. In the end knowing by long experience the fauour and loue hir husband bare vnto hir, and knowing that nothing could withdraw his continued minde, she tolde him, that al the torment and payne shee sustaine, was for the loue of a gladiator, towards whom hir loue was so miserably bent, that except she had his company, death was the next medicine for hir difeafe. The good husband whych beyond measure loued his wife, comforted hir with fo louing wordes as he could, and bad hir to bee of good cheare, promifinge hee would provide remedy. Afterwards consultinge with a wife man a Chaldee born, opened vnto him the effect of his wiues difeafe, and how she was louesicke with futch a perfon one of the Gamsters of the City, promifing great rewardes if he could by his secretes sørche out redresse to faue hir life. The Chaldee could tel him none other remedy, but that he must caufe the Gladiator to be flaine, and with the bloud of him to anoint the body of the Empresse, not telling vnto hir what the ointment was: which don, that he must goe to naked bed to hir, and do the act of matrimony. Some Historiographers do write, that the Chaldee use him counsell, that Faustina shoulde drinke the bloud of the Gladiator, but the moft part, that hir body was bathed in the fame. But how so euer it was, it would haue cooled the hottest Gentlewoman's stomack in the world, to be anoynted with like Salue. To conclude the Gladiator was slayne and the medicine made and applied to the Pacient, and the Emperour lay with the Empresse,
and begat hir with childe. And immediatly she forgot the Gladiotor, neuer after that tyme remembiring him. If this medicine were applied to our carnall louinge dames (which God defend) they would not onely follow Faustina in forgetfulnes, but alfo would mislike hir Phisike: and not greatly regard the counsell of futch doctours. By meanes of this medicine and copulation was the Emperour Commodus borne, who rather relembled the Gladiotor than his Father: in whose brest rested a storehouse of mischyefe and vyce, as Herodian and other Wryters plentifully do wryte.
THE ELEUENTH NOUELL.

Chera hid a treasure: Elifa going about to hang her selfe, and tying the halter about a beame found that treasure, and in place thereof left the halter. Philene the daughter of Chera going for that treasure, and busily searching for the same, found the halter, wherewithal dispayre she would have hanged her selfe, but forbidden by Elifa, who by chance espied her, she was restored to part of her losse, leading afterwards a happy and prosperous lyfe.

Fortune, the Lady Regent and Gouerneffe of man’s lyfe, so altreth and chaungeth the state thereof, as many times we see the noble borne from that great mighty port, wherein they be, debased so farre, as either infamously their lyfe is spent in the hungry lap of Dame Penury, or else continued in the ugly lothfom house of Wantonneffe, the stepdame of all honesty and vertue. Sometimes we marke the vnoble ladde that was nooefled in the home-ly countrie aban, or rude ciuile shopp, attaine to that whych the onely honorable and gentle do aspire: and he agayne that is ambitious in climbing vp the turning wheele, thrown down beneth the brink of aduerse luck, welmed in the ditch and pit of black despaire. We note also sometimes that the careleffe wyght of Fortune’s giftes, hath (vnlooked for) his mouth and throte crammed full of promotion and worlde’s delights. Such is the maner of hir fickle sty: whereof this History ensuing, gyueth some intelligence, by remembryng the desfened luck of 2 pore fory girles that were left destitute of desired things, both like to fal into despaire, and yet both holpen with that they most desired: which in this fort beginneth. In the time that Scipio Afric anus had besieged the City of Carthage, Chera that was a widow (dwellinge there) feeinge the daunger at hand wherein the Citty floode, and doubtynge the losse and overthrowe of the same, and that the honor of the dames and womankinde, coulde vneths be safe and harmelesse, determined not to abide the vtermo: and hauinge a good quantite of Gold and precious stones, she bestowed the same in a cafquet, and hid it vpon one of the beames of hir house,
purposede when the fir and daunger was past, to retourne to hir houfe agayne for thoſe hir hidden things. Which done, in the habite of a poore woman with her onely daughter in hir hand that was about 5 or 6 yeares of age, she went out of Carthage, and paffed ouer the Seas into Scicilia, where falling fiche, after she had bene there three or foure yeares, at length died. But before she departed, shee called her Daughter before hir, then about Ten yeares olde, and told hir the place where she had layed hir Casket. And by reafon of the victoy gotten by Scipio, the city was maruellously chaunged, and amongs other things, the houfe of Chera was giuen to a Romane Souldiour that was fo enriched with Nobility of Mynd, as hee was poore of Fortune's Goods. Whych Chera vnderstandyng, was forowfull, and doubted of hir thynge secret-lye beflowed vpon the beame. Wherevpon she fayd vnto hir daughter, that for fo much as their houfe was in the poſſefſion of an other, she ought to be wife and circumspect in the recouverye of hir hidden goods: and that hir death was the more greuous vnto hir, becaufe she muſt leaue hir (fo yong a maiden) vnprouided of frendes for hir good gouernement. But yet shee encouraged hir againe and fayd: that fith neceffity approched, the muſt in childyſhe age, put on a graue and auncient minde, and beware howe shee bewrayed that casket to any perſon, for that of purpofe shee referved the knowledge thereof, to hir felf, that it might ferue for hir preferment, and procure hir a hufband worthy of hir felfe. And the maiden demaundinge the value of the fame, shee told hir that it was worth cc. Talentes, and gaue hir in writing the particulars inclofed within the Caskette, and that the lyke bill shee shoule find within the fame, written wyth hir owne Hande. And so the good woman within a while after dyed, leauyng be- hynde hir the yong mayden hir daughter, that maruellously la-mented the death of hir mother, accordingly as nature taught hir, and ech other reaſonable wyght depruied from their dearest friends. The maiden for hir yeres was very wife, and would difclove to none what her mother had fayd, keeping the writing very care-fully. Not long after Philene (whych was the maiden's name) fell in loue with a Gentleman of Scicilia of greate reputation and authority, who al bee it he faw hir to be very faire and comely,
yet cared not for hir loue in respect of Maryage, for that hee knewe hir to bee poore, and withoute dowrie mete for a Gentleman, ieftyng and mocking to bee hir fixe hir minde on him, for defyre to haue him to hir husbande, that was a personage fo noble and rich: which refuall pierced the hearte of the tender maiden, becaufe she sawe hir selfe forlaken for nothynge else, but for want of goods: which made hir to think and confider, howe thee myght recouer the riches that hir mother had layed vp in Carthage. It chaunced as the was in this meditation, the daughter of him to whom the House of Chera was giuen, called Elifé, was likewyse enamoured of a noble yong gentleman in Carthage, who becaufe Elifé was the daughter of a Souldiour, and not very rich, in like manner laughed and iefted at hir loue, no lesse than the other did at Philene. Notwithstanding Elifé attempted all meanes possible to induce the yong man to loue hir, but hir practice and attempts tended to none effect. And laft of all, defirous to haue a resolute answere, and thereby vnderstode, that he would rather dye than take hir to Wyfe, she fell into despayre and cursed fortune, and hir fate, that she was not borne riche enough to match wyth hir choosen Gentleman, and that the being poore, must fall in loue wyth fuch a personage: whereupon she miserably tormented hir selfe, still bewaylinge hir vnhappy lucke, that shee could not win him to be hir husband, for which only intent and purpose she loued him. And this amorous passion incredibly growing in hir, the rootes whereof be planted in the refleffe humor of melancholy, and wanting all hope and comforte to stay that Ranke and Rammife weede, it fo increafed in her, as thee frantick in raging loue gaue hir selfe ouer to the spoyle of her self: and to rid her from the grieue, she determined to kill hir selfe, imagining which way she might do the same. At length she was resolued, with hir father's sword to peeerce hir body: but hir heart not suluing hir thereunto, deuised by the halter to end her lyfe, saying thus to herselfe: "Thys death yet shal do me good, that the cruel man may know that for his sake I haue done this fact: and if his heart be not made of Iron or Steele, he can not chose but forrowe and lament, that a poore mayde which loued him better than hir owne lyfe, hath made futch wretched
ende onely for his cruelty." Elifa concludinge vpon this intent, prepared a Halter: and being alone in her house, in the chamber where the Casket lay vpon the beame, placed a toole vnder the fame, and began to tye the halter about the beame: in doinge whereof, she espied the casket, and reached the fame vnto hir, who feeling it to be heavy and weighty, immediatly did open it, and founde the Byll within, which Chera had written with his owne hand, agreeable to that which she had deliuered to hir daughter, wherein were particularly remembred the Jewels and other riches fast clofed within the casket. Who disclosing the bagges wherein the gold and Jewels were bound vp, and seeing the great value of the fame, wondred thereat, and joyfull for that fortune, hid the rope which she had prepared for hir death, in the place where she found the casket, and with great gladnesse and mirth went vnto hir father, and shewed him what she had found, whereat the father rejoyced no leffe, then his daughter Elifa did, because he sawe himselfe thereby to be discharged of his former poore life, and like to proove a man of inestimable wealth and substance: and sawe likewise that the poore wench his daughter, by the addition of those riches, was like to attayne the party whom shee loued. When he had taken forth those bagges and well surued the value, to the intent no man might suspect the fodayne mutation of his estate, tooke his daughter with him, and went to Rome, where after he had remayned certayne monethes, hee returned to Carthage, and began very galantly to apparell himselfe, and to keepe a bountifull and liberall house. His table and port was very delicate and Sumptuous, and bys Stable stored wyth many fayre Horffe, in all poynetes theewinge himselfe very Noble and rich: by which fodayne change of state, the whole Citty beleuued that he had brought that wealth from Rome. And because it is the common opinion of the vulgar fort, that where there is no riches, there is no nobility, and that they alone make men noble and gentle (a foolyshe Opinion in deede proceedinge from heads that be rash and light) the people markynge that porte and charge kept by the Soulidiour, conceyued that he was of some noble house. And throughout the whole Citty great and solemne honour was done vnto him: whereupon the young Gentleman, with whom
Elifa was in love, began to be ashamed of herself, that he had disdained the maiden. Whych mayden seeing hir Father's house to be in such reputation, made sute to her father, that he would procure the Gentleman to bee hir husband. But hir father wylled hir in any wyfe to kepe secret hir desire, and not to seeme her selfe to bee in love, and wyfely tolde hir, that more meete it was that she shoulde bee solicited by hir, than shee to make sute or request for mariage: alleaginge that the leffe desirous the gentleman had bene of hir, the more deare and better beloved shee shoulde be to hym. And many tymes when hys Daughter was demaunded to Wyfe, he made aunswere that matrimony was a state of no little importance, as enduring the whole course of Lyfe, and therefore ought well to bee considered and wayed, before any conclusion were made. But for all these demaundes and aunswers, and all these stops and stayes, the mayden was indowed with an honest dowry, and in the end her lover and shee were married, with so great pleasure and satisfaction of them both, as they deemed themselues happy. In the meane time while these things were done at Carthage, Philene in Scicilia toke thought how she might recouer her goods geuen to her by her mother, defirous by their meanes alfo to fort hir earnest and ardent love to happy successe. And debatinge with her selfe (as we haue sayd before) howe she might obtayne them, because the house was in possession of an other, thought it to bee agaynst reasone and order, that although she had lost hir house, yet hir goods ought to be restored vnto hir, which were hir onely mayntenance and reputation, and the fittest instrument that should conduct her love to happy ende. And hearinge tell that the Father of Elifa the possessor of hir mother's house liued at Carthage in great royalty and magnificence, thought that if by some sleight and policie she founde not meanes to enter the house without suspicition, hir attempt would be in vayne: determined therefore to goe to Carthage, and to secke service in that house, counterfaytinge the kynde and habite of a Page. For she considered, that if she went thither in order and apparell of a mayden, she shoulde incur the perill of her virginity, and fall into the lapfe of divers other daungers, purposed then to go thyther in maner of a Page and lacky. And
when she had in that fort furnishe that hirselfe, she passed the Seas, and arrived at Carthag. And seeking service about the City at length chamuced to be retayned in a house that was next neigbour to the Souldier, and because this wench was gentle and of a good disposition, was well beloved of her maistre, who being the frend of Elifa, hir Father many times sent vnto him divers presents and gifts by Philene, wherevpon she began to be acquainted and familiar with the seruantes of the house, and by her oft repayre thither viewed and marked every corner, and vpon a time entred the chamber wherein hir Mother Chera olde hir, that she had bestowed hir goods, and looking vpont the Beames epied by certayne Signes and tokens, one of them to be the same where the Casket lay: and therewithal wel satified and contented, verily suppossed that the casket still remayned there, and without further businesse for that time, expected some other season for recovery of the same. In the ende, the good behauour and diligence of Philene, was so liked of Elifa, as hir father and she made fute to hir maistre to giue hir leave to serue them, who bycause they were his friends, preferred Philene vnto them, and became a page of that house. And one day secretly repayrynge into the chamber, where the treasure lay mounted vpon a stoole, and fought the beame for the casket: where she found no casket, but in place where that lay, the halter, wherewithal Elifa would haue strangled her self. And searching all the parts of the Chamber and the beames, and finding nothing else but the halter, she was surprized with such incredible sorrowe, as she seemed like a stock, without spiryte, voice or life. Afterwardes, being come againe to hir selfe, shee began pitifully to lament and complayn in this maner: "Ah wretched Philene, vnder what vnluckie signe and planet was thou begotten and borne? whyth what offence were the heauens wroth, when they forced thee to pierce thy mother's wombe? Could I poore creature when I was framed within the moulde of nature, and fed of my mother's substance within hir wombe, and afterwards in due time brought forth to light, commit such crime, as to prouoke the celestiall impressions to conspire agaynst my Natiuity, to brynge mine increased age into such wretched state and plighte wherein it is now
wrapped?  No, no, my faulte was nothing, it was parent's offence,  
if any were at all: for many times we see the innocent babe  
afflicted for the father's guilt.  The Gods do punish the posterity,  
for som facrilege or notorious crime committed by progenitors: 
their manner is not to suffer heynous faultes vnreuenged: their  
juiffe cannot abide such mischief vncorrected for example fake:  
of fareth it by me.  Firit my father died, after wardes my Mother  
a widow was druen to abandon natuie foyle, and seeke reliefe in  
forrain land: and leaung that wherewith we were possesse in ene-
 mies keping, were forced a simple life to leade among ftraunger.
And my mother, yelding forth hir ghost, made me beleue that thee  
had hidden great treaures here: and I unhapy wench thinking  
to obteine the pray, haue wandred in counterfeit kind, and fetche-
ed many a bitter figh, vntil I came into this place: and the thing  
I hoped for, which myght haue bene the meanes and ende of all  
my care, is turned to nothyng: a casket transformed into a halter:  
gold and Jewels into a piece of rope?  Is this the mariage dowry  
(Philene) thou art like to haue to match with him whom thou fo  
derely loueft?  Is this the knot that fhall conioyne you both in  
yoke of man and wife?  Ah wretch and miserable caitife, the goods  
thy mother layd vp for thee, for maintenance of thy rest, and  
safegarde of thine honour, and for the reputation of thy noble  
houfe, wherof thou camft, is now bereued from thee: they that  
kepe this stately houfe, and beare their lofty port amid the best,  
haue despoiled thee pore wench of that after which thou didft  
vainly trauayle.  But what remedye now?  fith thy wicked lot  
dothe thus fall out, fith thy cruel fate is loth thou shouldest at-
teine the thing on whych thy mind is bente, and fith thy painfull  
lyfe can take no ende, make spede to rid thy selfe from misery by  
that meanes which he hath prepared for thee that hath found thy  
goods: who seeing his good aduenture to be thy bane, his happy  
pray to bee thy spoyle, hath left in lieu of treasure, a halter, that  
therwith thou mightest dispacht thy selfe from all thy griefes, and in  
their unhapy companye to ceafe thy life, that the lothsom, length-
ing of the same might not inrcrease thy further plaints, sorowes,  
anguifh and affliction.  And in the place where infortunate Philene  
toke hir beginning, ther the Miferable wretch muft finishe that,
which without hir desired gaine no longer can be maynteined. Peraduenture it may come to passe as when thy foule is loosed from this mortall charge, it shall salke by hym, by whom it liueth, and by him also whom she thought to ioy in greatest contention that euer mortall woman did.” And thus plaininge and sighing hir il fortune, when she had ended thofe words she tyed the halter about the beame, where sometimes hir Treasure lay, which beyng done shee put the fame about hir necke, sayinge: “O crooked Lady Fortune, that haft thus unfrendly dealt with thine humble cluyent: Ah difpayre, thou vgly wretch and companion of the diſtrefled that is vnwillinge to leaue my haunte vntyl thou playe the Hangman. Ah Dyuell incarnate that goeſt aboute to hale and plucke the innocent into thy hellifh caue. Out vppon the thou deformed hellifh dogge, that waiftest at the fiery gate to lette them in, which faine would passe an other porte.” And as shee was powrying forth theſe spitefull wordes, redy to remove the foule to fetch hir fwayne, the Gods which would not giue content, that the innocent wenche should enter that vile and opprobrious death, moued the heart of Elifa, to passe by the place where she was in workynge on her felse that desperete end: who hearing thofe moneful plaints vttred after fuch terrible manner, opened the Chamber doore, and faw that myferable fight: and ignorant of the occaſion, moued with pity, ranne and stayed hir from the fact, faying thus vnto hir: “Ah Philene,” (whych was the name that she had giuen to hir felse) “what folie hath bewitched thy mind? What phrenifie hath incharmed thy braine? What harde aduenture hath moued thee in this myſerſe wife, to ende thy life?” “Ah” (fayd Philene) “suffer me Elifa, to finifh my tormentes: giue me liberty to vnburden myſelfe from the bande of cares that do affaile me on euery fide: lette theſe Helhounds that ſtande heare rounde about mee, haue theſe praye for which they gape. Thou moued by compaffion, arte come hither to lay mee from the Halter: but in doynge fo, thou doest mee greater wrong, than doeth diſpayre whych eggeth me therunto. Suffer I fay, that mine afflictions may take fome end, fith cruel fortune willeth it to be fo, or rather vnhappy fate: for fowre death is sweeter in my conceit, than bitter life contrived in sharper fauce than gall or wormwood.”
Elifa hearing her speake these wordes, sayd: "For so much as thy myshall is such, as onely death is the nearest remedy to de-priue thy payne, what wicked chaunce hath induced thee, in this house to finis thy miseries? What hath prouked the to fetch augury to this our most happy and joyfull family?"
"Forced is the partye" (sayd Philene) "I so to doe when deffeny hath so appointed." "What deffeny is that?" demaunded Elifa. "Tell mee I beseech thee, perchaunce thou mayst pre-uent the same by other remedy than that whereabout thou goest." "No," (answered Philene) "that is impossible, but to ratifie thy request which so instantly thou crauift of me, I wil tel thee the summe of al my miserie." In saying so the teares gushed forth hir eyes, and hir voice brake out into complaints, and thus began to say: "Ah Elifa, why should I feke to prolong my wretched life in this vale of wretchednesse, wherein I haue ben so miserably afflicted? my mother pitieng mine estate and feeynge me voyde of frends, and a fatherieffe child vpon hir death bed, difclofed vnto me a treause which she had hidden vpon this beam whervnto this halter (the best remedy of my misery) is tied: and I making serch for the same, in place of that treause found this halter, ordeined as I suppoze (by what misfortune I knowe not) for my death: and where I thought among the happy to be the most happy, I see my self amongs al vnlucky women to be the most vnfortunate." Elifa hearing hir say so, greatly maruelled and sayd: "Why then I perceiue thou art a woman and not a man." "Yea, truly," answered the vnhappy mayden: "A finguler example of extreme misery to all fortes of women." "And why so?" demaunded Elifa. "Bicaufe" (answered Phile- lene) "that the pefilent planet vnder which I was borne, will haue it to be so." And then she told hir al that which had chaun- ced from the time of hir mother's departure out of Carthage, and how she went into Scicilia and recounted vnto hir the loue that she bare to a Scicilian Gentleman, and bowe that he disdainning hir for hir pouerty, refused to be hir husband: whervpon to atchieue hir defire as loth to forgoe him, was come in maner of a page to Car- thage, to recouer the riches which hir Mother had hidden there, to the intente she might obtaine (if not by other meanes) with som
rich dowrie, the yong Gentleman to husband whom she so dearely loued. And then reenforcing hir complaint, she said: That ifth Fortune had defpoiled hir of that which might haue accomplished hir desire, refiting no cause why she should any longer live, the balter was prepared for hir to end her daies, and to rid hir life from troubles. And therefore she praised hir to be contented, that she might make that end which hir misaduenture and wicked fortune had predestinate. I doubt not but there be many, which understanding that the treaure did belong to Philene, if they had found the like as Elisa did, would not onely not haue forbidden hir the Death, but alfo by speedy meanes haue haftened the fame, for so mutch as by that occasiion the hidden treaure should haue ben out of strife and contention: so greate is the force of couetousneffe in the minde of man. But good Elisa knew ful wel the mutability of Fortune in humaine thinges, for so mutch as the by seeking death, had fonde the thinge which not onely delivered hir from the fame, but made hir the best contented woman of the worlde. And Philene seeinge hir contentation, in place thereof, and by like occasion, found the thinge that would haue ben the instrument of hir death, and mowed with very great compassion of the mayden, desired to haue better aduertisement howe that treasuure could belong to her. Then Philene shewing forth hir mother's writing, which particularly remembred the parcels within the casket, and Elisa seeinge the same to be agreeable to the hand wherewith the other was written that was founde in the casket, was assurred that all the gold and Jewels which she had found, did belong vnto Philene, and sayd vnto hirfelfe: "The Gods defend that I should prepare the balter for the death of this innocent Wench, whose substaunce hath yelded vnto mee my hart's desire." And comforting the mayden, in the ende she sayd: "Be contented Philene, and giue ouer this thy desperate determination, for both thy lyfe shalbe prolonged, and thy discontented minde appeased, hoping thou shalt recexe the comforte thou desiere." And with those words she lofed the balter from hir neck, and takinge hir by the hand, brought hir to the place where hir Father and husband were, and did them to understand the force and terms whereunto the fier of loue and desperation had brought that amorous mayden:
tellinge them that all the treasure and jewels which she had found (where she left the halter, and wherewith Philene was minded to hang hir selfe) did by good right and reason belong to hir: then she did let them fe the counterpayne of that bill which was in the casket, in all points agreeable thereunto, declaring moreover that verye lyke and reasonable yt were, like curtesie shold bee vfed vnto her, as by whom they hadde receyued so greate honoure and delighte. Her husband which was a Carthagian borne, very churlifhe and conetous, albeit by conferring the writings together, he knewe the matter to be true, and that Philene ought to be the possessour thereof, yet by no meanes would agree vnto hys wyues request, but fell into a rage, callinge hir Foole and Ideot, and sayinge that hee had rather that shée had bene a Thoufande tymes hanged, than he would give hir one penye: and although she had faued hir life, yet shée ought to be banished the Citty, for so mutch as the same and all the propertie thereof was brought into the Romane’s handes, and amongst the same hir mother’s house, and al hir goods in possession of the victors, and every part, at their disposition and pleasure. And moreover, for so mutch as hir mother and shee had departed Carthage, and would not abide the hazarde and extremity of their country as other Citizens did, and having concealed and hidden those riches which ought to have ben brought forth for the common defence of their countrey, and gone out of the Citty as though she had ben a poore simple Woman, poorely therefore she ought to lyue in Sicilia, whyther she was fled. Wherefore he was of opinion, that she in this maner beinge departed when the Citty had greatest neede of hir helpe, was disfranchised of all the rightes and customes of the countrey, and that like as a straunger can recouer nothinge in that Citty, except he have the priviledge and Freedome of the same, even so Philene (for the considerations before recited) ought to be compted for a straunger, and not to participate any thinge within the City, accordingly as the lawes forbid. When he had so fayd, he was like by force to expell the sorrowfull mayden out of the house. These wordes greatly grieued Philene, who doubted leaf his father in law would have ioyned with him, and agree vnto hys alleaged reasons, whych seemed to
be of great importaunce and effect: and therefore thought newly
to returne to the Halter for remedy of hir griefes; but it other-
wife chaunced, for the Father of Elisa, which was a Romane
borne, and affected with a Romane minde, and therefore of a
Gentle and well disposed nature, knew ful wel, that although the
house was giuen vnto him by the consent of Scipio, and other
the Captaynes, yet he knew that their pleasure was not to bestowe
on him the treasure hidden in the same, and therefore ought
be restored to the true owner, or else confiscate and properly due
to the Romane Eschequer, or common treasure house of the same:
and albeit that it was true that hir Mother went out of Carthage,
in the time of the Siege, and therefore had forsoyted the same,
yet he determined to shewe some curtefie vnto the younge mayden,
and to be thankfull to fortune, for the benefite which by hir meanes
he had receyued, thinkinge that she would be displeased with
him, if he with vngratefull minde or dishonourable intent should
receyue hir giftes. For in those dayes the Romans highly reuer-
enced Lady Fortune, and in hir honour had Erected Temples, and
Dedicated Aultars, and in prosperous tyme and happy adventures,
they consecrated vows, and sacrifices vnto hir, thinkinge (although
supersticiously) that like as from God there proceeded none euil,
euen so from him all goodnesse was deriued: that all felicity
and other good happes, which chauced vpon the Romane
Common wealth, proceeded from Fortune, as the Fountayne and
most Principall Occasion, and that they which would not confesse
hir force, and be thankful vnto hir Godheade, incurred in the
ende hir Displeasure and Daungers very great and haynous. This
Romane then hauing this opinion, beinge (as I sayd before) of
a gentle Disposition woulde at one instant both render thankes
to Fortune, and vse curtefie vnto that mayden, by whose riches
and goods from lowe degree he was advanced to honourable
state. Wherefore turning his Face vnto hir, with louing counte-
aunce he spake these wordes: "Right gentle damofel, albeit by
the reasons alleged by my sonne in law, none of the treasure
hidden by thy mother, and founde by my Daughter in thys house,
of right doth appertaine to thee, yet I will that thou shalt
vnderstande my curtefie, and that thou see how the Romanes
doe more esteeme the nobility of their minde, than all the riches
of the world. Therefore that thou mayst enjoy thy love, I re-
ferre vnto thee and to thy disposition all the goods and jewels
that were in the Casket, and contayned in thy writinge. Beholde
therefore (causing the casket to be brought vnto him) all the
jewels and other parcels that were in the same when they were
founde, take fo mutch thereof as thou wilt, and if fo bee thou
defire the whole, willingly I render the same vnto thee, Sithens
by means of those riches, and the industry of my trafique, I haue
gaynd fo mutch, as havinge gyuen a convenient dowry vnto my
daughter, I honorably live without it.” Philene seeing the cur-
tesie of this valiaunt gentleman, gaue him infinite thanks, and
then sayd vnto him: “Sir, I for my part dare aske no thinge,
well knowinge that if you gene me no thinge, there is no caufe
why I shoulde complayne of you, but of my hard and wicked
fortune, whych hath offered and giuen that to you, which ought
to haue bin mine. Wherefore, fith your curtesie is futch, as you
refer the whole to mee, I purpose to take nothing, but will that
the whole shal bee in your disposition, and giue mee what you
liift, and that fo giuen of your liberality, I shal more thankfully
receiue, than if debt or duty did confrayne it: and if it shal
please you to giue me nothing, my heart shal bee so well appeased,
for that your curtesie, as rather woulde I chose to live in the
poore estate wherein I am, than be rych with your displeasure.”
Howbeit, the Romayne intreated Philene to take thereof what
shee thought good: and Philene craued no more than it pleased
hym to gyue. Eyther of them standinge vpon these termes Elia,
brake the strife, who knowinge the force of love, and the griefes
incident to his clients, by his owne harmes, moued to have compa-
ansion vpon the afflicted, turned towards his father, and sayd vnto
him: “Right louinge father, the contencion betweene Philene and
you, is rifen of a matter which came by me. The treasure for
which you striue, and committed to the will of Philene, was
found by me, whereof if it please you both, I wyll take futch
order, as both you shalbe fatisfied.” “I am contented,” sayd
hir father: “And I likewise,” aunswered Philene. Then sayd
Eliza: “You father hitherto haue had but one Daughter, which
am I, vnto whom like a chylde and louinge daughter I haue bene obedient, and shalbe all the dayes of my lyfe: and I agayne haue receiue from you futch fatherly education, as your ability and state required. This treasure I found and gaue to you for ease and comfort of vs both: to me it yelded the only delectation of my heart in choyfe of husband: to you honour and estimation within thys Citty. Wherefore, fith the principal came from me, and the right refeth in this carefull maiden, my desyre is, that where before you had but one daughter, you will adopt this mayden for another, and thinke that you have twaine, and that you will intreate Philene in like fort as if shee were my sister: and where this Inheritance and revenuе wherewith now you be possesed, and this casket also ought to be onely myne after your decease, for that you haue no fones, nor other Issue, my desyre is that you geue vnto her the halfe, and that you accept hir for your daughter, as I doe meane to take hir for my sister: and accordingly to vse hir duringe lyfe.” With these wordes Elia imbraced Philene, and louingly dyd kisse hir, sayinge vnto hir: “For my sister I entartayn thee Philene.” And then shee tooke hir by the hand and gaue hir vnto hir father with these wordes: “Beholde father, your new daughter, whom I befeech you so hartily to loue as you do Elia your naturall chylde.” The father prayed the curtesie of Elia, and receiued Philene for his daughter and was contented with the Arbitrament of his Daughter. But Elia perceyuing hir husband to be somewhat offended thereunto, specially for that the same should be deuided into two partes, which was like to haue bene hys wholly before, persuaued hym by gentle meane to be content with that agreement: and although at the first he could not well brooke the liberality of his wyfe, yet at length viewinge the good behauior and gentle disposition of Philene, and the contented minde of his father in law, together with the noble nature of his wyfe, and hir wife aduer-tifement of Fortune’s fickle assurance, yelded, and acknowledged Philene for hys kinswoman. And so Philene put in possession of the halfe of those goods, whereof she was altogether out of hope, was well satiſfied, and had the Romane for hir father, Elia for hir sister, and hir husband for hir kinſman. That valyant
Roman was so careful over Philene, as if she had been his own daughter, and so indured, as he brought to passe that she obtained hir beloued Scicilian to husband: who also sent for hym to Carthage, where he continued with his wife in the Romane’s house, and loved them both so dearly as though he had ben father to the one, and father in lawe to the other. In this maner these two poore wenches attained their two husbands, for having of whom, theyr onely care was for Ryches, and for lacke thereof were dryuen to despayre: and in the ende both (though diuerly, and the one more fortunat than the other) recovered riches, and with the same theyr husbands, to their heartes singular ioie and contentation. Which lucke I wyse to all other poore Girles (but not hangyng rype, or louyng in despayre) that bend their minde on Mariage, and seeke to people by that estate, their countrey common wealth. But leauinge for a time these Tragicall Nouels and heauy chaunces, wee purpose to remember some morall matters right worthy of remembraunce: Letters they bee from a godly Pagane clerk, the famous Philosopher Plutarch, Schoolemaister to an Emperour of no leffe vertue, than hys mayster’s Schoole and mynde was fraught with diuine Precepts. Wherefore proceede (good Reader) to continue the paynes vpon the readinge of thefe, so well as thou haft vouchsafed to employ thy time before. They shal no leffe delite thee, if vertue brooke thee, they shal no leffe content thee if duty pleafe thee, than any delight-some thing, whereupon (at any tyme) thou haft employed thy va-caunte tyme.
LETTERS.

279

THE TWELFTH NOUELLE.

LETTERS OF THE EMPEROUR TRAIANE.

Letters of the Philosopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the sayd Emperour to Plutarch: the lyke also from the sayd Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be conteyned godly rules for government of Princes, obedience of Subjects, and their duties to common wealth.

Because these Letters ensuinge (proceeding from the infallible Schoole of Wisedome, and practised by an apt Scholler of the fame, by a noble Emperour that was well trained vp by a famous Philosopher) in myne opinion deferue a place of Recorde amonge our English Volumes, and for the wholsome errudition, ought to Englishmen in english shape to bee described, I haue thought good in this place to introduce the fame. And although to some it fhal not peraduenture feeme fit and conuenient to mingle holy with prophan, (accordinge to the proverbe) to intermedle amongs pleaunting histories, ernest epiftles, amid amorous Nouels, learned Letters, yet not to care for report or thought of fuch findefaults, I judge them not vnfeemely, the course of those histories. For amid the diuine works of Philosophers and Oratours, amongs the pleaunting paynes of auncient Poets, and the Nouell writers of our time, merry verfes so well as moral! matters be mingled, wanton bankets so wel as wise disputations celebrated, tauntinge and iocund Orations so well as effectuall declamations and persuaftions pronounced. These letters contayne many graue and wholesome documents, fundry vertuous and choosen Institutions for Princes and Noble men, yea and for fuch as beare office and preferment in commonwealth from highest title to meanest degree. These letters do vouch the reioyce of a Schoolemayster for bringinge vp a Scholler of capacity and aptneffe, to imbrace and Fix in Memory fuch leffons as he taught him. These Letters do gratulate and remembre the ioy of the discipile for hauinge fuch a maifter. These letters do pronounce the minde of a vertuous Prince towards
hys subiects for choyfe of him to the empire, and for that they had respect rather to the vertue and condition, than to the nobility or other extreme accident. To be short, these letters speake and pronounce the very humblenesse and fealty that ought to rest in subiectes' hearts: with a thousand other excellent sentences of duties. So that if the Emperour Nerua had bin alius agayne to perufe these letters and Epiftles of congratulation betweene the Schoolemayfter and Scholler, he would no leffe haue reioyfed in Plutarch than king Philip of Macedon did of Ariftotle, when hee affirmed himself to be happy, not so much for hauing a fonne as Alexander was, as for that he was borne in fuch a time, as had brought Ariftotle to be his maifter. That good Emperour Nerua, shewed a patern to his succeffor by his good vertuous lyfe and godly gouernment, which made a succeffor and a people of no leffe confequence than they were trayned, accordingly as Herodian voucheth, that for the moft part the people be wont to imitate the Life of their Prince and soueraygne Lord. If Philip deemed hymselfe happy and bleffed for hauing a fonne and maifter, then might Nerua terme himselfe threfolde more happy for fuch a Nephew and fuch a notable Schoolemayfter as Plutarch was, who not only by doctrine but by practife proued a paffing good Scholler. Alexander was a good Scholer and for the time wel practised his maister's Leffons, but afterwards as glory and good hap accompanied his noble disposition, so did he degenerate from former life, and had quite forgotten what he had learned, as the fecond Nouell of this Booke more at large declareth. But Traiane of a toward Scholler, proued fuch an Emperour and victor ouer himselfe, as schoolinge and rulinge were in him mira-
culus, and surmounting Paragon of piety and vertue: where-
fore not to flay thee from the perusinge of those Letters,
the right image of himselfe: thus beginneth
Plutarch to write vnto his famous
Scholler Traiane.
A Letter of the Philosopher Plutarch to the Emperor Traiane, wherein is touched how Gouerners of Common wealths ought to be prodigal in deedes and spare in words.

My moft dread foueraygne Lorde, albeit of longe tyme I haue known the modesty of your mynde, yet neyther I nor other liuing man did euer know that you aspired to that, which many men de-fire, which is to be Emperour of Rome. That man shold with-drawe himselfe from honour, it were cleane without the boundes of wyfedome: but not to lycence the heart to defire the fame, that truely is a worke diuine, and not proceedinge of humayne nature. For he doeth indifferently well, that repreffeth the works which his handes be able to do, without flaying upon his owne defires, and for good consideration wee may terme thine Empire to be very happy, fith thou hast fo nobly demeaned thy selfe to defere the fame without search and seekinge industrious pollicy to at-tayne thereunto. I haue known within the city of Rome many great personages, which were not fo much honored for the offices whych they bare, as they were for the meanes and deuifes whereby they fought to be aduaunced to the fame. May it please you to vnderstand (moft excellent Prince) that the honor of a vertuous man doth not confift in the office, which he presently hath, but rather in the merites that preferred him thereunto: In such wise, as it is the office that honoreth the partye, and to the officer there refeth but a painful charge. By meanes wherof, when I remem-ber that I was your gouerner from your youth, and instracted your vertuous mind in letters, I can not chofe but very much reioyce, so well for your foueraigne vertue, as for your maieftie's good for-tune, deming it to be a great happinesse vnto me that in my time Rome hath injoyed him to be their fouraigne lord, whom I had in tymes paft to be my scholler. The principalities of kyngdomes some winne by force, and maintayne them by armes, which ought not fo to be in you, nor yet conceiue opinion of your selfe, but rather to thinke that the empire which you gouerne by vniiuerfall consent, yee ought to entertayne and rule with general iustice. And therfore if you loue and reuerence the Gods, if you
bee pacient in trauels, warie in daungers, curteous to your people, gentle to straungers, and not couetous of treasure, nor louer of your owne defires: you shall make your fame immortall, and govern the common wealth in foueraign peace: that you be not a louer of your own defires, I speake it not withoute caufe, for there is no worfe gouernement than that which is ruled by selfe wyll and priuate opinion. For as he that governeth a common wealth ought to lyue in feare of al men, euen so mutch more in feare of him selfe, in so mutch as he may commit greater errour by doinge that which his owne luste commaundeth, than if he were ruled by the counsell of other. Assure you sir, that you can not hurt your selfe, and mutch leFFE prejudice vs your subiects, if you do correct your selfe before you chaflfe others, esteemyng that to bee a ryght good gouernment when you be prodigal in workes, and spare of speache. Aflay then to be such a one now, that you do commaunde, as you were when you were commaunded. For otherwise it would lyttle auail to do things for deferring of the empyre, if afterwards your dedes be contrary to former deseets.

To com to honour it is a humane worke, but to conferue honour it is a thing diuine. Take hede then (most excellent Traiane) that you do remembe and fyll reuolue in minde, that as you be a Prince supreme, so to apply your self to be a paffing ruler. For there is no authority amongs men so high, but that the Gods aboue be judges of their thoughts, and men beneth beholders of their dedes. Wherfore fith presentlye you are a mighty Prince, your duety is the greater to be good, and leifure leFFE to be wycked, than when you were a pryuate Man. For hauing gotten authority to commaund, your lyberty is the leFFE to bee idle: so that if you bee not fuch a one as the common people haue opinion of you, and fuch againe as your maister Plutarch defireth, you shal put your selfe in greate Daunger, and myne Ennymyes wyll feeke meanes to bee reuenged on mee, knowynge wel that for the Scholler's faulte the Mayfter Dayly suffreth wronge by flaunderous checke imputed vnto hym (although withoute caufe.) And for so much as I haue ben thy maister, and thou my scholer, thou must indeuour by well doyng, to render me some honour. And lykewyse if thou do euyll, great infamy shal lyght on me, euen as
it did to Seneca for Nero his cause, whose cruelties done in Rome were imputed to his master Seneca. The like wrong was done to the Philosopher Chilo, by being burdened with the negligent nouriture of his Scholler Leander. They truely were famous personages and great learned men, in whom the gouernemente of myghty Princes was repoused: notwithstanding, for not correcting them in their youth, nor teachyng them with carefull dylygence, they blotted for euermore theyr renoume, as the cause of the destruction of many common wealthes. And forsomuch as my pen spared none in times past, bee well assured Traiane, that the same will pardon neither thee or mee in tyme to come: for as wee bee confederate in the fault, euenn so we shal be heires of the paine. Thou knowest well what lessons I haue taught thee in thy youth, what counsell I haue gyuen thee, beeing come to the state of man, and what I haue written to thee, fithens thou hast ben Prince, and thou thy selfe art recorde of the wordes which I haue spoken to thee in secreete: in all which I never persuaded thyng but that intended to the service of the gods, profite of the common wealth and increafe of thy renoume: wherefore, I am right sure, that for any thing which I haue written, sayd, or persuaded there is no cause I should feare the punishment of the gods, and much lesse the reprochful shame of men, verily beleuing that al which I coulde say in secreete, might without reproch be openly published in Rome. Nowe before I take my pen in hand to write this Letter, I examined my lyfe, to know, if (during the time that I had charge of thee) I dyd or sayd in thy presence any thing that might prouoke thee to euill example. And truely (vnmete for me to say it) vpon that searche of my forepaffed life, I never found my selfe guilty of facte vnmeete a Roman Cytyzen, nor euer spoke woorde vnseemelye for a Phylofoper: by meanes whereof I doe rght heartely wythe, thou wouldest remember the good education and instructyon whych thou dyddest learne of mee. I speake not thys, that thou shouldest gratifie me againe with any Benefite, but to the ende thou myghtest serue thy selfe, esteemynge that no greater pleasure there is that can redounde to me, than to heare a good report of thee. Be then well assured that if an Empyre bee bestowed vpon thee, it was not for that thou wer a Citizen of
Rome or a courageous person descended of noble house, rich and mighty, but only bicaufe vertues did plentifully abounde; in thee. I dedicated vnto thee certayne bookes of old and auncient common wealth, which if it pleafe thee to vfe, and as at other times I haue sayd vnto thee, thou shalt finde mee to be a proclaimer of thy famous workes, and a chronicler of all thy noble facts of armes: but if perchaunce thou follow thine owne aduife, and chaunge thy felfe to bee other than hitherto thou haft ben, prefently I inuocate and cry out vpon the immortall Gods, and this Letter fhall be wytnesfe, that if any hurt do chaunce to thee, or to thine Empire, it is not through the counfell or meanes of thy maifter Plutarch. And fo farewell moft Noble Prynce.

The aunswere of the Emperour Traiane to hys mayster Plutarch.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of Rome, to the Philosopher Plutarch, sometimes my mayster: salutation and consolation in the Gods of comfort. In Agrippina was deliuered vnto me a letter from thee, whych so soone as I opened, I knew to be written wyth thine owne hand, and endited with thy wyfedom. So flowing was the fame with goodly wordes and accompanied with graue fentences, an occafion that made mee reade the fame twice or thrice, thinking that I faw thee write and heard thee speake, and fo welcome was the fame to me, as at that very instant I caufed it to be red at my table, yea and made the fame to be fixed at my bed's heade, that thy well meanyng vnto me might be generally knowne, how much I am bound vnto thee. I esteemed for a good prefage the congratulation that the Conful Rutulus did vnto me from thee, touchinge my commyng to the empire: I hope through thy merites, that I shall be a good Emperoure. Thou fayest in thy letter, that thou canfte by no meanes beleue that I haue giuen bribes, and vfed meanes to buye myne Empire, as other haue done. For aunswere thereunto I fay, that as a man I haue desired it, but neuer by solicitation or other meanes attempted it: for I neuer faw wythin the City of Rome any man to bribe for honour, but for the fame, some notable infamy chaunced vnto hym, as for
example we may learne of the Good old man Menander, my friende and thy neyghbour, who to be Conful, procured the same by vnlawful meanes, and therfore in the end was banished and died desperately. The greate Caius Cæsar, and Tiberius, Caligula, Cladius, Nero, Galba, Otho Vitelius, and Domitian, some for usurpyng the Empire, some for tyranny, some for getting it by bribes, and some by other meanes procuryng the same, loft (by the sufferance of the righteous gods) not onely their honour and goodes, but also they died miferably. When thou dydest reade in thy schoole, and I that time an hearer of thy doctrine, many times I hearde thee say, that we ought to traual to deferue honour, rather than procure the same, esteemyng it vnlawfull to get honour by meanes vnlawfull. He that is without credite, ought to assay to procure credite. Hee that is without honour, ought to feeke honour. But the vertuous man hathe no neede of noble-nesse, ne hee himselfe, ne yet any other persone can berieue him of due honour. Thou knowest wel Plutarch, that the yere past, the office of Conful was gyuen to Torquatus, and the Dictatorship to Fabritius, who were so vertuous and so little ambitious as not defyrours to receyue such charges, abfented themselues, although that in Rome, they might have ben in great estimation, by reafon of those offices, and yet neuerthelesse without them they bee prentently esteemed, loued and honoured: and therefore I conceiue greater delight in Quintius Lincinatus, in Scipio Africanus, and good Marcus Portius, for cometing of thy offices, than for the victories which they atchieued: for victories many times confit in fortune, and the not caryng for honorable charge in onely wisedome. Semblably, thou thy selfe art witnesse, that when myn vnkle Cocceius Nerua was exiled to Capua, he was more visitated, and better serued, than when he was at Rome: whereby may bee inferred, that a vertuous man may bee exyled or banished, but honour he shal neuer want. The Emperour Domitian (if you do remember) at the departure of Nerua, made me many offers, and thee many fayre promises to entertain thee in his houfe, and to fend mee into Almayne, which thou coulsdest not abyde, and much leffe consent, deeming it to be greater honour with Nerua to be exiled, than of Domitian to be favoured. I sweare by
the Gods immortall, that when the good olde man Nerua sent me
the ensigne of the Empyre, I was ytterly ignorant thereof, and
voyd of hope to atteyne the fame: for I was aduertisef from the
Senate, that Fuluius fued for it, and that Pamphilius went about
to buy it. I knew also that the Conful Dolobella attempted to
enjoy it: then fith the gods did permit, that I should be Empe-
rour, and that myne uncle Nerua did commaund the fame, the
Senate approved it, and the common wealth would haue it to be
so: and fith it was the generall confent of all men, and specially
your aduys, I haue greate hope that the Gods will be fauorable
vnto me, and Fortune no ennimie at all: affuring you, that like ioy
whych you do faye you had by teachyng me, and feing me now to
be Emperour, the lyke I haue to thynke that I was your Scholler:
and fith that you wyll not call mee from henceforth any other but
Soueraygne Lord, I wyll terme you by none other name, than
Louyng father. And albeit that I haue ben visited and counfell
by many men since my commyng to the Empyre, and by thee
aboue the reft, whom before all other I wyll beleue, confideryng
that the intent of those which counfell me, is to draw my mynde to
theyrs, your letters purportyng nothing else but mine aduaun-
tage. I doe remember amongst other woordes, which once you
spake to Maxentius the Secretary of Domitian, this sayyng: that
they which doe prefume to gyue counvell vnto Prynces, oughte to
bee free from all passions and affections: for in counvell, where
the wyll is mofte euclined, the mynde is more prompte and ready:
that a Prince in all thyngs doe his wyll I praye not: that he take
aduys and counvell of euery man I leffe allowe. That which he
ought to doe (as me thinke) is to doe by counfel, forseeing for al
that to what counfel he applieth his mynde: for counfel ought not
to be taken of hym whom I doe well loue, but of hym of whom I
am well beloued. All this I haue wrytten (my mayfter Plutarch)
to aduertisfe you that from henceforthe I desire nothing else at
your handes, but to be holpen wyth your aduys in myne affayres,
and that you tell me of my committed faults: for if Rome do
thinke me to be a defender of their common wealth I make
accompte of you to bee an ouerfeer of my life: and therefore if you
thinke that I am not thankfull ynough for the good aduys, and
holfom warenings that you gyue me: I am to intreate you (myne owne good mayster) not to take it in ill part, for in such cases, the grieue that I conceiue, is not for the good leffons you gyue me, but for the shame that I fayle in followyng them. The bryngyng of me vp in thy house, the hearyng of thy lectures, the folowyng of thy doctryne, and liuing vnder thy disciplyne, haue ben truly the pryncipal caufes that I am commen to this Empyre. This mutch I fay (mayster) for that it were an vnnatural parte in thee not to affift me to beare that thing, which thou hafe holpen me to gayne and winne: and although that Vespasion was of nature a very good man, yet his greatest profite redounded to him by entertyning of the Philofopher Appolonius. For truelye it is a greater felicity for a Prince to chaunce vpoun a good and faythfull man, to be neare about him, than to atchieue a large realme and kingdome. Thou fayeft (Plutarch) that thou fhalt receiue great contentation, from henceforth, if I be such a one now as I was before, or at lefte if I be no worfe. I believe that which thou doeft fay, bicaufe the Emperor Nero, was the first five yeares of hys empyre good, and the other nine yeares excedyng euill, in slutch wyfe as he grew to be greater in wickedneffe, than in dygnity. Notwithstanding, if thou thinke that as it chaunced vnto Nero, so may happen vnto Traiane, I befech the immortall Gods rather to deprive me of life, than to suffer me to raigne in Rome: for tyrantes bee they, whych procure dygnytyes and promotyons, to vse them for delighte and filthye lufte: and good Rulers bee they which feek by profite of Common wealth: and therfore to them whych before they came to thofe degrees were good, and afterwardes waxed Wycked, greater pity than enuye ought to be attributed, confideryng speckally, that Fortune did not aduaunce them to honour, but to shame and villany: beleue me then (good maifter) that ifth hitherto I haue ben reputed vertuous, I wyl affay by God’s affiſtance to aspire to be better, rather than to be worse. And so the Gods prefere thee.
The Letter of the Emperour Traiane to the Senate of Rome, wherein is contained, that honour ought rather to be deferred than procured.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of the Romanes, euery Augustus, to our sacred Senate health and consolation in the gods of comfort. We beinge aduertised here at Agrippina of the Deathe of the Emperour Nerua, your soueraigne Lord and my predeceffour, and knowing it to be true, that you haue wept and bewailed the loffe of a Prince so noble and ryghteous, we likewise haue felt like sorrow, for the death of so notable a father. When children lofe a good father, and subiects a good Prynce, eyther they muste dye wyth them, or else by teares they must rayse them vp again, for so much as a good Prince in a commone wealth is so rare, as the Phoenix in Arabia. My lord Nerua broughte me out of Spayne to Rome, nourisshed me vp in youth, caufed mee to bee trained in letters and adopted me for his sonne in mine olde age: which graces and benefits truly I can not forget, knowyng that the ingrate man protroketh the Gods to anger, and men to hatred. The death of a vertuous man is to be lamented of all men, but the death of a good Prince, ought to be extremely mourned: for if a common person die, there is but one dead, but if a god Prynce dye, together with him dieth a whole Realme. I speake this (O ye Fathers) for the rare vertues abounding in myne uncle Nerua: for if the gods were disposed to fell vs the liues of good Prynces already departed, it were but a small ransome to redeeme them with teares: for what gold or fyluer may be sufficient to buie the lyfe of a vertuous man. Truely there woulde be a greate maffe of money gyuen by the Greekes for Alexander, by the Lacedemonians for Lycurgus, by the Romanes for Augustus, and by the Carthaginians for Annibal. But as you knewe the gods hauing made all thynges mortall, so haue they referued onely themselues to bee immortall. How eminent and passyng the vertue of the good is, and what pruiledged the godly haue, it may easly bee knowne: for so mutch, as honour is carried euene to the very graues of the dead, but so it is not to the greate Palaces of the
wycked. The good and vertuous man, without fighfe or knowledge we loue, ferue, and aunswer for him: wherein the wycked we cannot beleue what he fayeth, and leffe accepte in good part the thyng whych he doeth for vs. Touchynge the election of the Empyre, it was done by Nerua, it was demaunded by the people, approued by you, and accepted by me. Wherefore I prayt the immortall Goddes that it may bee lyked of theyr god-heades: for to small purpofe auayleth the election of Prynces, if the gods doe not confirme it: and therefore a man maye knowe hym whych is chozen by the Gods, from him that is electe by men, for the one shal deelyne and fal, the other shalbe vpholden and preferued: the choyfe of man fo vaynely exalted doth bowe and abafe, but that which is planted by the gods, although it bee toffed to and fro wyth feuerall Wynds, and receiueth greate aduerfitye, and boweth a lyttle, yet the fame shall neuer fal. Ye know right wel (moft honorable Fathers) that I neuer demaunded the Empyre of Nerua my Soueraigne Lorde, although he broughte me vp and was his Nephew, hauing beard and wel remembring of my Mayfter Plutarch, that honour ought rather to bee deferued than procured. Notwithstanding I wyll not deny but ioyfull I was when my Lord Nerua sent me the ensigne of that greate and hygh dignity: and yet I wyll confesse that hauing begon to taft the trauailes and cares which that imperiall flate bringeth, I did repent more then a Thoufand times for taking vppon mee a charge fo great: for Empire and gouernment is of futch quality that although the honor be mighty, yet the gouernour muchaineth manifold paines and miferable trauailes. O how greatly doth he bind hymself, which by gouernment bindeth other! for if hee bee iust they calle hym cruel, if hee bee Pitifull, he is contempned, if liberall, he is esteemed Prodigall, if he keepe or gather togethuer he is counted couetous, if hee be peaceable and quiet, they deeme him for a coward, if he be couragious, he is reputed a quareller, if graue, they will fay he is proude, if he be easie to be spoken to, hee is thought to be light or simpel, if solitary, they will esteeme him to be an hypocrite, and if he be ioyfull, they will terme hym diffolute: In futch wife as they wil be contented, and vfe better termes to al others what fo euer, than towards hym, which gouer-
neth a common wealth: for to sutch a one they recken the morsels which he eateth, they measure his pases, they note his words, they take heede to his companies, and judge of his works (many times wrongfully,) they examine and murmure of his pastimes, and attempt to Conie比特思: consider then the trauayles which bee in governement, and the enuy which many times they beare vnto him that ruleth. We may say, that there is no state more sure than that which is furthest of from Enuy. And if a man cannot but wyth great payne gouerne the wyfe which he hath chosen, the children which he hath begotten, nor the feruant which he hath brought vp, hauing them altogether in one house: how is it possible that he can still conferre in peace a whole commonwealth? I praye you tell mee, in whom shall a poore Prince repose his trufty, fyth that many times hee is most flaundered by theym whom he fauoureth best? Prynces and great Lordes cannot eate without a Garde, cannot sleepe without a watch, cannot speake without efpiall, nor walke without some saufetty, in sutch wise as they being Lords of al, they be as it were, Prifoners of their owne people. And if we wil beholde somewhat neerely, and consider the servitude of Princes, and the liberty of Subiectes, we shall finde that he which hath most to doe in the Realme, or beareth greatest swinge, is most subieckt to Thraldome. So that if Prynces haue authority to geue liberty, they haue no maners to be free themselfes: the gods haue created vs so fre, and every man desirith to haue hys liberty so much at wyll, that a man be he neuer so familiar a freende, or so neare of kin, we rather haue him to be our subieckt, than our Lorde and mayster: one man alone commandeth all, and yet it feemeth to him but little: ought we then to maruile, if many be weary to obey one? Wee loue and esteeeme our selues so much, as I neuer saw any which of his owne good wil would be subieckt, ne yet agaynst his will was made a Lord, a Principle by dayly experience proved very true: for the quarrels and warres that be amongs men, are not so much for obedience fake, as for rule and commandment. I say moreover, that in drinking, eating, clothing, speaking, and louing, al men be of divers qualities: but to get lyberty, they be all conformable. I haue spoken thus much (O Fathers conscript) vpon
An other Letter of the Emperour Traian to the Romayne Senate,
contayning how gouernours of Common wealths ought to bee friendes
rather to thofe which vfe traficke, than to them that gather and
heape together.

CoccEius Traiane Emperour of the Romaynes to our holy se-
inate health and consolation in the Gods of comfort. The affayres
be fo manyfolde, and businesse fo greame and weighty, which we
have to doe with diuers Countries, that fearce we haue tyme to
eate, and space to take anye rest, the Romane Prynces hauing fix
by auncient cuftome both lacke of tyme, and commonly want of
money. And bicaufe that they which haue charge of common
wealths, to the vttermoft of their power ought to be fryends to tra-
ficke of marchandife, and enimyes of heapynge treasure together,
Prynces haue fo many people to plesafe, and fo greate numbre of
crauers, that if they keepe any thing for them, the fame shall
rather feeme a spicke of theft than of prouidence. To take away
an other man's goodes, truly is a wycked part: but if it bee per-
mitted to take Treasure, better it were to take it out of the Temples, than to defraude the people: for the one is consecrated to the immortal Gods, and the other to the poor commons. I speake this (right honorable fathers) to put you in remembrance, and also to aduise you, that you take good heede to the goodes of the common wealth, howe they bee dyspended, howe gathered together, howe they bee kepte, and howe they be employed. For ye ought to vnderstand, that the goodes of the Common wealth be committed to you in trust, not to the ende yee shoulde enjoy them, but rather by good gouvernement to vfe them. We do heare that the Walles be ready to fall, the Towers be in decay, and the Temples in great ruine, wherof we be not a lyttle offended, and you ought also to be afhamed, for so mutch as the damages and detryments of the Common wealth, we ought eyther to remedy, or else to lament. Ye haue wrytten vnto mee to know my pleafure, whether the cenfors, pretors, and ediles shoulde be yearely chofen, and not perpetuall, as hitherto they haue bene: and specialy you lay, that the state of the Dictators (which is the greatest and higheft dignity in Rome) is onely but for fixe moneths. To that I aunswer, that we are wel contented wyth that aduyfe: for not wythout caufe and iust reafon our predeceffours dyd abolyfhe the fyrf kynges of Rome, and ordayned, that the Consuls shoulde yearely be chofen in the Common wealth. Whych was done, in confideration that hee whych had perpetuall gouvernement, many tymes became injolente and proude. And therefore that the charges and offices of the Senate, shoulde be yearely, to auoyde danger, which if they shoulde be perpetuall there myght enue great hurt and damage to the common wealth: for if the Officers beyng yeerely chofen, be good, they may be continued: and if they bee euyll, they may be chaunged. And truely the officer, whych knoweth that vpon the end of euery yeare he muft be chaunged and examined of his charge, he wyll take good heede to that whych he speaketh, and firft of all wil confider what he taketh in hand. The good Marcus Portius was the firft that caufed the Officers of the Romane Common Wealthe to bee thus visited and corrected. And bycaufe that these Almayne Warres doe styll increafe, by reafon that kyng Deceball wyll not as yet bee brought to obedience of the
Romanes, but rather goeth about to occupy and winne the Kingdomes of Dacia and Polonía, I shall be forced through the business of the wars, (so long continuing) to deuyle and consult here uppon the affayres touching the gouvernment of the common wealth of Rome. For a leFFE euyll it is for a Prynce to be negligent in matters of Warre, than in the gouvernment of the Common Wealth. A Prynce also ought to think, that he is chosen, not to make wars, but to gonerne, not to kyll the Enemies, but to roote out vices, not that he goe in person to invade or defend his foes, but that he reside and be in the Common Wealth, and not to take away other men’s goodes, but to do iustice in every man, for so mutch as the Prynce in the warres can fight but for one, and in the publyke wealth he committeth faults against a numbre. Truly it liketh me wel, that from the degree of captains men be aduaunced to bee emperors, but I think it not good, that emperours do descende to be captains, considering that, that realm shal never be in quiet, where the Prince is to gret a warrior. This haue I spoken (fathers conscript) to the intent ye may beleue, that I for my parte if these warres of Almayne were to begin, I being at Rome, it wer imposibble that I should be brought vnto the same, for that my principal intent, is to be estemed rather a good gouverner of a common wealth, than a forward captain in the field: nowe then principally I commend vnto you the veneration of the temples, and honor of the gods, because kings never liue in surety, if the gods be not honored, and the temples serued. The last words which my good lord Nerua wrot vnto me were thefe: “Honour the Temples, feare the gods, maintein iustice in thy commonwealth and defend the pore: in so doing thou shalt not be forgotten of thy friend, nor vanquished by thy foe.” I do greatly recommend vnto you the vertues of amity and fraternity, for that you know how in great common wealthes, more hurt and damage do ciuile and neighborly wars bryng vnto the same, than those attempted by the enimes. If parents against parents, and neighbours against neighbours had not begun mutuall hatred and contention, neuer had Demetrius ouerthrown the Rhodes, neuer had Alexander conquered Thyr, Marcellus Syracusa, Scipio Numantia. I recommend vnto you also the poore people, loue the orphanes
and fatherless children, support and help the widowes, beware of quarrels and debates amongst you, and the caufes of the helpleffe fe that ye maintaine and defende: because the Gods dyd neuer wreeke more cruell vengeance vpon any, than vpon thofe which dyd ill intreate and vfe the poore and needy: and many times I haue heard my Lord Nerua say, that the gods neuer shewed themselves fo rygorous, as agaynft a mercileffe and vn pitifull people. Semblably, we pray you to be modest of woroods, pacient to suffer, and ware in your forme of lyfe. For a great fault it is, and no leffe blame to a Gouernor, that he prayfe the people of his com-mon wealth, and gyue them occafion to speake euill of him: and therefore they which haue charge of the common wealth, ought rather to repofe truhaft in their workes, than in their woroods, for fo much as the Citizens or common people, do rather fixe thoyr judgement vpon that which they fee, than on that which they heare. I would wysh that (touching the affayres appertinent to the Senate) they might not know in you any fparke of ambicion, malice, deceipte, or enuy, to the intent that the juft men might not fo much complain of the communding of the common wealth, as vpon the entertainment and profite of the same. The Empire of the Greeks putting thoyr felicity in eloquence, and we in well doing. I speake this (ryght honorable Fathers) to Counfell and Exhorte ye, that when ye be assembled in Senate, ye do not consume tyme in dyfputing and holding opinions for the verification of any thynge. For if you will judge wythout parciality and affection without great disputation, ye may come to reafon. I do remember that being at a leffon of Appolonius Thianeus, I heard him say that it was not fo expedient that Senators and Emperors shoule be skilful and wyse, as if they suffred themselves to bee gouerned by thofe that were of great experience and knowledge: and verely he faid truth: for by that meanes he prohibited and forbad them, not to arret and f tand vpon their owne opinion, whereof they ought to be many times fulpicious. Lykewyfe we recommend vnto you the cenfores, who haue charge of Judgement, and the Tribunes, whose office is to attende the affayres of Common Wealthe, that they bee wyse and learned in the Lawes, expert in the Cuftomes, prouident in Judgementes, and
ware in theyr trade of lyfe: for I say vnto you, that a wyfe man is more availeable in gouernement of a common wealth, than a man of ouermutch fkyll and experyence. The forme then whych ye shal obserue in matters of Iudgement shall be thus: that in ciuile proceffe you keepe the law, and in criminall caufes to moderate the fame, bicaufe haynous, cruell, and rigorous lawes be rather made to amaze and feare, than to be obserued and kept. When you giue any fentence, ye ought to consider the age of the offen-daunt, when, how, wherefore, with whome, in whose presence, in what time, and how longe ago, forsomutch as euery of these thyngs may eyther excufe or condemne: whych you ought to beare and vfe towards them in lyke fort as the gods towards vs, who giue vs better helpe and succoure and correct vs lefse than we deferue. That consideration the Judges ought to haue, bycaufe the offenders doe rather trefpafs the Gods than men: if then they be forgiven of the gods for offences whych they commit, reason it is that we pardon faultes don by thosé rather then by our felues. In like maner we commaund you, that if your enimies do you any anoiance or iniury, not incontinently to take reuenge, but rather to diſsemble the fame, bicaufe many wrongs be don in the world, which were better to be diſsembled than reuenged. Wherein ye shal haue like regard, touching offices in the Senate and Common Wealth, that they be not giuen to ambitious or couetous perfons: for there is no Beafe in the World fo pestiferous and Venomous, to the Common Wealth, as the Ambicious in command- ing, and the couetous in gathering togethier. Other things we let paffe for this tyme, vntil we haue intelligence howe these our commaundements be fulfilled. This Letter shal be red in the chyefefl place within the Senate, and afterwards pronounced to the people, that they may both know what yee com- maunde, and see alfo what ye doe. The Gods keepe you, whom we pray to preferue our mother the City of Rome, and to fend vs good succeffe in thefe our Warres.
A notable Letter sent from the Romane Senate to the Emperour Traiane, where in is declared how sometimes the region of Spayne did furnish Rome with gold from their Mines, and now do adorn and garnish the same with Emperours to gouerne their Common wealth.

The sacred Romane Senate, to thee the great Cocceius Traiane new Emperour Augustus, health in thy gods and ours, graces everlaſtyng wee render to the immortall Gods, for that thou art in health, which wee defyre and pray may be perpetual. We signified vnto thy majesty the death of Nerua Cocceius, our foueraigne Lord, and thy predeceſſor, a man of sincere lyfe, a fyrend of his Common Wealth, and a zealous louver of Iustice, wherein also we advertiſed, that like as Rome did wepe for the cruell lyfe of Domitian, fo much the more bitterly doth she bewayle the death of thine vncler nerua, whose councel (although hee was very olde and diseased) which he gaue vs lyinge on his Bedde, we loued better, and imbraced with greater comforte, than all the enterpryſes and deedes don by his predeceſſors, when they were in health and luſty: and besides the ordinary mourning vſed to bee done in Rome for Prynces, wee haue caused all recreation and paftime to ceafe, fo wel in the common wealth as with euery of vs particularly. We haue shut vp the Temples and made the Senate vnderſtand, how displeafantly we accept the death of good men. The good old gentleman nerua dyed in hes housſe, and was buried in the ﬁeldes of Mars: he died in debte, and we haue payd hes debtes: he dyed calling vppon the Gods, and we haue canonized him amongs theyr numbre, and that which is most to be noted, hee died commending vnto vs the common wealth, and the Common wealth recommending it self vnto him: and a little before his latter gaspe, to the principall of the holy Senate, and many other of the people, standing about his bedſide, he sayde: “O ye fathers, I committe vnto you the common wealth and my selfe also vnto the Gods: vnto whom I render infinite thankes, because they haue taken from me my children, to bee mine heires and haue lefte mee Traiane to suſcede.” You do remembre
dread soueraign lord) that the good Empereour Nerua had other succeffours than your maiefty, of nearer alyance, of greater frendfhip more bound by feruice, and of greater profe in warfare: notwithstanding amongs other noble perfonages, vpon you alone he caft his eyes, reposing in you fuch opinyon and confidence, as to reuie the prowes and valyaunt facts of the good Emperor Auguftus, he supprefied in oblivion the infolent facts of Domitian. When Nerua came vnto the Crowne, he found the treafure pilled, the Senate in diffentyon, the people in commotion, Iuflice not obferved, and the Common wealth ouerthrown: which you likewyfe prefently fhall finde, although otherwyfe quiet and wholy reformed: wherfore we fhalbe right glad, that you confere the Common wealth in the state wherein your vnkle Nerua left it, confiderynge specially that new Prynces vnder colour to in trode new cuftoms, do ouerthrow their common Wealths: fourtene Prynces your predeceffours in the Empyre were naturally borne in Rome, and you are the firfte fraunger Prynce. Wherefore we pray the immortall Gods, (fith that the flocke of our aun cient Cæfars is dead) to fend thee good Fortune. Out of the countrie of Spaine was wont to come to this our Romane city great abundance of gold, filuer, feele, leade, and tinne, from their mines: but now in place thereof, the giueth vs Emperours to gouern our common wealths: fith then that thou commeft of fo good a countrie as Spayne is, from fo good a Prouince as is Van dolofia, and from fo excellent a city as Cales is, of fo noble and fortunate a Linage as is Cocceius, and aduanced to fo noble an Empire, it is to be supposed that thou wilt prove good and not euil: for the Gods immortall many times do take away their graces from vngratefull men: moreover (moft excellent prince) fith you wrote vnto vs the maner and order what we ought to doe: reaфон it is that we write to you agayne what you ought to forefee: and fith you haue tolde vs, and taught vs to obey you, meeete: it is that we may know what your pleafure is to commaunde: for that (it may come to passe) that as you haue bene brought vp in Spayne, and of longe time bene abfent from Rome, through followinge the Warres, that not knowing the lawes whereunto we are sworn, and the cuftomes which we haue in Rome, yee commaunde some thinge
that may redound to our damage, and to your dishonor: and therefore we accoumpt it reason that your Majestie bee aduertised hereof, and the fame prevented, for so much as Princes often-times be negligent of many things, not for that they wil not fore-see the fame, but rather for want of one that dare tell them what they ought to doe: and therefore we humbly beseech your most excellent majestie, to extende and shewe forth your wisedome and prudence, for that the Romanes hearts bene drawn and made pliant rather by fauourable diligence, than by prouoked force. Touchinge the vertue, Iustice, may it please you to remembe the fame: for your olde vncle Nerua was wont to say, that a Prince for all his magnanimitie, valiancse, and felicity, if he do not vfe and maintayne Iustice, ought not for any other merite to be prayfed and commended. Semblably we make our humble Petition, that those commaundements which you shal send and require to be put in execution, be thoroughly establisshed and obserued: for the goodnesse of the lawe doth not confit in the ordinaunce, but in the fulfilling and accomplisheinent of the fame: wee will not also omit to say vnto you (most famous Prince) that you must have pacience to suffer the importunate, and to dissemble with the offenders: for that it is the deede of a Prince to chastifie and punishe the wrongs done in a common wealth, and to pardon the disobedience done vnto him. You send vs word by your letters that you wil not come to Rome, vntyll you haue finisshed the Germaine Warres: whych seemeth vnto vs to be the determination of a vertuous and right noble Empeour, for so much as good Princes such as you be, oughte not to desiere and chose places of delite and recreation, but rather to seke and win renowne and fame. You commaunde vs alfo to haue regarde to the veneration of the Temples, and to the seruice of the Gods: whych request is iust, but very iuste it were and meete that your selfe should doe the fame: for our seruice would little preuaile, if you should displease them. You wil vs alfo one to loue an other, whych is the counsell of a holy and peaceable Prince: but know ye that wee shal not be able to doe the fame, if you wil not loue and intreat vs all in equall and indifferent forte: for Prynces chearyshinge and louing some aboue the rest, do raife flanders
and grudges amongst the people: you likewise recommend unto vs, the poore and the widowes: wherin we thinke that you ought to commanad the Collecters of your Tributes, that they do not grieue, when they gather your ryghtes and customes: for greater finne it is to spoyle and pill the needy fort, than meritorious to succour and relieue them. Likewise you do persuade vs to be quiet and circumspet in our affayres, which is a persuation resembling the nature of a worthy Prince and also of a pitifull father. In semblable maner you require vs not to be opiniona- tiue and wilfull in the Senate, ne affectionate to self wil whych shal be done accordingly as you commanad, and accept it as you say: but therwithall you ought to think that in graue and wayghty matters, the more depely things be debated, the better they shall be prouided and decreed: you bid vs also to beware, the Cenfores be honeste of lyfe and rightful in doing iustice: to that we anw- were, that in the same we will haue good respet, but it is expedi- dent that you take hede to them whom you shal name and ap- point to those offices: for if you do chose such as they ought to be, no cause shal rife to reprehend them. Item wher you say, that we ought to take hede, that our children committe no offences to the people, wherein the aduise of the senate is, that you do draw them awaye from vs, and cal them to the Almayne warres, for as you do knowe (right fourein prince) that when the pub- like welth is exempt, and voyd of enimies, then the same wil begin to bee replenyshed wyth youthfull vices. Notwithstanding when the warres bee farre of from Rome, then the same to them is profitable, bicause there is nothing which better cleanseth common wealths from wicked people, than warres in straunge Coun- tries. Concernenyng other things which you write vnvo vnde full it is not now to recite them, but onely to see them kept: for truely they seeme rather to be the lawes of God Apollo him selfe, than counfels of a Mortall man. The gods preferre your 

Maiefly, and graunt you good successe in those your warres.

These Letters and Epiftles, although besides the Scope and Nature of a Nouell, yet so worthy to be read and practysed, as no History or other mortall Precepte more: expressinge the great care of a mais-
ter towards his scholler, that he should prove no worse being an emperor, than he shewed hymselfe diligent when he was a Scholer: fearing that if he should gouerne contrary to his expe-
ctation, or degenerate from the good institution, whych in hys yong yeares hee imbraced, that the blame and flaunder shoule rest in hymselfe: that was his tutor and bringer vp. O careful Plu-
tarch, O moft happy maifter, as well for thine owne induftry, as for the good succeffe of such a Scholer: and O moft fortunate and vertuous Emperor, that could fo wel brooke and digeft the bliffed persuafions of futch a maifter, whose mind wyth the blast of promotion, was not fo fwole and puffed, but that it vouchsafed to cal him father and maifter, ftil crauing for in instigation of reprooffe, when he slid or flypped from the path of reafon and duety. And happy Counfel and Senate that could fo wel like and praettye the docu-
ments of fuch an Emperour.
OF THREE AMOROUS DAMES.

THE THIRTEENTH NOUELL.

A notable History of three amorous Gentlewomen, called Lamia, Flora, and Lais: conteyning the futes of noble Princes and other great Personages made unto them, with their answeres to divers demaundes: and the manner of their death and funerals.

Leauyne now our morall discourse of a carefull Mayster, of a prouydent Scholer, of a vertuous Emperoure, of a sacred Senate, and unforme magistry, returne we to the setting forth and description of three arrant honest Women, which for lewdness were famous, and for wicked Lyfe worthy to be noted with a blacke coale, or rather their memory raked in the Duff and Cinders of their Corpses vnpure. But as all histories be ful of lesions of vertue and vice, as Bookes, sacred and prophane, describe the liues of good and bad for example fake, to yelde meanes to the posterity, to en-fue the one and efchue the other, fo haue I thought to intermingle amongest these Nouels the seuerall sortes of either, that ecb Sexe and Kinde may pike out like the Bee, of ecb Floure, Honny, to store and furnishe with delightes their well disposed myndes. I purpose, then, to vnlace the diffolute lyues of three Amorouse Dames, that with their graces allured the greatest Princes that euer were: enticed the noble men, and sometimes procured the wifhest and best learned to craue their acquaintance, as by the sequel hereof shall well appeare. These three famous Women, (as Writers do witnesse) were furnisshed with many goodly graces and gifts of nature: that is to say, great beautye of face, goodly proportion of body, large and high foreheads, theyr brestes placed in comely order, fmal wafted, fayre handes of passing cunning to play vpon Instruments, a heauenly voice to fayne and sing: briefely, their qualities and beauty were more famous than euer any that were born within the Countries of Asia and Europa. They were neuer beloued of Prince that did forfake them, nor yet they made request of any thing which was denied them: they neuer mocked or flowtcd man (a thing rare in women of theyr condition) ne yet were mocked of any: but theyr speyal proprieties wer to allure men to
loue them: Lamia wyth hir pleasaunt loke and eye, Flora with hir eloquent tongue, and Lais wyth the grace and sweeteneffe of hir singing voyce: a ftraunge thinge that he which once was surpynyfed wyth the loue of any of thos three, eyther to late or neuer was delyuered of the fame. They were the richest courtizans that euer lyued in the worlde, so long as theyr life did laft, and after theyr deceafe, great monumetnes were erected for theyr remembranue, in place where they died. The moft auncient of these three Amorous dames was Lamia, who was in the tyme of King Antigonus, that warfared in the feruice of Alexander the Great, a valyant gentelman, although not fauored by Fortune. Thys kyng Antigonus left behynde hym a sonne and heyre called Demetrius, who was leffe valyaunt, but more fortunate than his father, and had bene a Prynce of greate effimation, if in hys youthe hee had acqyred frendes, and kept the fame, and in hys age had not ben gynen to fo many vices. Thys King Demetrius was in loue with Lamia, and prefented hir wyth rich gitges and rewardes, and loued hir fo affectionately, and in fuch fort, as in the loue of his Lamia he femed rather a sole then a true louer: for, forgetting the grauity and authoritie of his perfon, hee dyd not onelye gyue hir all fuch things as hee demaunded, but besides that hee vfed no more the company of his wyfe Euxonia. On a tyme Kyng Demetrius asking Lamia what was the thing wherewith a woman was foneft wonne? “There is nothing,” anfwered shee, “wych sooner over-commeth a Woman, than when the feeth a man to loue hir with al hys hart, and to fuffeyne for hir fake greate paynes and payfions wyth long continuance and entier affection, for to love men by collusion, caufeth afterwards that they be mocked.” Agayne, Demetrius asked hir further: “Tell me, Lamia, why doe diuerfe Women rather hate than loue men?” Whereunto she anfwered: “The greatest caufe why a Woman doth hate a man, is, when the man doth vaunt and boaft himfelfe of that which he doth not, and performeth not the thing which he promifeth.” Demetrius demanded of her: “Tell me, Lamia, what is the thing wherewith men doe content you beft?”—“When wee fee him,” fayde she, “to be dyfcrete in wordes, and fecret in his dedes.” Demetrius asked hir further: “Tell me, Lamia, how chaunce this that men
be ill matched?” “Bycaufe,” answered Lamia, “it is impossible that they be well maried, when the wife is in neede, and the husbande vndifcrete.” Demetrius asked her what was the caufe that amitye betwene two louers was broken? “There is nothing,” answered she, “that foner maketh cold the loue betwene two louers, than when one of them doth straye in loue, and the Woman louer to importunate to crane.” He demaunded further: “Tell me, Lamia, what is the thinge that mofte tormenteth the louing man?” “Not to attayne the thing which he defireth,” answered she, “and thinketh to lofe the thing whych he hopeth to enjoy,” Demetrius yet once agayne asked hir thys quесtion: “What is that, Lamia, which moft troubleth a Woman’s hart?” “There is nothing,” answered Lamia, “wherwith a woman is more grieued, and maketh hir more fad, than to be called ill fauored, or that she hath no good grace, or to vnderstand that she is diffolute of lyfe.” This lady Lamia was of judgement delicate and subtyll, although il imploied in hir, and thereby made al the world in loue with hir, and drew al men to hir through hir fayre speach. Now, before she loft the heart of Kyng Demetrius, shee haunted of long time the vnienrfities of Athenes, where shee gained great fstore of money, and brought to deftruction many young men. Plutarch, in the lyfe of Demetrius, faith, That the Atheniens hauing prefented vnfo him xii. c. talents of money for a subfidie to pay his men of warre, he gaue al that fumme to his woman Lamia: by meanes whereof the Atheniens grudged, and were offended wyth the kyng, not for the loffe of their gift, but for that it was fo euil employed. When the King Demetrius would affure any thynge by oth, hee fwoore not by his gods, ne yet by his predeceffors, but in this fort: “As I may be fyll in the grace of my lady Lamia, and as hir lyfe and mine may ende together, fo true is this which I fay and do, in this and thys fort.” One yere and two Moneths before the Death of King Demetrius, his frend Lamia died, who frowed fo much hir death, as for the abfence and death of hir, he caufed the Phylofofphers of Athens to entre in this Disputation, Whether the teares and frowe whiche he shed and toke for her fake, were more to be eftemed than the riches which he fpent in her obfequies and funerall pompes. This Amorous gentlewoman Lamia, was borne
in Argos, a City of Peloponnesus, besides Athenes, of bafe parentage, who in his first yeares haunted the countrey of Asia Maior, of very wyld and disolute lyfe, and in the ende came into Phænicia. And when the Kyng Demetrius had caufed hir to be buried before hys chamber-window, hys chiefeft frendes asked him, wherefore hir had entoomed hir in that place? his aunfwere was this: “I loued hir fo wel, and the likewyfe me fo hartyly, as I know not which way to fatiffie the loue which she bare me, and the duety I hau to loue her agayne, if not to put hir in fuch place as myne eyes maye wepe every day and mine hart still lament.” Truely this loue was straung, which fo mighty a Monarch as Demetrius was, did beare vnto fuch a notable curtizan, a woman vtererly void of grace, barren of good workes, and without any zeale or spark of vertue, as it should appeare. But fith we read and know that none are more giuen or bent to vnreaonable loue, than mighty Princes, what shoulde it bee demed straung and marvellous, if Demetrius amongs the reft do come in place for the loue of that most famous woman, if Fame may ftrech to eyther forts, both good and euill? But let vs come to the fexd infamous gentlewoman, called Lais. She was of the ifle of Bithritos, which is in the confines of Græcia, and was the daughter of the great Sacrificer of Apollo his temple at Delphos, a man greatly experienced in the magike art, wherby he prophecyed the perdition of his daughter. Now this amorous Lias was in triumph in the time of the renowned King Pyrrhus, a Prince very ambitious to acquire honor, but not very happy to keepe it, who being yonge of fieeteene or feuenteeene yeares, came into Italy to make warres against the Romains: he was the first (as fome fay) that aranged a camp in ordre, and made the Phalanx, the mayne square and battell: for before hys time, when they came to entre battell, they affailed confusedly and out of array gaue the onfet. This amorous Lias continued long time in the campe of Kyng Pyrrhus, and went wyth hym into Italy, and wyth hym retournd from warre agayne, and yet her nature was futch, as shee woulde neuer bee mainteined wyth one man alone. The fame Lias was fo amorous in her conuerfation, fo excellent fayre, and of fo comely grace, that if shee would haue kept hir felfe faythful to one Lorde or gentleman, there
was no prynce in the world but if he would haue yelded himefelfe and all that he had at hir commaundement. Lias, from hir retourne out of Italy into Greece, repayred to the cite of Corinth, to make hir abode there, where she was pursuied by many kings, lordes, and prynces. Aulus Gellius faith (which I haue recited in my former part of the Pallace of pleafure, the fiftenth Noeuill,) that the good Philofopher, Demofthenes, went from Athens to Corinth, in diſguifed apparell, to fee Lais, and to haue hir company, But before the dore was opened, he fet one to demaunde xxi. C. Seftercios of filuer: whereunto Demofthenes anfwered: "I buy not repentance fo decre." And I beleue that Demofthenes fpake thofe wordes by folowyng the fentence of Diogenes, who fayeth, that euery beaft after fuch acte is heaue and fad. Som wryters affirme of this Amorous Lais, that thing whych I neuer reade or hearde of Woman: whych is, that fhee neuer fhowed figne or token of loue to that man whych was defyrous to doe her feruice: nor was neuer hated of man that knew her. Whereby we may comprehend the happe and fortune of that amorous Woman. Shee neuer fhowed felemble of great loue to any perfon, and yet fhee was beloued of all. If the amorous Lamia had a good Spirite and mynde, Lais truely had no leeff. For in the art of loue she exceeded all other women of hir deteftable Arte and Scyence, as well in Knowledge of Loue as to profite in the fame. Vpon a Daye a Younge Man of Corinth demaundying of hir, what hee fhoulde fay to a Woman whom hee long tyme had loued, and made fo greate fute, that thereby he was like to fal into difpayre. "Thou fhalt fay," (fayd Lais) "unto hir, that fith the wyl not graunte thy requesst, yet at leafft wyfe it myght pleafe hir to fuffer thee to bee hir fervuant, and that fhee would take in good parte the Seruice that thou fhalt doe vnto hir. Whych requesfte if fhee doe graunte, then hope to attayne the ende of thy attempte, bycaufe wee Women bee of fuch nature, as opening our mouthes to gyue fome mylde and pleaffant anfwere to the amorous perfon, it is to bee thoughte that wee haue gyuen our heart vnto hym." An other Daye, in the preſence of Lias, one prayled the Phylophers of Athens, faying, that they were very honeft perfonages, and of great learnynge. Whereunto Lais aunswered: "I can not tell what great knowledg they haue, nor what science
they study, ne yet what booke yeure Philosophers doe reade, but thys I am sure, that to me beynge a woman and neuer was at Athenes, I see them repayre, and of Philosophers beecome amorous persons." A Theban knighte demaunded of Lais, what he might doe to enjoy a ladie wyth whose loue hee shoule bee surprised: Shee aunswered thus. "A man that is defirous of a woman, must folow his fute, ferue hir, and suffer hir and somtymes to seeme as though he had forgotten hir. For after that a womans heart is moued to loue, she regardeth more the forgetfulness and negligence vscd towards hir, than the doth the seruice done before."

An other Gentleman of Achaia asked hir what he shoulde doe to a woman, whom he fuspected that she had falsified hir fayth Lais aunswered, "make hir beleue that thou thinkest she is very faythful and take from hir the occasions wherby she hath good caufe to be vnfaithful: For if she do perceiue that thou knowest it, and diſſemblest the matter, the wyll sooner dye than amende." A gentlewoman of Paleſtine at another time inquired of hir what hee shoulde doe to a Woman whych he ferued, and did not efteeme the feruice done vnto hir, ne yet gaue him thankes for the loue which hee bare hir. Lais fayde vnto him: "If thou be disposed to ferue hir no longer, let hir not perceiue that thou haft gyuen hir ouer. For naturally we women be tendre in loue, and hard in hatred." Beyng demaunded by one of hir Neyghbours what shee shoulde doe to make hir Daughter very wyfe. "Shee" (fayde Lais) "that wyll haue hir Daughter to bee good and honeft, must from her youth leanre hir to feare, and in going abrode to haunt little company, and that she be shamefaft and moderate in hir talke."

An other of hir neighbors inqueryng of hir what shee myght doe to hir daughter whych began to haue delght to rome in the fieldes and wander abroade. "The remedy" (fayde Lais) "that I finde for your daughter disposed to that condition, is, not to suffer hir to be ydle, ne yet to be braue and fumptuous in apparel." This amorous gentlewoman Lais, dyed in the Citye of Corinth, of the age of lxxii. Yeares, whose death was of many matrones defired and of a great numbre of amorous perſones lamented. The thyrd amorous gentlewoman was called Flora, which was not fo auncient, ne yet of fo greate renoume as Lamia and Lais.
were, whose country also was not so famous, For she was of Italy, and the other two of Grecia, and although that Lamia and Lais exceeded Flora in antiquity, yet Flora surmounted them in lineage and generositie. For Flora was of noble house, although in life lesse than chait. She was of the country of Nola in Campania, issued of certayne Romans, Knights very famous in facts of Armes and of great industrie and gouernement in the common wealth. When the Father and mother of this Flora deceasde, she was of the age of xv. yeares, indued with great riches and singular beauty, and the very orphan of all her kynne. For she had neyther brother lefte wyth whom she myght soeourne, ne yet vnkle to gyue her good counfell. In such wyfe that lyke as this young, maistres Flora had youthe, riches, lyberty and beauty, euen fo there wanted neyther bades nor Pandores to entyce hir to faI, and allure hir to folly. Flora seeinge hir self befet in this wife, she determined to go into the Affrick warres, where she hazarded both in hir person and hir honor. This dame flourished and tryumphed in the tyme of the firste Punique warres, when the Conful Mamillus was sent to Carthage, who dispended more Money vpon the loue of Flora, than shee did vpon the chase and pursuite of his enemies. This amorous lady Flora had a wriytyn and tytle fixt vpon hir gate, the effect wherof was this: King, Prince, Dictator, Conful, Cenfor, high Bishop, and Questor may knocke and come in. In that wriytyn Flora named neither emperor nor Caesar, bycaufe those two most Noble names were long tyme after created by the Romans. Thys Amorous Flora would neuer abandon hir Perfon, but wyth Gentlemen of Noble Houfe, or of greate Dygnitye and Ryches. For shee was wonte to say that a Woman of passinge Beauty shoule be fo mutch esteemed as shee doth esteeme and fette by hir selfe. Lias and Flora were of contrary maners and conditions. For Lias would first bee payde, before shee yielded the vse of hir bodie: but Flora wythout any semblance of desire eyther of golde or filuer was contented to bee ruled by those with whom shee committted the facte. Wherof vppon a day being demanded the question, she anfwered: “I gyue my body to prynces and noble Barons, that they may deale with mee lyke Gentlemen. For I
fweare vnto you by the Goddesse Venus, that neuer man gaue me so little, but that I had more than I looked for, and the double of that which I could demand." This Amorous lady Flora was wont many times to faye, that a wife woman (or more aptly to terme her a subtyll Wench) oughte not to demand reward of her lover for the acceptable pleasure which she doth hym but rather for the love whych she beareth him, bycause that al things in the world haue a certayn pryece, except love, which cannot bee payde or recompenced but wyth love. All the Ambassadors of the worlde, whych had accefle into Italy, made fo greate reporte of the Beauty and Generositie of Flora, as they dyd of the Romane common wealth, bycause it seemed to bee a Monstrous thynge to see the Ryches of hir house, hir trayne, hir beauty the princes and great lordes by whom she was required, and the presents and gifts that were gyuen vnto hir. This Amorous Flora had a continual regard to the noble house whereof shee came touchyng the magnyficence and flate of her seruyce. For albeit that she was but a common woman, yet she was serued and honored lyke a great lady. That day wherein she rode about the city of Rome, she gaue occasion to be spoken of a whole month after, one inquirynge of an other what great Romaine lords they were that kepte her company? Whose men they were that weighted vpon her? And whose liuery they ware. What Ladies they wer that rode in her trayne. The brauery of hir apparell, hir great beauty and port, and the wordes spoken by the amorous gentlemen in that troupe were not vremembred. When this maistres Flora waxed old, a yong and beautifull gentleman of Corinth, demaunded her to wyfe, to whom she anwered: "I know well that thou wilt not marie, the three score yeares whych Flora hath, but rather thou defrest to haue the twelve hundred thousand Sefercios whych she hath in hir Coffres. Content thy selfe therefore, my frende, and get thee home agayne to Corinth from whence thou comest. For to such as be of myne age great honor is borne, and reuerence done for the riches and wealth they haue, rather than for mariage." There was neuer in the Romane Empyre, the lyke amorous woman that Flora was, induw wyth so many graces and Queenelyke
qualities, for she was of noble house, of singular beauty, of comely personage, discrete in her affayres, and besides all other comly qualities, very lyberall. This maistres Flora spent the moft part of hir youth in Affrica, Almayne and Gallia Transalpina. And albeit that she would not suffer anye other but great lords to have poifefion of hir body, yet she applied hir selfe to the spoile of those that were in place, and to the praye of those that came from the warres. This amorous Flora died when she was of the age of LXXV. yeares. She left for the principal heire of all hir goods and Iuell. the Romain people, which was esteemed sufficient and able to make newe the Walles of Rome, and to raunfome and redeeme the common Wealth of the fame. And bycaufe that she was a Romaine, and had made the state therefore hir heyre, the Romanes builded in hir honor a sumptuous Temple, which in memory of Fora was called Florianum; and euery yeare in the memorye of hir, they celebrated hir feaft uppon the daye of hir death: Suetonius Tranquillus sayeth, that the firft feaft which the Emperour Galba the second celebrated wyth in Rome, was the feaft of the amorous Flora, uppon whych daye it was lawful for men and women, to doe what kynd of dishonesty they could devise. And she was esteemed to be the greater saint which that day shewed her selfe moftie dissolute and wanton. And bycause that the temple Florianum, was dedycated to amorous Flora, the Romanes had an opinion, that al women which uppon the same daye repayed to the Temple in whorishe apparell, should haue the graces and gifts that Flora had. These were the fond opinions and maners of the auncient, which after their owne makinge and deuises framed Gods and Goddeffes, and bycause the proued vnshamefaft and rich, a Temple must bee erected, and Sacrfices ordayed for hir Whorish triumphes. But that noble men and Kings haue bene rapt and transported with the lurements of such notorious strumpets, is and bath bene common in all ages. And commonly such infamous women be indewed with greatest gifts and graces, the rather to noofell and dandle their fauorers in the laps of their fadinge pleasures. But euery of them a most speciell grace, aboue the rest. As of a Kyng not long agoe we reade, that kept
three, one the holieft, another the craftieft, and the third the merieft. Two of which properties meete for honest Women: although the third fo incident to that kinde as heat to a liuinge body. Ceafe wee then of this kynde, and let vs step forth to be acquaynted with a lady and a Queene the Godlyest and ftouteft, that is remembred in any auncient Monument or Hyftory.
ZENOBIA QUEENE OF PALMYRES.

THE FOURTEENTH NOUELL.

The lyfe and giftes of the moft Famous Queene Zenobia with the letters of the Emperour Aurelianus to the sayde Queene, and her stoute aunfwere thereunto.

ZENOBIA Queene of Palmyres, was a right famous Gentlewoman, as diuerfe Hyftoriographers largely do report and write. Who although she was no Chriftian Lady, yet so worthy of Imitation, as she was for hir vertues and heroycall farts of Immortall prayfe. By hir wyfedome and stoutneffe she subdued all the empire of the Orient, and refifted the invincible Romans. And for that it is meete and requifite to alleage and aduouch reafons by weight, and words by meafure, I wil orderly begin to recite the History of that moft famous Queene. Wherefore I fay, that about the 384. Olimpiade, no long tyme after the death of the vn-happy Emperour Decius, Valerian was chofen Emperour by the Senate, and (as Trebellius Pollio his Hyftorian doth defcribe) he was a well learned prince, indued with manyfold vertues, that for his speciall prayfe, thefe wordes be recorded of him. If all the World had bene affembled to chafe a good Prince, they would not have chosen any other but good Valerian. It is also written of hym, that in liberality he was noble, in words true, in talke wary, in promise conftant, to his friends familier, and to his enemies feuere, and which is more to be efteed, he could not forget feruice, nor yet reuenge wronge. It came to pafTe that in the xiv. yeare of his raygne, there rofe futch cruell Warres in Asia, that forced he was to go thither in his owne perfon, to refift Sapor king of the Perfians, a very valyaunt man of Warre and fortunate in his enterprifes, which happineffe of hys not long time after the arryuall of Valerian into Asia, bee manifested and shewed. For beeyng betweene them fuch hot and cruell warres, in a kyrmifh, throughe the greate faulte of the General, (which had the condukt of the armye) the Emperour Valerian was taken, and brought into the puiffance of King Sapor hys ennimy, whych curled tyrant fo wickedlye vfed that victory, as hee woulde by no meanes put the
Emperor to raunfome, towards whom hee vfed such cruelty, that so oft and so many tymes, as hee was disposed to gette vp on horfebacke hee vfed the body of olde Valerian to ferue hym for aduantage, setting his feete vpon the throat of that aged gentleman. In that myserable office and vnhappy captiuitie serued and dyed the good Emperor Valerian, not wythoute the greate forrowe of them that knew him, and the rueful compaffion of thofe that fawe him, which the Romans confidering, and that neither by offre of gold, or filuer, or other meanes, they were able to redeeme Valerian, they determined to choose for Emperor his owne fonne called Galienus: which they did more for refpeft of the father, than for any minde or corage they knew to bee in the fonne. Who afterwardes fhewed himfelfe to bee farre different from the conditions of his father Valerian, being in his enterprifes a cowarde, in his promifles a lyer, in correction cruell, towards them that serued him vnthanckfull, (and which is worfe,) hee gaue himfelfe to his defires, and yealded place to fenfuality. By meanes wherof, in his tyme the Romain Empyre more than in any others raygne, loft moft prounes and receiued greateft shame. In fa£tes of warre he was a cowarde, and in gouernement of common wealth, a very weake and feeble man. Galienus not caryng for the state of the Empire, became fo myserable as the Gouernors of the fame gaue ouer their obedience, and in the tyme of his raygne, there rofe vp thyrty tyrants, whych vfurped the saine. Whofe names doe followe, Cyriades, Posthumus the younger, Lollius, Victorinus, Marius, Ingenuus, Regilianus, Aureolus, Macrianus, Machianus the younger, Quietus, Odenatus, Herodes, Moenius Ballista, Valens, Pio Emilianus, Saturnius, Tetricus, Eticus the younger, Trebelianus, Heremianus, Timolaus, Celius, Titus, Censorinus, Claudius, Aurelius, and Quintillus, of whom xviii, were captaynes and fervitors vnder the good Emperor Valerian. Sutch delight had the Romanes, in that auncient world, to haue good Captaynes, as were able to bee preferred to be Emperours. Nowe in that tyme the Romanes had for their Captayne generall, a knight called Odenatus, the Prynce of Palmyres, a man truely of great vertue, and of passinge industry and hardinesse in fa£tes of warre. This Captayne Odenatus maried a
ZENOBIA QUEENE OF PALMYRES.

woman that descended of the auncient linage of the Ptolomes, ometymes Kinges of Ægypt, named Zenobia, which (if the historians do not deceiue vs) was one of the most famous Women of the Worlde. Shee had the heart of Alexander the great, shee possest the riches of Cæsars, the diligence of Pyrrhus, the trauel of Hani-ball, the warie foresighte of Marcellus, and the Iustice of Traiane. When Zenobia was married to Odenatus, she had by her other husband, a sonne called Herodes, and by Odenatus shee had two other, whereof the one was called Hyeronianus, and the other Ptolemus. And when the Emperour Valerian was vanquished and taken, Odenatus was not then in the Campe. For as all men thought, if he had ben there, they had not receyued so greate an ouerthrow. So sone as good Odenatus was aduertized of the de-faiët of Valerian, in great haste he marched to the Roman Campe, that then was in great disorder. Whych with greate diligence he reassembeld, and reduced the fame to order, and (holpen by good Fortune,) wythin xxx. Dayes after hee recovered all that whych Valerian had losfe, makynge the Perfian kyng to flee, by meanes whereof, and for that Odenatus had taken charge of the army, hee wanne amonges the Romanes great reputation, and truely not with out cause: For if in that good time he had not receyued the charge the name and glory of the Romanes had taken ende in Asia. Duryng all thys tyme Galienus, lyued in his deligtyes at Myllan, wythout care or thoughte of the Common wealth, confumynge in his wyfull vices, the Money that was leuied for the men of war. Whych was the cause that the gouernours of the provinces, and Captens general, feigning him to be so vicious and neglygent, vfurped the provinces and armes which they had in charge. Galienus voyde of all obedience fauing of the Italians and Lombards, the first that rofe vp against him were Posthumus in Fraunce, Lollians in Spayne, Victornius in Affrica, Marius in Britane, Ingenuus in Germanie, Regillianus in Denmark, Aureolus in Hungarie, Macrianus in Mesopotamia, and Odenatus, in Syria. Before Odenatus rofe against Valerian, Macrianus enioied Mesopotamia and the greateft part of Syria, whereof Odenatus hauing intelligence, he marched with his power agaynst him and killed him, and discomfited all his army. The death of the Tyran Macrian being
known, and that Galienus was so vicious, the armies in Asia assembled and chose Odenatus Emperour: which Election although the Senate publickly durft not agree vpon, yet secretly they allowed it, bycause they receyued dayly newes, of the great Expoytes and deedes of armes done by Odenatus, and faw on the other fide the great continued follies of Galienus. Almost three yeares and a halfe was Odenatus Emperour and Lord of all the Orient, duringe which time he recovered all the Lands and Provinces loft by Galienus, and payde the Romane army all the arrerages of their wages due vnto them. But Fortune ful of inconfiantcy, suffred not this good Prynce very long to raygne. For hauing in hys houfe a kinfman of hys, named Meonius, to whom he bare great good will, for that he fawe him to be a valiant man of warre, although ignorant of his Enuy and couetousnesse: it chaunced vpon a day as they two rode on huntinge, and gallopinge after the purfute of a wylde Bore, with the very fame Bore Speare which Meonius caried to strike the beaft, he killed by treafon his good Cousin Odenatus. But that murder was not long time unreuenged. For the BoreSpeare wherewith he had fo cruelly killed the Emperour his Cousin, was incontinently known by the hunters which folowed Odenatus: wherupon that day the head of Meonius was striken of. And Galienius vnderstandinge the death of Odenatus, gaue great rewardes and preffents to them that brought him the newes, beinge fo joyfull as the Romans wer angry to vnderstand those pitiful tydings, bycaufe through the good ordre which Odenatus vfed in Asia, they had great tranquillity and peace throughout Europa. Now after the death of this good Emperour Odenatus, the Armies chose one of his two Sonnes to be Emperour of the Orient: But for that he was yonge, they chose Zenobia to be Protectour of hir Sonne, and gouerner over the fayd Orient Empyre. Who seeinge that vpon the deceafe of Odenatus cerayne of the East Countries began to revolt, the determined to open hir Treasures, resemble hir men of Warre, and in hir owne person to march into the fielde: where the did such notable enterpryse, as the appalled hir enemies, and made the whole world to wonder. About the age of xxxv. yeares Zenobia was widow, beinge the Tutrix of hir children, Regent of an Empyre, and Cap-
tayne generall of the army. In which weighty charge she vfed hir felfe so wifely and well, as shee acquired no leffe noble name in Asia, than Queene Semiramis did in India. Zenobia was constant in that wych she tooke in hand, true in words, liberall, mylde, and feuere where she ought to be, discrete, graue, and secrete in her enterprifes, albeit she was ambicious. For, not content with hir title of Gouerneffe, or Regent, she wrote and caus'd her felfe to be called Empresse, she loued not to ride vpon a Mule, or in a litter, but greatly esteemed to haue great horfe in hir stable and to learne to handle and ryde them. When Zenobia went forth of hir Tent to see the order and gouernment of hir Campe, she continually did put on her Armure, and was well guarded with a band of men, so that of a woman, she cared but onely for the name, and in the facts of Armes shee craued the title of valiant. The Captaynes of hir Army, neuer gaue battell, or made assault, they neuer fkyrmished or did other enterprife of warre, but she was prefer't in her owne perfon, and attempted to s'wee hirsele more hardy than any of all the troupe, a thinge almoft incredible in that weake and feele kinde. The sayd noble Queene was of stature, bigge and well proportioned, her eyes black and quicke, hir fore-head large, hir stomack and Breastes sayre and vpright, her Face white, and ruddy, a little mouth, hir Teeth so whyte, as they seemed like a rancke of white pearles, but above all things she was of futch excellent Spirit and courage, as shee was feared for hir stoutnesse, and beloued for her beauty. And although Zenobia was indued with so great beauty, liberality, riches, and puiſſanunce, yet she was neuer flayned with the blemish of vnchaſte lyfe, or wyth other vanity: and as hir husband Odenatus was wont to fay, that after shee felt hir felfe wyth chylde, shee neuer fuffered hym to come neare her, (futch was hir great Chriftity) fayinge that Women ought to marry rather for children than for pleafure. She was also excellently well learned in the Greke and Latine tongue. Shee did neuer cate but one Meale a Day. Hir talke was verye lyttle and rare. The Meate which shee vfed for hir repasfe, was either the hanch of a Wylde Bore, or elfe the fyde of a Deere. Shee could drinke no Wyne, nor abyde the fent thereof. But shee was fo curyous in good and perfect Waters, as shee would gyue so great
a Pryce for that, as is ordinarily gyuen for Wyne bee it neuer fo excellent. So foone as the Kinges of Agypte of Persia, and the Greekes, were adzertized of the death of Odenatus, they sent theyr Ambassadours to Zenobia, aswell to visite and comfort hir, as to bee her confederats and frendes. So much was she feared and re-doubted for her rare vertues. The affayres of Zenobia beinge in futch estate in Asia, the Emperor Galienus died in Lombardie, and the Romanes chose Aurelianus to bee Emperour, who although he was of a bafe and obscure lineage, yet hee was of a great valiance in factes of Armes. When Aurelianus was chosen Emperour, he made great preparacion into Asia, to inferre warres vpon Queen Zenobia, and in all hys tyme hee neuer attempted greater enter-prise for the Romanes. When hee was arryued in Asia, the Emperour proceeded agaynt the Queene, and shee as valiantly defended hir selfe, continually being betwene them great Alarams and skirmishes. But as Zenobia and hir people were of leffe trauell and of better skyl in knowledge of the Country, so they did greater harme and more anoiance vnto theyr Enemy, and thereof receiued leffer damage. The Emperour feing that hee shoulde have mutch adoe to vanquish Zenobia by armes, determined to overcom hir by gentle wordes and fayre promisses: for which cause he wrote vnto hir a letter, the tenor whereof ensueth.

Aurelianus Emperour of Rome and Lord of al Asia, to the right honorable Zenobia fendeth greetyng. Although to such rebellyous Women as thou art, it shoulde seeme vncomely and not decente to make requet, yet if thou wylt seeke ayde of my mercy, and rendre thy selfe vnder myne obedience, bee assured that I wyl doe thee honour, and gene pardon to thy people. The Golde, Siluer, and other riches, within thy Pallace I am content thou shalt enjoy, together with the kingdom of Palmyres, which thou mayest kepe duringe thy life, and leave after thy death to whom thou shalt think good, vpon condicion notwithstanding, that thou abadone all thyne other Realmes and Countryes which thou haft in Asia, and acknowledge Rome to be thy superior. Of thy vaillalls, and subiectes of Palmyres, we demaund none other obedience, but to be confederates and frendes, so that thou breake vp thy Campe, wherewyth thou makest warre in Asia, and disobeyest the city of Rome, wee will
suffer thee to haue a certayne number of men of warre, so wel for
the tuition of thy perfon, as for the defence of thy kyngdome, and
thy two Children which thou haddest by thy husbande Odenatus.
And he whom thou loue st beft shal remayne with thee in Asia, and
the other I will carry with me to Rome, not as prisoner, but as
hostage and pleadge from thee. The prisoners which thou haft of
ours, shalbe rendred in exchange for those which we haue of thine,
without raunfome of eyther parts. And by these meanes thou shalt
remayne honored in Asia, and I contented, will retourne to Rome.
The Gods be thy defence, and preferue our mother the city of
Rome from all vnhappy fortune.

The Queen Zenobia hauing reade the letter of the Emperour
Aurelianus, without feare of the contents, incontinently made such
aunfwere as followeth.

Zenobia Queene of Palmyres, and Lady of all Asia, and the king-
domes thereof, to thee Aurelianus the Emperour, health, and con-
folation, &c. That thou do intitle thy selfe with the Emperour of
the Romanes I doe agree, but to presume to name thy selfe lord of
the Eaft kyngdomes, I say therein thou doest offend. For thou
knowest well, that I alone am Lady Regent of all the Orient, and
the only dame and maystrefte of the same. Th'one part whereof
defcended vnto me by lawful Inheritance from my predecessors,
and the other part, I haue won by my prowesse and deedes of
armes. Thou sayest that if I rendre obedience vnto thee, thou
wilt do me great honor: To that I anfwere, that it were a dis-
honest part of me, and a deede most vnjust, that the Gods hauing
created Zenobia to command all Asia, she should now begyn
to bee flane and thrall vnto the city of Rome. Semblably, thou
sayest that thou wylt gyue and leave me al the golde, filuer, and
other ryches which I haue: Whereunto I anfwere, that it is a
wycked, and fonde request, to dispose the goodes of another as they
were thine owne. But thine eyes shall never see it, ne yet thy
handes shal touche it, but rather I hope in the Gods aboue to
beftow and crye a larges of that which thou haue at Rome, before
thou finger that which I haue and possesse in Asia. Truely Au-
relianus, the warres which thou makest agaynst me, and thy quar-
rell, bee most vnjust beeofore the supernall Gods, and very vnrea-
ZENOBIA QUEENE OF PALMYRES.

fonnaile before men, and I for my part if I haue entred or doe take armes, it is but to defend my self and myne. Thy comming then into Asia is for none other purpose, but to spoile and make hauocke of that which an other hath. And think not that I am greatly afrayde of the name of Romane Prynce, nor yet the power of thyne huge army. For if it bee in thy handes to gyue battell, it belongeth ouely to the gods to gyue eyther to thee or me the victory. That I remaine in fiede it is to me greate fame, but thou to fight with a widdowe, oughtest truelye to bee ashamed. There be come vnto myne ayde and Campe the Perians, the Medes, the Agamennonians, the Irenées, and the Syrians, and with them all the Gods immortall, who be wont to chaflfe futch proude princes as thou art, and to helpe poore Widowes as I am. And if it fo come to paffe, that the Gods doe permit and fuffre my lucke to be futch, as thou do bereue me of lyfe and diuoyle me of goods, yet it will be bruted at Rome, and publisshed in Asia, that the wofull wight Zenobia, was ouerthrowne and slayne, in defence of hir Patrimony, and for the conueracion of hir husbands honor. Labor no more then Aurelianus, to flatter and pray me, nor yet to threaten me: requere me no more to yeelde and become thy prifoner, nor yet to surrender that which I haue: for by doinge that I can, I accomplishe that I ought. For it will be sayd and noyfed through the world, (may it fo come to paffe as Fortune do not fauor mee) that if the Empresse Zenobia be captiue, she was not yet vanquished. Now touchinge my son which thou demaundest to carry with thee to Rome, truely that requesst I cannot abide, and mutch lefte do meane to graunt, knowing full well that thy house is stored full of manyfolde vices, where myne is garnisshed with many notable Philosophers: whereby if I leaue vnto my Children no great heapes of goods, yet they shalbe wel taught and instructed: For the one half of the day they spend in Learninge, and the other halfe in exercife of Armes. For conclusion of thy demaund, and finall aunswere, thereunto, I pray thee trauitive no more by letters to write vnto mee, ne yet by ambaffage to spende any furder talke, but attend vntill our controuerfie bee decided rather by force of Armes than by uttered wordes. The Gods preferue thee.
It is fayd that Aurelianus, receiuing that aunfwere did reioyce, but when he had red it, he was greatly offended, which incontinently hee made to bee known, by gathering together his Camp, and besieging the City wherein Zenobia was. And Aurelianus, wroth and outraged with that aunfwere, although his army was weary and halfe in dispayre (by reafon of the longe Warres,) yet he vsed fuch diligence and expedition in the siege of that place, as the Queene was taken and the city rafed: which done, the Empereur Aurelianus retourned to Rome, carying with him Zenobia, not to doe hir to death, but to tryumph ouer her. At what tyme to fee that Noble Lady goe on foote, and marche before the tryumphinge Chariot bare footed, charged with the burden of heauy chaynes, and hir two children by hir fide: truly it made the Ro- mane Matrons to conceyue great pity, being wel knowen to al the Romans, that neither in valorous deedes, nor yet in vertue or chastity, any man or woman of hir time did excell hir. The dayes of the triumph being done, all the noble Ladies of Rome assembled and repayred to Zenobia, and vsed vnto her great and honorable entraynement, giuing hir many goodly prefentes and rewards. And Zenobia liued in the company of thofe noble Matrons the space of x. yeares before she dyed, in estimation like a Lucrecia, and in honour like a Cornelia. And if Fortune had accompanied hir perfonage, fo well as vertue and magnanimity, Rome had felt the egreneffe of hir difpleaoure, and the whole world tafted the sweetneffe of hir Regiment. But nowe leaue we of, any longer to speak of Zenobia, that wee may direct our course to the hard fate of a King's daughter, that for loue maried a fimple perfon bred in hir father's house, who in base parentage, and churliffe kynde could e not be altered: but shewed the fruiets of brutifhneffe:

 tyll Lady Fortune pityinge the Ladie's cafe: provided for her better dayes, and chastized her vnkinde companion with deserts condigne for fuch a matche.
Euphemia the Kyng of Corinth's daughter fell in love with Acharistso, the servaunt of her father, and besides others which required hir in marriage, she disdain'd Philon the King of Peloponesus, that loued hir very fervently. Acharistso conspiring against the Kyng, was discouered, tormented, and put in prison, and by meanes of Euphemia deliuered. The King promis'd his daughter and kingdome to him that presented the head of Acharistso, Euphemia fo wrought, as he was presented to the King. The King gaue him his daughter to wyfe and when he died made him his heyre. Acharistso began to hate his wyfe, and condemned hir to death as an adulteresse. Philon deliuered hir: and upon the fute of hir subiects, she is contented to mary him, and thereby he is made Kynge of Corinth:

Constancy in honest loute (being a perfect vertue, and a precious ornament to the beloved, induing eyther, besides joy and contentation, with immortal fame and Glory,) hath in it selfe these onely marks and properties to be known by, Chastity, and toleration of aduerstie: For as the mynde is constant in loute, not variable, or geuen to change, so is the body continent, comely, honest and pacient of Fortunes plages. A true constant minde is moved with no fugred persuasions of frendes, is diuerted with no eloquence, terrified with no threats, is quiet in all motions. The blustering blasts of parents wrath, cannot remove the constant mayde from that which she hath peculiarly chosen to hir selfe. The rigorous rage of frendes, doth not difmay the louing man from the embracement of hir whom he hath amongs the rest selecete for his vnchanged feere. A goodly example of constant and noble loute this hitory ensuing describeth, although not like in both, yet in both a semblable constancy. For Euphemia, a kings daughter, abandoneth the great loute borne vnto hir by Philon, a yong prince, to loue a servaunt of hir father's, with whom she persevered in great constancy, for all his fable and ingratefull dealings towards hir. Philon seeing his loute despis'd never maried vntill he maried hir,
whom afterwards he delivered from the false surmised treason of hir cancred and malicious husband. Euphemia fondly married agaynst hir father's will, and therefore deferuedly afterwards bare the penaunce of hir fault: and albeit she declared hir selfe to be constant, yet duty to louinge Father ought to haue withdrawn hir rafli and heady loue. What daungers do enufe futch like cafes, examples be rife, and experience teacheth. A great dishonour it is for the Lady and Gentlewoman to disparage hir noble houfe with mariage of hir inferior: yea and great griefe to the parents to fee their children obstinate and wilfull in careleffe loue. And albeit the Poet Propertius describeth the vehement loue of thofe that be noble, and haue wherewith in loue to be liberal, in thefe verses:

Great is the fayth of Loue,
the constant mynde doth mutch auayle:
And hee that is well fraught with wealth,
in Loue doth mutch preuayle.

Yet the tender Damofell or louing childe, be they never so noble or rich, ought to attend the father's tyme and choyfe, and naturally encline to parent's will and likinge, otherwise great harme and detriment enufe: for when the Parentes fee the disobedience or rather rebellious mynde of theyr childe, their conceiued sorow for the fame, fo gnaweth the rooted plante of naturall loue, as either it haftneth their vntimely death, or else ingendreth a heape of melancholie humors: whych force them to proclaime defiance and bytter curfle against their propre fruit, vpon whom (if by due regard they had bene ruled) they would haue pronounced the sweete bleffying that Ifaac gane to Iacob, the mother's beft beloved Boye: yea and that displeasure may chaunce to dispossesse them of that, whych should haue bene the onely comfort and stay of the future age. So that neglygence of parent's heft, and careleffe heede of Youthfull head, breedeth double woe, but specially in the not aduised Chylde: who tumbleth himselfe firft into the breach of diuine lawes, to the curfles of the fame, to parent's wrath, to orphan's fate, to begger's lyfe, and into a sea of manifold miseries. In whom had obedience ruled, and reafon taken place, the hearte myght haue bene satified, the parent wel pleafed: the life
joyfully spent, and the posteritie succesiuely taft the fruits that elders hane prepared. What care and sorrow, nay what extre-
metie the foresayde Noble Gentlewoman susteyned, for not yeld-
ing to hir father's minde, the sequele shall at large declare. There
was sometimes in Corinth, a Citty of Grecia, a Kinge, which had
a daughter called Euphimia, very tenderly beloud of hir father,
and being arrived at the age of mariage, many Noble men of
Grecia made fute to haue hir to wife. But amongs al, Philon
the young king of Peloponefus, fo fiercely fell in love wyth hir, as
he thought he could no longer liue, if he were married to anye
other: for which caufe her father knowing him to be a King, and
of singular beautye, and that he was far in loue wyth his Daughter,
would gladly haue choen him to be his fonne in lawe, persuading
hir that she shoulde liue with him a lyfe fo happy as was poefyble
for any noble lady matched wyth a Gentleman, were he neuer fo
honorable. But the daughter by no meanes would confent vnto
hir father's wyll, alleaging vnto him divers and sundry considera-
cions whereby hir nature by no meanes would agree, nor heart con-
fente to ioyne wyth Philon. The king aboue all worldly thynges
loued his fayre daughter: and albeit hie would fayne haue broughte
to passe, that she shoulde haue taken him to husband, yet he would
not vfe the father's authoritie, but desired that Loue rather than
force shoulde mach his daughter, and therfore for that tyme was
contented to agree vnto hir wyll. There was in the Court a young
man borne of hir Father's bondman, whych hyght Acharisfo, and
was manumifed by the kinge, who made him one of the Efquiers
for hys body, and vfed his feruyee in sundrye enterpryse of the
warres, and bicause he was in those affayres very skilfull, of bolde
perfonage, in conflicts and battayles very hardy, the king did very
much faveur him, afwell for that he had defended him from mani-
fold daungers, as also bycause he had delinuered him from the trea-
fon pretended against him by the kyng of the Lacedemonians:
whose helpe and valyance, the king vfed for the murder and de-
struction of the fayde Lacedemonian king. For whych valiant
enterpryse, he bountifully recompenced him wyth honorable pre-
fermentes and flately revenues. Vpon this yong man Euphimia
fixed hir amorous eyes, and fell fo farre in loue, as vpon him alone
fhe bent hir thoughtes, and all hir louing cogitations. Whereof Acharifto being certified, and well epying and marking hir amor-
ous lookes, nouryshed with lyke flames the fire wherewith she
burned. Notwylching his loue was not so fervently bent vpon
hir personage, as his desire was ambicious for that she shoulde be
hir father's onely heyre, and therfore thought that he shoulde be
a moft happy man, aboue al other of mortall kynde, if he myght
peeze that inheritance. The king perceiving that loue, told his
daughter, that she had placed her minde in place fo strange, as
hee had thought hir wyfe would haue more warely foreseen,
and better wayed hir estate and birth, as com of a princely race,
and would haue demed futch loue, farre vnworthy hir degree:
requiringe hir wyth fatherly words, to withdraw hir settled mynde
and to ioyne with him in choyse of husbande, for that he had
none other worldly heire but hir, and tolde hir how he ment to
bewow hir vpon futch a personage, as a moft happy life she should
leade, fo long as the deftenies were disposed to weane the Webbe
of her Predefinid life; and therefore was resolwed to Efpoufe hir
vnto that noble gentleman Philon. Euphimia hearkned to this
valued tale, and with unliked words refused hir father's heft, pro-
testing vnto hir fuch reasons to like effect as shee did before,
therby to draw him from his conceived purpose, wherunto the
wife king hauing made replye, continuing his intended mynde,
at length in ragying wordes, and flameing mind, he sayd vnto
Euphimia: "How much the sweter is the wyne, the sharper is
the egred fawce thereof. I speake this Parable, for that thou
not knowing or greatlye regarding the gentle disposition of thy
father's nature, in the ende mayst so abuse the fame, as where
hitherto he hath bene curteous and benigne, he may become
through thy disordred deedes, ryghte fowre and sharpe:" and
without ytterance of further talke, departed. Who resting euill
content wyth that fonde fyxed Loue, thoughte that the next way
to remedy the same, was to tell Acharifto how gresouly he toke
his presumed fault, and in what heinous parte he conceived his
ingratitude, and how for the benefits which liberally he had
bestowed vpon hime, he had broughte and enticed hys daughter
to loue him, that was farre vngreeable her estate. And therfore
he called hym before hym, and with reasons firste declared the
duetye of a faythfull seruant to his Soueraigne lord, and afterwards hee fayd: That if the receyued benefits were not able to
lette him know what were conuenient and seemly for hys degree,
but would perfeuere in that which he had begon, he would make
him feele the iust displeasure of a displeased Prince, whereby hee
shoule repent the tyme that ever hee was borne of Woman's
wombe. These woordes of the Kyng seemed greeuous to Acha-
ritis, and not to moue hym to further anger hee seemed as though
that (being fearfull of the Kyng's displeasure) he did not loue
his daughter at all, but fayd vnto hym, that he deferred not to
bee so rebuked, for that it lay not in his power to wythstand hir
loue, the fame procedyng of hir own good wyll and lyberty: and
that hee for his part neuer requyred loue: if shee did bend hir mynd
to loue hym, hee could not remedye that affecting, for that the
freewyll of futch vnbyrdled appetite refled not in hym to reforme.
Notwythstandyng, bycaufe he vnderstoode hys vwylyng mind,
he from that tyme forth would so endeuer hymselfe as he shoule
well perceyue that the vnftayde mynde of the young gentlewoman
Euphimia, was not incensed by hym, but voluntarily conceyued
of hir selfe. "You shall doe well" (fayde the kyng) "if the
effecte procede accordinge to the promife: and the more accep-
table shall the fame bee vnto mee, for that I defyre it shoule so
come to passe." The king liked wel these woordes although that
Achariflo had conceiued within the plat of his entended mind,
from other treason. For albeit that he affirmed before the kyng's
owne face, that hee would not loue his daughter, yet knowing the
assured wil of the louyng gentlewoman, hee practised the mar-
rriage, and like an vnkind and wretched man, deuised conuenient
tyme to kil him: and fully bent to execute that cruel enterpryfe,
he attempted to corrupt the chiefest men about him, promising
promociouns vnto some, to some he assured restitution of reuuenewes,
which by father's fault they had loft before, and to other golden
hilles, so that hee mighte attayne by slauhter of the king, to
wynne a kingly state and kingdome: which the sooner he per-
used himself to acquire, if in secrete silence, they coulde put
vp that which by generall voice they had agreed. And although
they thought themselues in good assurance, that theyr enterpryse could take no ill sucesse, by reasow of their founde and good discoursse debated amongst themselues for the accomplisheinent thereof, yet it forturned that one of the conspiracy (as commonlye in futch lyke trayterous attempts it chaunceth) beeeyng wyth wys beloued Ladye, and shee making mone that little Commoditye succeed of hir Loue for hir Aduauncement, brake out into these wordes: "Hold thy peace" (fayde hee:) "for the tyme wyll not bee longe before thou shalt bee one of the chiefest Ladies of this land." "Howe can that bee?" (fayde wys Woman.) "No more adoe?" (quod the Gentleman:) "Cease from further questions, and bee merrye: for wee shall enjoye together, a verye Honourable and a quyete Lyfe." When hir Louer was departed, the gentlewoman went to an other of hir gossips very iocunde, and tolde hir what hir Louer had sayd: and shee then not able to keepe Counfell, wente and tolde an other: in such wyse as in the ende it came to the eares of the King's steward's wyfe, and she imparted the same vnto hir husband, who marking those words, like a man of great wisedome and experience, did verily beleue that the same touched the daunger of the king's person: and as a faithfull seruant to his lorde and maister, diligently harkned to the mutteringe talke murmured in the Court, by him which had tolde the same to his beloued Lady: and knowinge that it proceeded from Acharifto, which was an obstinate and fedicious varlet, and that he with three or four other his familiars, kept secret company in corners, iuged that which he first coniectured, to be most certayne and true: wherfore determined to moue the king thereof, and vpon a day finding him alone, he sayd vnto him, that the fidelity and good will wherwith he served him, and the desire which he had to see hym lyue in longe and prosperous Efstate, made hym to attend to the safeguard of hys person, and to hearken vnto futch as shoule attempt to daunger the same: for which cause, marking and eyfyng the doings of certayne of his chamber (whose common assemblies and priuy whisperings mislyking) he feared leaf they conspiring with Acharifto, shoule worcke treason, for berieuenge of his life: and to th' intent their endeouers might be prevented, and his safetty foreseene, he thought good to reucale the same to
hys Maiesty. Then he tolde the King the words that were spoken by the first Gentlewoman, to one or two of her companions, and disclosed the presumptions which he had scene and perceyued touchinge the same. Amongs the ill conditions of men, there is nothinge more common than Poyson, Conspiracies, and Treason of Prynces and great Lordes: and therefore enery little suspcion presuming lute perill, is a great demonstration of lyke myschiefe: which made the Kyng to geue credit to the Woords of hys Steward, hauing for hys long experience known him to be faythfull, and trufly. And sodaynly he thought that Acharifto attempted the same, that after hys death, by mariage of Euphimia, he might be the Inheritour of hys Kyngdome: the believe whereof, and the singuler credite which he repofed in hys Steward, besides other thinges, caufed hym to commande the captayne of hys Guard to apprehend thoſe 4 of whom hys Steward told hym, and Acharifto, committinge them to feueral Prifons. Then he fent hys Officers to examyne them, and found vpon their confessiōns, the accusatōn of his steward to be true: but Acharifto, although the whole effecte of the Treason was confessed by those foure conspirators that were apprehended, and adouched to his Face, and for all the Tormentes wherewith he was racked and cruciated, yet still denied, that eyther he was authour of the enterprisē, or partaker of a treason so wicked: then the king incontinentely caufed the foure Gentlemen of hys Chamber to be rewardēd accoridenge to the worthinesse of their offence, and were put to death, and Acharifto to be repryued in sharpe and cruell prifon, vntill with torments he should be forced to confesse that which he knew to be most certayne and true by the evidence of thoſe that were done to death. Euphimia for the imprisonment of Acharifto, conceiued incredible sorrow, and vnueths could be perfuaded, that hee would imagine, mutch leffe confpyre, that abominable fact, aswell for the loue which Acharifto seemed to beare vnto hir, as for the great good wyl wherewith he was affured that she bare vnto hym, and therefore the death of the Kyng to be no leffe grieue vnto hym, than the same woulde be to hir selfe, the Kyng being hir naturall and louing father: Acharifto thought on the other side, that if hee might speake with Euphimia, a way would be founde eyther for hys
escape, or else for hys deluyery. Whereupon Acharisto beinge
in this deliberation, found meanes to talke wyth the laylor's wyfe,
and intreated hir to shewe hym so much fauour, as to procure
Euphimia to come vnto him: she accordingly brought to passe,
that the yong Gentlewoman in secrete wife came to speake wyth
thys trayterous varlet, who so soone as he sawe hir, shedinge from
hys eyes store of teares, pitifullly complayninge, sayd vnto hir:
"I know Euphemia, that the kinge your father doth not inclofe
me in this cruel prifon, ne yet affliceth me wyth these miserable
torments, for any suspicion he conceuyeth of me for any intended
fact, but only for the loue which I beare you, and for the like,
(for whych I render humble thanks) that you do beare to me: and
beacuse that I am wery of this wretched state, and know that
nothing else can rid me from this paynefull Lyfe, but onely death,
I am determined wyth myne owne propre hands to cut the threed
of life wherewith the destinies hitherto haue prolonged the fame,
that thys my breathinge Ghozt, which breatheth forth these
doeful playntes, may fleece into the Skyes, to rest it selfe amongethe
reftfull spirites aboue, or wandre into the pleafaunte hellifh
fieldes, amongs the shadowes of Creufa, Aneas wyfe, or else wyth
the ghost of complayning Dido. But ere I did the fame, I made
myne humble prayer to the maiestye diuine, that hee would vouch-
safe to shewe me so much grace, as before I dye, I myghte fulfil
my couetous eyes with sight of you, whose ymage stille appeareth
before those greedy Gates, and fanfic representeth vnto my mynd-
full heart. Which great defired thing, fith God aboue hath
graunted, I yeld him infinit thankes, and fith my defteny is futch,
that futch must be the end of loue, I doe reioyce that I mufe dye
for your sake, which only is the caufe that the King your father fo
laboureth for my death: I neede not to molest you wyth the falte
evidence giuen against me, by those malicious villaines, that be
already dead, which onely hath thus incenfed the Kinge's Wrathe
and heauy rage agaynst mee: whereof I am so free, as worthilye
they bee executed for the fame: for if it were so, then true it is,
(and as lyghtly you myght beleue) that I never knew what Loue
you beare mee, and you lykewyfe did neuer knowe, the loue I
bare to you: and therefore you may thinke that so impossible is the
one, as I dyd euer meane, thinke, or ymagine any harme or peryll to your father's person. To be short, I humbly do befeech you to beleue, that so faythfully as man is able to loue a woman, so haue I loued you: and that it may please you to bee so myndfull of me in thys fadyng Lyfe, as I shal be of you in that lyfe to come.” And in fayinge so, wyth face all bathed in teares, he clypped hir about the myddle, and faft imbracing hir faid: “Thus takinge my laft farewell of you (myne onely lyfe and ioy) I commend ye to the gouernement of the supernall God, and my felfe to death, to be dyfpofed as pleafeth him.” Euphemia, which before was not perfuaded that Acharifto was guylty of that deuifed Trefon, nowe gaue ful belyfe and credite to his wordes, and Weeping wyth him for company, conforted hir fo wel as hir could, and bidding hir to bee of good chere, the fayde, that the she would fecke fuch meanes as for hir fake and loue he shou'd not dye: and that before longe time did paffe, shee would help hir out of prifon. Acharifto, although he vtttered by ruful voice that lamentable talke, for remedies to ridde himselfe from pryfon, yet he did but fayne all that he fpake, addyng further: “Alas, Euphemia, do not incurre your Father's wrath to pleafe my minde: fuffer me quietly to take that death, which finifter Fortune and cruell fate hath prouided to abridge my dayes.” Euphemia, vanquifhed with infpeakable griefe and burning paffion of loue, fayd: “Ah, Acharifto, the onely ioy and comfort of my lyfe, do not pierce my heart with fuch difpleafant wordes: for what shou'd I do in this wretched world, yf you for my fake shou'd fuffre death? Wherfore put away that cruell thought, and be content to faue your Lyfe, that here-after in ioye and myrth you may fpend the fame: trusting that yf meanes may be founde for your displaicter from hence, we shal liue the refe of our prolonged Lyfe together, in sweete and happy dayes: for my Father is not made of stone flint, nor yet was nourced of Hircan Tigre: he is not fo malicious but that in tyme to come hir may be made to knowe the true discoure of thine innocent lyfe, and hope thou shalt atteyne his fauour more than euer thou didft before, the care whereof onely leave to me, and take no thought thy felfe: for I make promife vpon myne affured faith to brynge the fame to paffe: wherefore gie ouer thy conceyued
EUPHEMIA OF CORINTH.

... 

gryefe, and bende thy selue to lyue so merie a life, as euery gentleman did, trained vp in court as thou haft bene." "I am content," said Acharifto, "thus to doe. The Gods forbid that I shoule declynemy hearte and mynde from thy beheft, who of thy wonted grace doeft secke continuance of my Lyfe, but rather, sweete Euphimia, than thou shouldest suffre any daunger to performe thy promife, I make request (for the common love betwene vs both) to leave me in this prescnt dangerous flate: rather would I lose my lyfe than thou shouldest hazard the least heare of thy heade for my releefe."

"Wee shall be both false ynough, (anuered Euphimia) for my deuice proceedinge from a woman's heade, hath already drawn the plot of thy deliuerance." And with those wordes they both did end their talke, whose trickling teares did rather finifhe the same, than willing mynds: and eyther of them geyning a kyfe vnto the Tower Walle, wherein Acharifto was sent shutte, Euphimia departed tormoyled wyth a Thoufande amorous Pryckes, and ceased not but firft of all to corrupt and winne the Iayler's Wyfe, whose hufband was sent forth on businesse of the king's: the conclusion of which practife was, that when shee caried meate to Acharifto, according to the order appoynted, shee should fayne hirselfe to be violently dispoyled of the Pryfon Key by Acharifto, who taking the same from hir: shee shoule shut hir in the Pryfon and escape, and when hir hufband did returne, shee shoulde make complaunt of the violence done vnto hir: accordinge to which deuife, the practyfe was accomplished: And when hir hufbande returned home, hearing his wyfe crie out within the Tower, was marauyllously amazed, and vnderstandinge that Acharifto was fled, (igno-raunt of the policy betwene his Wyfe and Euphimia,) hee fell into great rage, and speedely repayred to the Kyng, and tolde him what had chaunced. The Kinge thinking that the breach of Pryfon was rather through the woman's simplicite than purposed malice, did mitigate his displeasure, howbeit forthwith he sents out scouts to spy, and watch into what place Acharifto was gone, whose secret flight, made all their trauayle to be in vayne. Then the Kinge when hee saw that he could not be found, made Proclamation throughout his realme, that who so would bringe vnto him the head of Acharifto, shoulde have to Wyfe hys onely Daughter, and
after hys decease shoulde possesse his Kingdome for Dowry of that marriage. Many knightes did put themselves in redinesse to attende that enterprize, and aboue al, Philon was the chiefe, not for gredinesse of the kingdome, but for loue which hee bare vnto the Gentlewoman. Whereof Acharifto hauinge intelligence, and perceyuinge that in no place of Europa hee could bee safe and sure from daunger, for the multitude of them which pursuied him vnto death, cauied Euphemia to vnderstand the miserable Estate wherein hee was. Euphemia which bent hir minde, and employed hir study for his safegarde, imparted hir loue which shee bare to Acharifto, to an aged Gentlewoman, which was hir nurfe and gouernesse, and besought hir that she would intreat hir fonne called Sinapus, (one very well beloued of the king) to reach hir help vnto hir dehife, that Acharifto might retourne to the court agayn. The Nourfe like a wyfe woman lefte no persuasion vnspoken, nor counsell vnremembred, which she thought was able to dissuade the yong gentlewoman from hir conceiued loue: but the wound was so deepely made, and hir hearte fo greuoufully wounded with the three forked arrows of the little blinde archer Cupide, that defpifing all the reaons of hir beloued nurfe, shee sayde, how she shee wrimely bent eyther to runne from hir father, and to feke out Acharifto, to sustaine wyth him one equall fortune, or else wyth hir owne hands to procure death, if some remedy were not found to recover the king's good grace for the retourne of Acharifto. The Nourfe vanquished with pity of the yong mayden, fearinge both the one and the other daunger that myght ensue, sent for Sinapus, and uppon their talke together, Euphemia and hee concluded, that Acharifto shoulde be brought agayne vnto the Courte, and that shee hir selfe shoulde present him to the King: wherein shoulde want no kinde of diligence vntill the Kyng did entertaine him agayne for his faythfull seraunt, as he was wont to do. Vpon which resolution, Acharifto was sent for, and being come, Sinapus and Euphemia together with the nurfe tolde hym in what fort they three had concluded touchinge his health and safegarde: which of him being well lyked, did giue them humble thankes: and then Sinapus went vnto the kyng, and told hym, that there was one newly arriued at Corinth, to make a present vnto his grace of the head of
Acharifto. At which newes the kyng shewed hymselfe so joyfull, as if hee had gotten an other Kingdome: and heinge placed vnder his cloath of state, with his Counsell and Princely trayne about hym, tellinge them the caufe of that assembly, commanded hym that brought thofe news, to bring the party forth newlye come vnto the City to preuent the head of Acharifto before the preſence of the King, who no sooner looked vpon him, but fell into fuch a rage, as the fire seemed to flame out of his angry eyes, and commanded him pretently to be taken and put to death. But Acharifto falling downe vpon his knees, humbly beſought his maieſty to ggee him leaue to speake: but the kyng notuffering him to vtter one word commanded hym away. Then the Counſellours and other Lords of the Court, intreated his grace to heare him: at whose requestes and supplications he seemed to be content. Then Acharifto began to say: “Most sacred Prync, and redoubted souerayne Lord, the caufe of this my presumptuous re-paire before your maieſty, is not to shew my selfe guilty of thy late denifed conspiracy, ne yet to craue pardon for the fame, but to fatiffie your Maieſty, wyth that contented desyre, whych by Proclamation ye have pronounced through your highneffe Realmes and dominions: which is, to offer this heade for reuenge of the faulte vniuſtlye layed vnto my charge by thofe foure, which worthily haue taſted the deferued payne of theire offeſe. Wherefore I am come hither of myne owne accord, to shew the loue and greate defyre, whych euer I had to serue and pleafe your Maieſty: and for that I would not confume my life in your diſpleaure, I make offer of the fame to your mercifull wyll and dyſpoſition, choſyne rather to die, and leaue your maieſty satiﬁed and contented, than to lyue in happy state, your princely minde diſpleaſed: but defyrous that your maieſty should know myne innocence, I humblye beſech your grace to heare what I can say, that my fidelitie maye bee throughly vnderſtanded, and the wickedneſſe of the Varlets, mine accuſers wel wayed and conſidered.” Then he began to rehaſe all the things done by hym for the feruyc of his crowne and maieſtye, and ﬁnally into what daunger he did put himself, when he kylled the Lacedemonian king, that went about by treafon to murder him: whych enterpryſe might appeare vnto
him to bee a furie and evident testimonie, that hee ment nothinge hurtfull or prejudiciall to his highneffe: and that hee esteemed not his life, when hee adventured for his service and fauoure to employ the same: and after these alleged causes, he added briefly, that the love which his maiestie knew to be betweene him and Euphemia his Daughter, ought to haue persuaded him, that he had rather haue suffered death himselfe, than commit a thing displeasing to Euphemia. And knowing that a more offensive thyng could not chaunce to hir, than the vilent death of her father, hee myghte well thynke that hee would haue deuyfed the death of a Thoufande other, rather than that horible and abhominable deede, futeh as hys greatest Ennemy woulde neuer haue done, mutch leffe hee whych was bounde vnto hym by so many Receyued Benefittes, for whose service and preferuacion he had dedicated and vowed hys Lye and Soule: but if so be his maiestie's rancor and displeasure could not be mitigated, but by doinge him to death, hee defird that none of his alleged reasons shoulde bee accepted, and therefore was there ready to sacriוףce his life at his maiestie's disposition and pleasure. Acharifto by nature could tel his tale exceedingly well, and the more his tongue flode him in service, the greater appeared his eloquence: whych so pierced the minde of the king and persuaded the Counsellers, and other of the Court, as he was demed gilteffe of the treafon: and the matter was so debated, and the King intreated to graunt him pardon, as he was accompted most worthy of his favour. Then the kyng, by the aduife of hys Counsell, was perswaded, that by force of hys proclamation, hys daughter shoule be gien to Acharifto in mariage, and his kinge-dome for a dowrie, because hee had offered his owne heade, according to the effecte of the same. So the kinge repentinge himselfe that he had offended Acharifto, in the end agreed to the aduife of his Counsell, and gave him his daughter to wife: whereof Euphemia was so joyful, as they bee that atteyne the summe of their heart's desire. The father liued one whole yeare after this mariage, and Euphemia so pleafant a life for a certaine time, as was possibl for any Gentlewoman. Hir father was no sooner dead, but the vnkinde man, nay rather brute beafte, had forgotten all the benefits receyued of his kinde and louing wife: and hauing by hir onelye
means got a Kingdome, began to hate hir so straungely, as he could not abide hir sight, (futch is the property of cancred obliuion, which after it crepeth into amocious heads, neuer hath minde of passe Amitie, ne regardeth former benefite, but like a monfer and deadly enmity to humaine nature, ouerwhelmeth in his bottomlesse gulfe all piety and kindnesse) and determined in the ende for recumpence of futch great good turnes, to defpoyle hir of hir Lyfe. Howe thinke you, fayre Ladies, was not this a fayre rewarde for the loue, the trouailes and sorrowes susteined for this ingrate and villanous man, by that royal lady, to faue his life, and to take him to husband? Here is manifecft (probatum) that in a vile and feluyle minde, no vertue, no duety, no received benefites can be harboured. Here is a lesson for yong Gentlewomen to beware howe they contemne and despise the graue aduife of theyr auncient fathers. Here they may see the damage and hurt that vnaduised youth incurreth, when neglecyng theyr Parents holefome admonitions, they gyue themselues to the loue of futch as be vnworthy theyr estate and callyng. For what shoulde ayle the Gentle pucell borne of gentle bloud but to match her felte in like affinity, and not to care for curryfhe kind, or race of churle. Bee there no Gentlemen to be found of perfonage and beauty worthy to ioyn in loue wyth them? Bee they so precious in nature or tender in education as theyr lyke can not be vouchfased to couple in marriage yoke? Compare the glysteringe gold to droffie durt, and futch is the difference betweene gentle and vngentle. But perhaps bringyng vp may alter nature, and cuftome tranfforme defect of birth: as Licurgus the lawemaker dyd trye betwene the Currish whelpe and the Spanyell kinde, both by trayning vp running to their contraries, the Spanyel not vfed to hunt eigr e upon the potage difhe, the other noufled in that paftime purfuing his game. But that Metamorphosis is feldome seene amongs humane fort, and therefore I aduise the gentle kind, to matche themselues in equall lotte, and not to truft Sir Cuftome's curtefie in choyfe of feere. Returne we then to vnkind Acharifto, who now in full poffeccion of his defired praine, reuertinge to his puddle of carlishe will and canced nature, after many thousand wronges don to his moft noble and gentle Quene, accused hir to be an adulteresse, and as one indeede,
(although most innocent) she was condemned to the mercielle fire. Philon, Kyng of Peloponefus, which (as we have sayd before) loned Euphemia as he did the balles of his owne eyes, vnderstanding the crueltye that this wicked Man vfed towards hir, to whom both his lyfe and Kyngdome did belouge, moued wyth nobility of mynd, determined to declare to Euphemia the inward fervent lone which he bare hir, and to chaftife Achariffo for his ingratitude with due correction. Wherfore depely debating wyth himselfe of this adventure, thus he sayde: "Nowe is the time Euphemia, that Philon thewe what faythfull Loue he hath euer borne vnto thee, and that he delyuer thee both from the present daunger wherein thou art, and from the hands of that vnkynde wretche, that is farre vnworthy of such a wife: for if thou haddest agreed to thy father's wyll, and yelded to the purflute of him that loued thee best, thou haddest no neede of rescue nowe, ne yet bene in perill of the wastfull flames of fire, which be ready to confume thy fleshe and tender corps, full tenderly sometimes beloued of thy deare father, and of thy louyng frend Philon." When he had spoken those wordes, hee earnestly disposed him self vpon that enterpryfe. There was in those daies a custome amonge the People: and soone as the Sergeants and officers were approched neere the place wyth the lady, he issued forth, and did set vpon the throng, not sufferyng one of them to remayne aliue, to carye newes. When he had delyuered Euphemia from that present daunger of hir lyfe, and the companye diisperced, he sayd to the Queene: "Nowe thou mayst see (fayre Queene) the diuersitie, betwene the disloyaltie and vnkindenesse of Achariffo, and the faith and loue of Philon. But for that I meane not to leaue his ingratitude vnrevenge, thou shalt flay ye here, vntyll thou heare newes of the due chaftifment which I shall gyue hym." Those
dire and cruel words foretold of her husband's death moved her honest and Pryncely heart that by no means could be altered from the gentle nature, which it first had tasted and received: and although she had suffered Mortall and Solemne injury of her vnkinde husband for Manyfolde Benefits, yet (she a good gentle-woman) would permit no duetye of a truyte and faithfull Wyfe unperformed. Wherefore she befought Philon upon her knees, not to proceed to further reveng of Acharistto, telling him, that enough it was for her to haue escaped that present peryl, from which he like a princely Gentleman had deliverd her, and therefore duering her life was most bounde vnto him. Philon greately wondred at the goodneffe of this Ladie: howbeit the ingratitude of that Varlet by no meanes he would suffer to bee unpunifhed. And beeing advertised that Acharistto remayned in hys Palace without any suspcion of this adventure, banded neyther with Guarde or other affurance, committed Euphimia to safe custodie, and sodainly affailed the Palace of Acharistto: and finding the Gates open, he entred the city, crying out vpon the Wickedneffe and treason of Acharistto. At which wordes the whole City began to ryse, to helpe Philon in his enterpryse: for there was no state or degree, but abhorred the vnkinde order of that Varlet, towards the noble woman their Queene. Philon aided with the people, assaulted the Palace, and in shortspace inuaded the same: and the Varlet beeing apprehended, was put to death. The Corinthians seeing the noble mind of Philon, and the love which she bare to Euphimia, and knowing that their late Kyng was dispoed to haue matched her wyth Philon, were very willing to haue him to be their Kinge, and that Euphimia should be his wife, supposinge that vnder the gouvernement of a Prynce fo gentle and valiant, they might live very happily and joyefulye. Execution don vpon that moft vnkinde varlet, Philon caufed the Lady to be conueyed home into her royal pallece: and the people with humble submiffion, began to persuade her to marie wyth that younge Prince Philon. But she which had lodged her thoughts and fixed her mind vpon that caytife, who vnnaturaly had abused her, would by no meanes content to take a new husband, sayeing, that the seconde mariage was not to bee allowed in any woman. And albeit that she
knewe howe greatly she was bounde to Philon, as duringe life not able to recompence his louing kindnesse and valyante expoyte performed for hir safegard, yet for al hir vnhappy fortune, free was minded fyll to remayne a widowe, and well contented that Philon shoulde posseffe hir whole domynion and kyngdome, and she pleaed to lyue his subieete: which state she sayd, did like her beft. Philon, that not for desire of the Kingdome, but for loue of the Lady had attempted that worthy and honourable enterprize, sayd vnto hir: "Euphemia, it was onely for youre fake that I aduentured this daungerous induer, to ridde you from the flander that might haue ensued your innocent death, and out of the cruel hands of hym, whom vnworthily you did so dearly loue. No defyre of kyngdome or worldly glorye induced me herevnto: no care that I had to enlarge the boundes of my countrey foile pricked the courage of my mynd (that is altogether empty of ambytion) but the Passion of carelesse Loue, whych thys long tyme I haue borne you in your happy father's dayes, to whom I made incessant fute: and to your selue I was so long a Suter, vntyll I receyued extreame repulfe: for which I vowed a perpetuall single Lyfe, vntyll thys occaision was offred: the brute whereof when I hearde first, so stirred the mynde of your most louyng knight, that drouifie flepee or greedy hunger, coulde not force this reffleffe body to tarry at home, vntyll I reuenged my selue vpon that villaine borne, which went about wyth roasting flames to consume the innocente fleſh of hir whom I loued beft. And therfore mustred together my men of armes and in secret forthe imbarke our felues and arryued here: where wee haue accomplisshed the thynge we came for and haue settled you in quiet raygne, free from peryl of traiterous mindes, craving for thys my fact nought ẽſe of you but wylling mynd to be my wife: which fith you do refue, I paffe not for rule of your kyngdom, ne yet for abode in Corinth, but meane to leave you to your choyfe. For satiſfied am I, that I haue manifeſted to the world the greatneſſe of my loue, which was fo ample as ever king could beare to vertuous Queene: and fo farewell." At which words he made a ſigne to his people, that they shoulde ſhippe them felues for return to Peloponeſus. But the Senatours and al the people of Corinth feing the curteſſe of Philon,
and how greatly their Queene was bound vnto him, fel downe upon their knees, and with ioyned hands besought hir to take him to husbanded, never ceasing from teares and supplication, vntyl she had conferred to their requeste. Then the mariage was solemnisfied with great ioy and triumph, and the whole City after that tyme, lyued in great felicity and quiet, so long as nature lengthned the dayes of those two Noble Prynces.
THE SIXTEENTH NOUELL.

The Marchionise of Monferrato, with a banquet of Hennes, and certaine pleafant wordes, repreffed the fond love of Philip the French Kynde.

Good Euphimia (as you haue harde) did fondly apply hir love vpon a feruile man, who though bred vp in court where trayninge and vfe doth alter the rude conditions of futch as be intertayned there, yet voyde of all gentlenes, and frufrate of Nature's sweetenesse in that curteous kinde, as not exchaunginge native fiercenesse for noble aduauncement, returned to hys hoggith foyle, and walowed in the durty filth of Inhumanity, whose nature myght wel with fork, or slaffe be expelled, but home againe it would haue come, as Horace pleadeth in his Epiftles. O noble Gentlewoman, that mildly fuffred the difpleafure of the good king hir father, who would fayne haue diffuaded hir from that vnfeemely match, to ioyne with a yong Prince, a king, a Gentleman of great perfection: and O peffilent Carle, being beloued of fo honourable a pucell, that for treafon discharged thy head from the block, and of a dongoill flauce preferred thee to be a king, wouldeft for thofe deferts in the ende frame fayned matter to confume hir. With iuft hatred then did the Noble Emperour Claudius Cæfar prosecute thofe of bond and feruile kinde that were matched with the free and noble. Right well knew hee that fome taste of egrenesse would refl in futch fauage fruite, and therefore made a law, that the ifue of them should not haue like liberty and preheminence, as other had, which agreeably did couple. What harme futch mariage hath deferred to diuers fates and perfons (t'auoide other examples) the former Nouell teacheth. Wherfore to ende the fame, with bewailing of Euphimia for hir vnluckie lot, begin we now to glad our felues with the wife and stoute aunswer of a chafte Marquefse, a Gentlewoman of fingular beauty and discretion, made to the fond demaund of a mighty Monarch, that fondly fell in love with hir, and made a reckening of that, which was doubtfull to recouer. This king by Louing Hir whome he neuer faw,
fared like the man that in his sleepe dreamed that he had in holde
the thynge furthest from him. For the King neuer saw hire, before
he heard hire praifed, and when hee hearde hire praifed, for pur-
pofe to winne her, he travailed oute of his way, so fure to enjoy
hir, as if he had neuer seene hire. This historie, although breife,
yet fheweth light to noble dames that be purfued by Prynces,
and teacheth them wyth what regarde they ought to intertie
fuch futres. The Marquefte then of Monferrato, a cytie in Italy,
beving a Gentleman of great prawefle and valianee, was appointed
to tranfritte the Seas in a generall paffage made by the Chriftians,
wyth an huge Armie and great furniture. And as it chaunced,
upon a daie greate talke was had in the court of king Philip
furnamed Lufcus (bicaufe he was poreblinde) who likewyfe was
making preparation to depart out of Fraunce in the faid iourney.
Report was made by a knight which knewe the faid Marquize,
that in all the world there was not the like maried couple, as the
Marquize and his wyfe were, as well bicaufe the Marquize was
bruted to be an excellent gentleman, as alfo for that his wyfe
amonge al the troupe of Ladies, that liued in the world that time,
was the faireft and moft vertuous. Which words fo entred the
French king's head, as sodainely (neuer feeing hire in al his life)
he began to loue hire, and for that purpole determined to imbarke
him felfe at Genoua, that by travayling that way by lande, he
myght have good occaion to fee the Marchioniffe, thinking that
her hufband being abfent, hee might easily obtein that he defired.
And as he had deuised, he began his enterpryfe: who fending al
his power before, toke his iourney wyth a meane trayne of Gentle-
men: and beving within one Daie's iourney of the Ladys Houfe, hee fent hire worde that the nexte Daie hee would vifte
her at Dynner. The fage and discrete lady joyfully aunswered the
Mesfanger, that she would accompt his comming for a great and
singer pleasure, and fayd that hys grace should be moft heartily
welcome. Afterwards she maruelled why futch a king as he was,
would in hire hufbands abfence, come to hire houfe: and in that
maruel and consideracion she was no whit deceyued, conieauringe
that the fame of hire beauty was the caufe of hys comminge.
Neuertheloffe, like a wife Lady and honest gentlewoman, she de-
headed to do him honour, and caused the worshipfull of hir country futch as remayned behinde, to be assemblèd, for aduice in all things that were necessarie for hys intertaynment. But the feast and variëty of meats that shoule be ferued, she alone tooke vpon hir to dispoſe and order: wherefore speedily fendyng; about, and makeinge prouision for all the Hennes that migh be gotten throughout the countrey, commaunded hir cookes, of those Hennes without other thing what so euer, to prepare diuers feruices. The king fayled not the next day to come accordingly as he had fent word: and was with great honour receyued of the Lady, and in beholdinge hir, she seemd vnto hym (besides hys imagination comprehended by the former woordes of the Knyght) to be farre more faire, honest and vertuous, than hée thought, attributyng vnto hir, singular prayſe and commendation. And so much the more his desire was kindled, as she paffed the estimation bruted of hir. And after that the King had wythdrawen hir felfe into the chamber oderne and made ready for hym, as appertained to a Prynce so greate, and that dinner time was come, the King and Madame the Marchionisſe fat together at one boorde, and other accordyng to their degrees were placed at feueral tables. The King ferued with many Diſhes and excellent Wynes, beholding with sometymes the Lady Marchionisſe, conceyued great delight and pleafure. But vewing the feruice, and meates (although dresseſd in diuers fortes) to be but Hennes, he began to wonder, specially knowing the foyle wherein they were to be so rich and plentifull, as by little trauayle, great abundance of Foule and Venifer might haue bin provided, and thought that she had indifferent leyfure to Chafe and Hunt, after that she had fent hir woorde of hys cominge. Notwythſtandinge he would not take occaſion to enter into talke of those wants of better Cheare (hir Hennes only excepted) who looking vpon hir, with mery Countenancce hee sayde vnto hir: “Madame were all these Hennes bred in thy countrie wythout a Cock?” The Marchionisſe which full well vnderſtoode the caufe of his demaunde, thinkinge that God had fent hir an apt tyme for aunſwer as she desired, boldly aunſwered the Kinge: “No and it pleafe your grace, but of Women, albeit in honour and apparell there is some difference, yet they be al made in this Coun-
trey as they be else where." The kyng hearing hir aunfwere, right wel did know the occasion of the Banket of Hennes, and where- unto hir wordes did tend: and condired that to beftow any further talke to so wyfe a Lady, it were in vayne, and that force there could take no place. Lyke as vnaduifedly he fell in loue, so it behoued him of neceffity wyfely to staunch the fire for his honour fake, and wythout any more taunting wordes, fearing hir reuenge, he dined without hope to get other thinge of hir. And when hee had done, to the intent by hys fodayne departure, he might couer his dishonest comming, thankinge hir for the honour which he had receyued, and thercemending him to God, he departed to Genoua. Here may be proued the great difference betweene Wysedome and Folly, betweene Vertue and Vice. The King more by Luft, than other defire, by circumstances endeu- oured to found the deapth of the Ladie’s minde:

she by comely anfwere, payd hym home for his folly. A liuely representation of a noble creature, so well bedecked wyth Vertue as wyth Beauty.
THE SEUENTEENTH NOUELL.

Mistresse Dianora demaunded of maister Anfaldo a garden to faire in January, as in the moneth of May. Maister Anfaldo (by meanes of an obligation which he made to a Necromancer) caused the same to bee done. The husband agreed with the gentlewoman that she should do the pleafure which maister Anfaldo required, who hearinge the liberality of the husband, acquitted hir of hir promise, and the Necromancer discharged maister Anfaldo.

Of all things commonly accompanying the maner and trade of man's life, nothing is more circumspeçtly to be attended and provided for, than regard and estimation of honeftye: which attire, as it is moft excellent, and comely, fo aboue all other vayne Toyes of outward apparell to bee preferred: and as honeftye hath all other good Conditions included in it selfe, as the same by any meanes cannot stray out of that tract, troden before by the steppes of that moft excellent vertue: even fo, impoffible it is for the party adorned with the same, to wander one iote from that foretrodden Path: wherefore let eche wyght that traceth this worldly Lyfe, foresee the due obseruation of all thinges incident to that which is honeft. Nothinge in thys lyfe (fayth Tully in his oration, for the Poet Archias) is fo much to bee regarded. Honeftye, for the gettinge whereof all torments of body, all perills and daun-gers of death be not to be regarded: honeftye then beinge a Treasure fo precious, what care not onely for the attchieuinge but for the conservacion ought to bee employed? in the prætie whereof, one speciaall thinge ought to be attended, which is, how a vow or promife ought to be made, or how the estimation of honeftye ought to be hazarded for any thinge seeme it neuer fo impoffible: for what is it that loue and Money hath not brought to paffe? what heard adventurees by Iafon? what sleight by Alexander the Sonne of kynge Pryamus? what monsters slayne and labours fus-
tyned by Hercules? what daungers and exploits some haue in-
curred and other attempted by diuers? to bee short,

Nihil est quod non effrenò captus amore, auti.

As Ouide the Poet sayth:

Nothing there is, but that the louing man doth dare,

Surprised with frantike fit, eche deed he doth not spare.

Wherfore let every wight beware how they gage their honesty
for any enterprize (feeme it neuer so impossible). Maistresse
Dianora deereely beloued of a gentleman, and earnestly affayled,
in the ende yelded vpon a condition: which if it could be brought
to passe (which she thought impossible) was content to surrender
to his lone: who consulting with a Magitian, performed hir re-
quest: then what folowed, and what counsel hir husband gaue hir,
after she had broken the effect of hir promise to hym, and what
Curtefie was vfed on all fides, the sequele hereof dyfclofeth.

The Countrey of Frioli although it be colde, yet is it pleafaunt by
reason of many faire mountaines, riuers, and cleere fprynges that
are in the same: where there is a City called Vdina, and in the
same sometime dwelllyng a faire gentlewoman called Maistresse
Dianora, the wyfe of Gilberto, a notable rich man, a very curteous
personage, and of good behauiour. This Lady, for hir graces and
vertues, was intierly beloued of a Gentleman and great Lord, called
maifter Anfaldo Grandese, who for his liberalyty and valyance in
armes, was famous and well known: and albeit that hee loued
hir ferenently, seking al meanes possible to be beloued of hir,
soliciting hir many tymes by Anbaffadours, yet his labour was in
vayn. And the Lady being offended for hys dayly fute and trauyle, hee for al hir refuflat and difagreement to his desire, would
not abfaine from louing hir, but still mayntayne his importunate
fute: she deuifing with her selfe how to rid him away, made a re-
quest vnto him, fo ftraunge and impossible, (in hir judgement) as
he was not able to bring the same to passe: and vpon a day she
fayd vnto an old woman, (the which cam often tymes to fue vnto
hir in hys behalf) these words: "Good wife, thou haft many
times asfured me, that Maifter Anfaldo doth loue mee aboue all
other, and thou haft offered vnto me maruellous giftes and pre-
fents in hys name: al which I haue refufed, vpon consideration,
that I mynd not to fauour or loue him for his goods: but if thou canst iuftify by warrantize, or other probable argument, that hee loueth me so much as thou sayest, I will condescend without fayle to loue him againe and to doe the thing that it shal pleafe hym to commaund me: therfore if he wil assure me to doe that thing which I shal require hym to do, tel him that I am at his commaundement.” “What is that madame,” (said the old woman) “that you desire?” “The thing which I demaund” (answerd the Gentlewoman) “is, that he should caufe to be made here without the Citie, during the moneth of Januarie next commyng, a gardan full of greene herbes, floures and trees, bespred wyth leaues, euen as it were in the moneth of May: and if so be that he do it not, then let him neuer send thee or any other vnto me agayn: for if afterwards he be importunate vpon me, like as I haue hitherto kept it clofe from my husbande and parents, euen so complayning vnto them, I wyll affaye to bee di patched from hys long and tedious fute.” When the knight vnderstoode that request, and the offer that hys Mystrefe made him (although it seemed a thinge very difficulte and all most impossible to bee done) knowinge very well that she did the same for none other purpose, but onely to put him out of hope that euer he should enjoy bie, hee determined notwithstandinge, to proue what hee was able to do. And for that purpose sent to seeke in many places of the Worlde if there were any man that could assift him and geue him Counfel therin. In the ende there was one found that offered to doe it (if he were well waged thereunto) by the art of Necromancie, with whom maister Anfaldo bargained for a great summe of Money. Then he expected the moneth of Januarie with great devotion, whych beeinge come, euen when the coldest wether was, and that all places were ful of snowe and yce, this Necromancer vfed his art in fuch fort, as in the night after the holy dais of Christ-masfe, in a faire medow adjoyning to the city, ther appeared in the morning (as they can testifie that saw the same) one of the fairest gardens that euer any man saw, full of herbes, trees, and fruities of all forte: which when maister Anfaldo had seen, God knoweth if he were glad or not; and incontinentely causd to be gathered the fairest fruities and floures that were there, and secret-
lye sente the same to his Friende, inviting hir to come and see the Garden which she had procured him to make, to the intent thereby she might know the loue that he bare hir, and to remember the promise which she made him, and confirmed by othe, that he might from that time forth esteeme hir a woman so good as hir promise. When the Gentlewoman sawe the flowers and fruictes and hearing tell by report of the strange things that were in that Garden, began to repent hir selfe of the promise which she had made: but for all her repentance, she like one dehrons to strange things, wente wyth many other women to see the same: and hauing praised it, not wythout greate admiration, she returned home, the angriest woman that euer was, when she had considered in what for she had abused hir selfe by meanes of that Garden: and hir rage was so greate, that she could by no meanes kepe the same so secrete or close, but that her husband muste perceive the same, who woulde needes knowe of hir al the whole matter: the Gentlewoman a long time kepte it secrete: in the ende she was constrained to declare vnto him the same in order. Hir husbandle hearing what she had promisied was sodainely very angry: afterwardes considering the pure intente of his wife, hee wisely appeased hir, and sayd: "Dianora, it is not the acte of a wyfe and vertuous wife to encline hir care to fuch messages as thosse be, and leffe honest to make any marte or bargain of hir honesly with any person, vnder what condicition soeuer it be. Words which the hart receiued by the eares, haue greater force than many do esteeme, and there is nothing so difficult, but by the amorous is brought to passe. First therefore thou hast done euil to glue care vnto fuch ambassage, and afterwards for agreement to the bargain: for the weight of chastity is so ponderous, as by no meanes it ought to be laid in balance, eyther by impossibilities to boast and bragge therof, or else by assurance of their conceiued thought to bring it into question, leaft in all places the same may be dyputed vpon, and blemysh with the note of lightnesse, the person tyl that time unspotted: but bycause I know the purity of thy heart, I wyll agree vnto thee for discharge of thy promisie, whych peraduenture, some other would not doe, moued therunto for the feare I haue of the Necromancer, who if he see Mayster
Anfaldo to be offended bicaufe thou haft deluded hym, may doe vs some displeasure: wherfore I wyll that thou go to maifter Anfaldo, and if thou canest by any meanes to vfe thy selfe (as thyne honour faued) thou mayft discharge thy promife, I shal commend thy wit: but if there be no remedye otherwyse, for that onely time then lende forth thy Body and not thy wyll.”

The gentlewoman hearyng hir husband so wifely speake, could doe nought els but weepe, and fayd, that she would not agree to his requeste. Notwythstanding, it pleased the husband (for al the denial whych his wife did make) that it shoule be so: by meanes wherof, the next morning vpon the point of day the Gentlewoman in the homlieft attire she had, with two of hir servantes before, and hir mayde behinde, wente to the lodging of maifter Anfaldo, who when he hearde tell that hys Louer was come to see hym, marvelled mutch, and rising vp, called the Necromancer, and fayde vnto hym: “My wyll is, that thou see how mutch thyne arte hath prevailed:” and going vnto hir, without any disordinate luft, he faluted hir wyth reuerence, and honestly receiued hir. Then they entred into a faire Chamber, and sittynge downe before a great fire, he fayde vnto hir these Wordes: “Madame, I humbly beleeche you, if the loue which I haue borne you of long time, and yet doe beare, deferue some recompence, that it pleafe you to tell me vnfainedly the caufe which haue made you to come hither thus early, and with such a company.” The shamefaft Gentlewoman, hir eyes ful of teares, made answere: “Sir, the loue which I beare you, nor any promised faith haue brought me hither, but rather the only commaundement of my husband, who hath greater respect to the payne and travaile of your disordinate loue, than to his own honour or my reputation, who hath caused me to come hither, and by hys commaundement am redy for this once to fatifie your pleasure.” If Mayfter Anfaldo were abafhed at the begynnynge, he much more did maruell when he hearde the Gentlewoman thus to speake, and moned with the liberalitie of hir husband, he began to chaunge his heate into compaifion, and fayd: “Miftrefle, God defend if it be true that you do say, that I shoule foyle the honour of hym, whych hath pity vpon my loue, and therefore you may tarrie here so long as it shal pleafe you,
with futch assurance of your honesty as if you were my naturall sifter, and frankly may depart when you be disposed, vpon futch condition, that you render in my behalf thofe thanks vnto your husband which you shal thinke convenient, for the great liberality whych he hath imployed vpon me, deeming my selfe henceforth so much bound vnto him, as if I were his brother or Seruaunt.'

The Gentlewoman hearing thofe wordes, the best contented that euer was, sayd vnto him: "All the worlde could never make me beleue (your great honesty considered) that other thing could happen vnto mee by my commyng hyther, than that which pre-fently I see: for which I reckon my selfe perpetually bounde vnto you."

And takynge hir leaue, honorablye returned in the afore-fayde company home to hir husband, and tolde hym what had chaunced, which engendred perfect loue and amytye betweene hym and mayfter Anfalde. The Necromancer to whom maifter Anfalde determined to gyue the price, couenanted betwene them, feynge the liberality which the husbande had vfed towards mayfter Anfalde, and the like of mayfter Anfalde towards the Gentlewoman, sayd: "God defend, that fith I haue seene the husband lyberall of his honour, and you bountifull of your loue and curtefie, but that I be likewyse franke in my reward: for knowing that it is well employed of you, I purposse that you shall keepe it still." The knyghte was ashamed, and would haue forced him to take the whole, or part: but in offryng the same, he loft his laboure: and the Necromancer the third day after, hauying vndon his Garden, and desirous to departed, tooke his leaue.

Thus Anfalde extinguishing the dishonest loue kindled in hys hearte, for inioying of his Lady, vpon consideracion of honeste charity, and regard of Curtefie, repreffed his wanton minde, and absteyned from that which God graunte that others by lik Ex-ample may refrayne.
Mithridanes envious of the liberality of Nathan, and goinge aboute to kill hym, spake vnto him unknowne, & being inforrmed by himself by what means he might do the fame he found him in a little wood accordingly as hee had tolde him, who knowinge him, was ashamed, and became his friende.

Strange may feeme thys following Hyftory, and rare amonges thofe, in whom the vertue of liberality neuer florislied: many we reade of, that haue kept Noble and bountifull houfes, entertayninge Gueftes, both Forrayne and free borne, plentifully Feaftinge them with variety of cheere, but to entertayne a Gueft that afpyreth the death of his hooft, and to cherishe hym after hee knew of it, or liberally to offer his life, feldome or neuer we reade, or by experience knowe: but what moued the confpirator to frowne at the ftaate and life of Nathan? euen that froward pestilent paflion Enuy, the confumer and deadly monfter of all humanity: who imitatinge the like coft, and port of his deuout hooft Nathan, and feekinge after equall glory and fame, was through enui's force for not attayninge the like, driuen to imagine how to kill a good and innocent man: for enuy commonly wayteth vpon the vertuous, even as the shadow doeth the body. And as the Cantharides (which fimilitude Plutarch vfeth) delight in ripe and prosperous wheate, and crawle in spreadinge rofes, so enuy chiefly them which in vertue and richesse do abound: for had not Nathan bene famous for hys goodneffe, and glorious for liberality, Mithridanes would neuer haue prosecuted him by enuy, nor gon about to berieue hys lyfe. He that enuieth the vertuous and industrious perfon, may bee compared to Dedalus, whom the Poets fayne to murder Telon hys Apprentice for deuifing of the Potter's wheele: and Mithridanes difdaynfull of Nathan's hospitallity, would haue flayne him: but how ashamed Mithridanes was of his praftife, this example at large discourseth. Very true it is (at leaft wyfe if credite may bee gieuen to the words of certayne Genoua Merchautentes, and of others whych haue trauayled that
countrey) how in Cataya, there was sometimes a rich Gentleman
without comparifon, named Nathan, who hauing a place or Pallace
joyning vpon the high way, by which the trauaylers to and from
the Weft, and Eaft, were contrayned to passe, and hauing a noble
and liberal heart, defirous by experience to haue the fame to be
knowen, and wyth what nature and quality it was affecte, he
assembled dyuers maister Mafons and Carpenters, and in short
tyme erected there one of the stateliest Pallaces for greatnesse and
costly furniture that euer was feene in that countrey, which after-
wards he caufed to be flored with all things necessary, honourably
to entertayne each Gentleman that paffed that way: and with a
great trayne of seruantes he welcomed and accepted futch as jour-
neyed to and fro. And in this commendable cuftome he perfec-
uered fo longe as both in the Eaft and Weft partes, report was
bruted of his renoume and fame: and being come to auncient
yeares, not for all that weary of his liberality, it chaunce that his
fame flewe to the eares of a yong gentleman called Mithridanes,
who in a country not farre of from his, had his abode and refiance.
Mithridanes knowing himfelfe to be fo rich as Nathan, envious
of his vertue and liberality, purpofed by fome meanes or other to
defame and obscure his neyghbour's good reporte: and hauing
builied a Palace like to that which Nathan did poffeffe, began to
vfe curtefies to thofoe which paffed to and fro, in outrageous and
difordred fort: whereby in little time he purchafed great fame.
Now it chaunced vpon a day, as Mithridanes was alone in the
court of his Palace, a poore woman entring in at one of the gates
of the fame, craued almes, and had it and fo fucceffuily even to
the twelfth and thirteenth time, afio she retorned agayne, which
Mithridanes perceiuing, faid vnto her: “Good wyfe you come
hither very often:” and yet he denied not hir almes. The old
woman hearing thofe words, faid: “O how maruellous is the
liberality of Nathan, whose palace hath xxxii. entries by seuerall
gates, fo great as this, and daily begging almes there, neuer made
faemeblance as though he knew me, and yet the fame was not
denied me: and being come hither but xiii. times, I haue bene
marked and reproved:” and faying fo, she went her way, and
neuer after came thither agayne. Mithridanes hearyng thefe
wordes to proceede from the old woman fell into a great rage, deeming the fame reported of Nathan to be a diminuution of his own, and said: "Ah wretch, when shal I be able to attayne the liberality of Nathan's greatest things? and why then goe I about to excel him, when in little matters I am not able to come neare him? verily I labour all in vaine, if I myselfe do not seek meanes to rid him of his life, fith croked age is not disposed to dispatch him, I must therefore doe the fame with myne owne hands. And in that fury makyng no man priuy to his intent, he rode forth with a smal traine, and in three dayes arrived where Nathan dwelte, and then commaunded his men in any wife not to be knowne that they came with him, and likewise that they knewe him not, but to provide lodging for themselues, vntyll futch tyme as they had further newes from him. Mithridanes then being arrived about evening, al alone, found Nathan walking vp and downe before his faire Palace, without other company than himself, who in simple attire and garment went forth to meete him: of whom Mithridanes, bicaufe he knew not Nathan, demaunded if he could tell him where Nathan dwelt. Nathan pleafantly made him anfwer: "My fone, ther is no man in thefe quarters that can better tel thee than I, and therefor ye thou pleafe, I wyll bring thee thither." Mithridanes said, that he shoulde doe hym a very great pleafure: but he would not if it were poffible bee feene or knowen of Nathan: "And that can I very wel do," faid Nathan, now that I know your mynd. Being then lighted of from his horfe, he went with Nathan, who by and by interteined him with diuerfity of talk, to his faire Palace: and Nathan incontinently caufed one of his ferauants to take Mithridanes' horfe, and faid vnto him in his eare that he shoulde wyth all speede giue order to his houffolde, that none shoulde tel the yonge Man that he was Nathan, which accordingly was done: but after they were in the Palace, Nathan brought Mithridanes into a very fayre chambre, that none mighte fee him excepte futch as he had appoynted to ferue hym: and caufinge greate honour to bee done vnto him, hee hymfelfe kepte him company. As they two were together, Mithridanes asked him (to whom bee fved conuenable reuence as to his father) what he was? whom Nathan anfwered: "I am one of Nathan's pore ferauants, that
from the time of my youth haue bene brought vp wyth him, and neuer aduauenced me to any thing but to that which you see: wherefore, although every man greatly prayseth him, yet haue I no caufe to commend hym." These wordes gaue some hope to Mithridanes, by better aduife and surety to execute his wicked intente: and Nathan aliked him very curteously what he was, and for what businesse he was come thither, offeryng him helpe and counfel in that he was able to do. Mithridanes then paufed a while before he would make him answere: and in the ende purpoſying to put his truſt in him, required with great circumſtance of wordes his fayth and after that his counſell and ayde. Then he wholly discovered what he was, wherefore he was come, and the caufe that moued hym. Nathan hearing thofe woordes, and the mischievous determination of Mithridanes, was chaunged and troubled in mynde, notweſtyfandying wythout making any semblance of displeaſure anſwered him with bolde countenaunce: "Mithridanes, thy father was a Gentleman, and of foute fomacke, from whom fo farre as I fee, thou wyſt not degenerate, by attempting fo great an enterpryfe as thou haft done. I intende to be lyberall to eſch man and praiſe greatly the Enuye whych thou beareft to the Vertue of Nathan, bycauſe if there were many futch, the Worlde which is now myſerable, would ſhortly become prosperous and happye: and doe make thee proumyſe, that the intent thou goeſt about, shall be kepſe fecret, whereunto I can ſooner gyue Counſell than any great helpe, and mine aduſe is this: you may fee from the place where we now be a lyttle Groaty, about a quarter of a Myle hence, whereunto Nathan in a maner walketh euery moronyng, and tarrieth there a long time: there you may eafily finde him, and do your pleuſure: and if you kyſſ him, you may goe, (to the intent without daunger you may returne home to your owne Houſe) not that way you came, but by that you fee on the lefte hand lead out of the wod, whych although it be not fo common as the other, yet is the neareſt way and fafeſt for you to paffe." When Mithridanes was thus informed, and that Nathan departed from him, he caufed wordes secretly to be feru'd to his Men, which likewyſe lodged there, in what place they shouleſt waigte for him the next day: and when the day was com, Nathan not altering the counſel he gaue to Mith-
ridanes, ne chaunging any part of the fame, went all alone into the little woodde, to receive his Death. When Mithridanes was vp, and had taken his bowe and fword, (for he had none other weapons) he mounted vpon his horfe, and rode to the little woodde, where a farre of he espied Nathan, commyng thitherward all alone, and determining before he would set vppon him to see him and heare him speake, made toward him, and catchyng him by the hand vpon his head, saide vnto him: "Old chorle thou art dead." Wher-vnto Nathan made none other anfwer, but said, "I haue deferued it." When Mithridanes heard his voyce and looked him in the face, he knew by and by that it was he which had curteously receiued him, familiarly kept him company, and faithfully had gauen him counsel. Wherupon, his fury affwaged, and his anger convuered to flame: by meanes whereof, throwing downe his fword which he had drawn to strike him, he lighted of from his horfe, and did proftrate himselfe at Nathan his father's feete, and saide vnto him weeping: "I manifefly perceiue right louing father your great lyberality, and by what pollicy you be come hyther to render to me your lyfe: whereunto I hauyng no ryght, declared my selle deffrous to haue the fame: but our Lord God, more carefull of my deuoir than my self, hath euuen at the very point, when it was moste needefull, opened the eyes of myne un-derstandynge, which cursed fpite and cancred enuy haue closed vp: and therefore, the more you were ready to gratify my desire, the greater punishment I knowledge my selle to defuer for my faulte. Take then of me if it pleafe you futch vengeance as you thynke meete for myne offence." Nathan causd Mithridanes to rife vp, kissinge and imbracing hym tenderly, and sayd vnto hym: "My fonne, thou needeft not to demaund pardon, for the enterprize done, good or euill as thou lift to name it: for thou diddeft not go about to rid me of my lyfe for any hatred thou diddeft bear me, but only to be accompted the better: be assured then of me, and verily beleue, that there is no lyuing man, that I loue better than thy self, considering the greatneffe of thine heart not incliyned to hoorde or gather togither the droffy muck of Syluer, as the myferable do, but to fpend that which is gathered. Be not afhamed for hauing a will to kill me, thereby to great re-
nowme: for Emperours and greatest kings, never threatened forth their power, and racked their Realines, and consequently aspired fam, for other purpose but to kyl: not by murdering one man as thou didst meane, but of infinit numbers, besides the burning of Countries, and raising of Cities: wherefore if to make thy selfe more famous, thou wouldest have killed me alone, thyné enterprize was not newly to be wondred at, but a thyng in dayly practice." Mithridanes no more excusinge hys wicked intent, but prayinge the honest excuse, which Nathan had deuised, drew neare vnto hym to enter into further talke wyth hym, which was, how he greatly maruelled, that he durft approch the place, with so little rescue, where his death was sweorne, and what he meant him selfe to tell the way and meanes: wherein he required him to say his mynde, for disclosing of the cause. Whereunto Nathan replied: "Maruell not, Mithridanes, of mine intent and purpose, for thens I was at age disposed to myne owne free will, and determined to do that which thou haft gone about to do, neuer any came to me, but I have contented them (fo farre as I was hable) of that they did demand: thou art come hither with desire to haue my lyfe, wherefore seeing that thou diddest crave, I forthe with dyd meane to gieue it, that thou alone mightest not be the man that should depart from hence without attchieuing thy request: and to bring to passe that thou myghtest haue the fame, I gau the the best Counfel I could, awel for bereuing of my lyfe, as for enjoyinge of thyne owne: and therefore I say to thee agayne, and pray thee for to take it, thereby to content thy selfe, if thou haue any pleasure therein: for I do not know whych way better to imploie it. I haue all ready kept it foure score yeares, and haue consumed the fame in pleasures, and delights, and do know by coarse of nature in other men, and generally in all things, that long it cannot reast in breathing dayes: wherefore I think good, that better it is to geue, as I haue dayly done, and departe with my Treasures, than keepe it till nature cary it away in despite of my Teeth, and maugre that I haue. It is a little gift to giue one hundred yeares, how much left is it then to giue fixe or eyght of thofe I haue to liue? Take it then if it please thee, I thee befeech: for neuer yet found I man that did desire the fame, ne yet do know when I
shall finde futch one, if that thy felfe which didft defire it, do not take it: and if it chaunce that I do finde fome one, I know full well that fo much the longer as I shall keepe the fame the leffe esteemed it shall be, and therefore before the fame be vile and of little price, take it I befeech thee.” Mithridanes fore ashamed, sayd: “God forbid, that by feparating fo deare a thing as is thy life, that I should take it, or onely defire the fame, as I did erft, from which I would not diminifh yeares, but willingly would of myne owne ad thereto if I could.” Whereunto Nathan by and by replied: “And if thou couldeft, wouldeft thou gieue them? and wouldeft thou caufe me to doe that which I never did to any man, that is to fay, to take of thy things which never I did of any living perfon?” “Yea verily,” anfwered Mithridanes. “Then,” fayde Nathan: “thou oughteft there to doe that which I wyll tel thee: which is to remayne here in my house fo younge as thou art, and beare the name of Nathan, and I would goe to thine, and bee called Mithridanes.” Then Mithridanes anfwered: “If I had alfo fo great experience as thou haft, I woulde not refufe thine offer, but becaufe I am affured, that my deedes woulde diminifh the renowne of Nathan, I wyll not marre that in another, which I cannot redrefle in my felfe: and therefore I wyll not take it.” After thys talke, and a great deale more betwene them, they repayred to the Palace, vppon the requelt of Nathan, where many dayes he did great honour to Mithridanes, incoranging and counfelling him, fo wel as he could, dayly to perfeuere in his high and great indevour. And Mithridanes defirous to returne home with his company, Nathan (after that he had let him well to know, that he was not able to furpafl him in liberality) gaue him leave.
MISTRESSE KATHERINE OF BOLOGNA.

THE NINETEENTH NOUELL.

Mayster Gentil of Carifendi being come from Modena, tooke a woman out of hir graue that was buried for dead, who after she was come agayne, brought forth a Sonne, which mayster Gentil rendered afterwa...
in loue with a Gentlewoman called maistresse Katherine, the wyfe of one maistre Nicholas Chaffennemie. And bicause during that loue he receiued a very ill counterchange for his affection that he bare vnto hir, he went away (like one desperite) to be the judge and poteftate of Modena, whereunto he was called. About the time that hir husband being out of Bologna, and the gentlewoman at hir Manor in the countrey, not paft a mile and a halfe from the Citty, (whither she went to remayne, bicause she was with childe) it chaunced that she was fodenly surprifed with a fickneffe, which was of fo great force, as there was no token of lyfe in her, but rather judged by all Phiftians to be a dead Woman. And bicause that hir neereft Kinne reported that they hearde hir faye, that shee could not bee lonne time with Childe, but that the infante must be perfect in her wombe and ready to be deliuered, and therefore affected wyth some other disease and grieue that would bring hir to hir ende, as a Timpany or other swelling, rifing of groffe humors, they thought hir a dead Woman, and paft recovery: wherefore vpon a time she falling into a traunce, was verily supposd to be dead. Who after they had mourned hir death, and bewayed the fodayn expiration of hir soule, caufed hir to be buried without hope of recovery (euen as she was in that extasie) in a graue of a church adjoyning harde by the house wher she dwelt. Which thing incontinently was aduertised mafter Gentil by one of his frends, who although he was not likely, as he thought, to attayne hir fauer and in vter difpayre thereof, yet it gryued him very mutch that no better heede was taken vnto hir, thankening by diligence and time shee woulde haue reuyued agayn, fayinge thus in the end vnto him felfe: “How now madam Katherin, that Death hath wrought his wyll wyth you, and I could neuer obteyne durynge your life one fimple looke from thofe youre glistering eies, which lately I beheld to my great ouerthrow and decay, wherfore now when you cannot defend your self, I may bee bold (you being dead) to fteale from you some defired kiffe.”
When hee had fayd fo, beyng already Nyght, and hauynge taken order that none shoulde know of his departure, he gat vpon his Horfe, accompanied with one only feruaunt, and wythout taryinge anye where, arriued at the place where his Lady was buryed, and
opening the Graue, forthwith he entred in, and laying himself
downe besides hir, he approched neare hir face, and many times
kisst hir, pouryng forth the great abundance of teares. But as we
see the appetye of Man not to be content excepte it proceede fur-
ther (specially of such as bee in loue) beyng determined to tarry
no longer there, and to departe, he sayd: "Ah God, why shoule I
go no further, why shoule I not touche hir, why shoule I not
prowe whyther s[e] be alyue or dead?" Vanquished then wyth that
moyton, hee felt hir brests, and holding his hand there for a cer-
tayne tyme, perceyued hir Heart as it were to pant, and thereby
some lyfe remayning in hir: wherefore fo softly as he could, wyth
the helpe of his man, he raifed hir out of the graue: and settyng
hir vpon his Horfe before hir, secretly caried hir home to his
houe at Bologna. The mother of maister Gentil dwelled there,
which was a graue and vertuous Matrone, who vnderstandyng by
her fonne the whole effect of that chaunce, moued wyth compas-
sion, vnknowne to anye man, placing hir before a great fire, and
comfortyng hir wyth a bathe prepared for the purpose, she reco-
ered lyfe in the Gentlewoman that was suppoed to bee deade,
who so foone as she was com to hir self, threw forth a great sigh
and sayd: "Alas, wher am I now?" To whom the good old wo-
man sayd: "Be of good cheere swete hart, yee bee in a good
place." The Gentlewoman haung wholly recovered hir sens, and
looking round about hir, not yet well knowing where she was,
and feing maister Gentill before hir, prayed his mother to tell hir
how she came thither. To whome maister Gentil declard in order
what he had done for hir, and what meanes he vfed to bryng hir
thyther: wherof makynge hir complanyt, and lamentyng the lyttle
regard and neglgyence of hir frends, she rendred vnto hym inu-
merable thankes. Then she prayed him for the Loue which at
other times he bare hir and for his courtese, that she might not
receyue in hys houe any thing that should be dihonorale to hir
person, ne yet to hir husband, but so foone as it was Daye to suf-
fer hir to goe houme to hir owne Houe: whereunto maister Gentil
anwered: "Madam, what soever I haue deified in time past, now
am I fully purpoed neuer to demaund any thyng specially in this
place or in any other but the safety of your honour, and that I
would doe to mync owne fitter, fith it hath pleased God to shoue me that pleasure, as by my meanes you are reuied from death to life, and to deluyer you to mee in consideration of the loue that I haue born you heretofore: but this good worke, which this Nyghte I haue done for you, well deferoneth some recompence. Wherefore my desire is, that you deny me not the pleasure which I shalldemauand:" whome the gentlewoman curteously manywered, that the was very ready, fo the same were honest and in hir power to doe. Then sayd mayffer Gentil: "Mystresse, all your kin and al they of Bologna, doe beleue for a trouth that you bee deade, wherefore there is none that loketh for your recovery agayne: and the pleasure then whych I demauand, is that you wyll vouchsafe secretlye to tarry here wyth my mother, vntill I returne from Modena, which shal be with fo great expedition as I can: and the cauе why I desire the same, is, for that I intend to make a fayre and acceptable present of you vnto your hufband in the presence of the principal of this City." The gentlewoman knowing hir seld to be greatly bound to the knight, and that hys request was honest, was content to doe what hie demauond. Albeit the desired earnestly to reioyce hir frendes for hir recoveried life, and so promised vpon hir faith. And vunethes had she ended hir talke, but she felt the pain of chyldbirth: wherfore wyth the ayde of the mother of maifter Gentil, she tarried not long before she was deliveried of a fayre Sonne, which greatly augmented the joy of maifter Gentil and hir. Mayffer Gentil commandeth that she should haue al thyngs that were necessary to be ministred vnto hir, and that she should be veded as his owne Wyfe. Then he pryvily returned to Modena, where when he had a while supplied his office, he returned to Bologna, and prepared a great feast at his houfe, the same morning that he arrived, for divers gentlemen of the city, amongst whom Nicholas Chaffennemie was one. When the company of the bidden guests wer com, (the gentlewoman in fo good health and lykyng as euer she was, and hir Child wel and luftly), he fate down amongst them doing vnto them incomparable myrth and pastime, and ferued them bountifully wyth dyuers forties of meates. When dinner was almost done, hauing before told the Gentlewoman what he ment to doe, and in what manner
she should behave her selfe, he began thus to say: "My Maysters, I do remember that whilom I haue hearde tell that in the Country of Persia, there was a goodly custom (as me seemeth) that when som one was disposfed to do great honour vnnto his friend, he bad hym home to his house, and there shewed him the thing whych he loued beft, were it wyfe, woman, or daughter, or what so euer it were, affirming that like as he disdayned not to shew the fame, which outwardly he loued beft, euen so he would if it were possibile, willingly discover his owne heart: whych custome I purpose to obserue in this City. Ye of your curtefie haue vouchsafed to do me so great honour, as to repayre vnnto this my simple feast, which benefite I wyl recompence after the Persian manner, by shewing vnnto you the thinges which I loue moste deereely aboue any in this worlde, or hereafter shal be able to loue so long as my life endureth: but before I doe the same, I pray you to tell mee your opynyons in a doubt which I shal propofe. There was a certayne perfon whych in hys house had a good and Faythfull Seruante who became extremely sick: that Perfon without attending the end of his diseased Seruaut, caused him to be caried into the midst of the streate wythout any further care for him. In the meane tyme there came a stranguer by, who mowed by compassion of the sicke Seruaut, bare him home to his owne house, where wyth great care and diligence, sparing no cost or charge, made him to recover his former healthe: I would now fayne know of you, whither for retaining and vning the seruice of that Seruaut, his first maister by good right myghte complayne vpon the seconde, if he shoulde demaund hym agayne, or by demaunding of him agayne, the seconde not disposfed to restore him, might fusteyne any damage." The gentlemen after many opinions and arguments debated too and fro amonges them, and at length all concluding in one mind, gave charge to Nicholas Chafennemie, (bicaufe he was an eloquent talker) to make the answer: who first praiing the Periens custody, said that he was, (with the rest) of this opinion, that the first maister had no further title in his Seruaut, hauing in futch necessity not onely forfaken him, but thrown him into the streate, and that for the good turnes whych the second maister had don him, he ought by good right to be hys: wherefore by kepyng
him, he did no wrong, force, or injury to the first. Al the rest at
the Table (which were very discreet and honest persons) sayd
altogether that they were of hys opinion. The knight content
with that answer, and specially because Nicholas Chasennemie
had pronounced it, affyrmed that hee was likewyse of that minde,
and afterwards he sayd: "Time it is then that I render vnto you
the honor which you have done me, in manner accordingly as I
have promysed. Then he called vnto him two of hys Seruaunts,
and fent them to the Gentlewoman, whom hee had caufed to be
apparelled and decked very gorgeously, praying hir by hir presence
to content and satysfie al the company. And the taking in hir armes
hir little faire sonne, came into the hall, accompanied with the two
Seruaunte, and was placed (as it please of the kynght) besides a
very honest gentleman, and then he sayde: "Sirs, behold the
thing which I loue best, and purpose to loue above all worldly
things, and whither I have occasion so to doe, your eyes may bee
Judges." The gentlemen doing their reverence unto hir, greatly
praised hir, and laid to the Knight that ther was good reasow why
she oughte to be beloued: Upon which commendations they began
more attentyuely to behold hir, and many of them would have
sayd and sworne that it had bin shee in deede if it had not bin
thought that she had bin dead. But Nicholas beheld hir more
than the reft, who very defirous to know what she was, could not
forbear (when he saw that the Knight was a little departed from
the place) to ask hir whyther shee was of Bologna, or a straunger.
When the Gentlewoman faw hir husband to ask hir that question,
she could scarce forbear from making aunswer, notwithstanding
to attechie that which was purposed, she helde hir peace. Another
asked her yf that little Boye was hers: And another if shee were the
Wyfe of mayster Gentil, or any kin vnto hym: vnto whom shee
gaue no answere at all. But when mayster Gentil came in, one of
the straungers sayd vnto him: "Syr, thys gentlewoman is a very
good creature, but she seemeth to be dumbe. Is it true or not?"
"Sirs, sayde mayster Gentil, "that is but a little argument of
hir vertue for this time to hold hir peace." "Tell vs then (sayde
he) what is she?" "That wil I do very gladly," sayd the knight,
"vnder condition that none of you shall remoue out of his place for
any thing I speake, vntill I haue ended my tale:” which request being graunted, and the table taken vp, maister Gentil which was set downe by the Gentlewoman, sayd: “My maysters, this gentle-
woman is the loyll and faithful servaunt, of whom earst I propounded the question, whom I haue releued from amids the strete, whither hir kin, little caring for hir, threw hir as a vile and vnpro-
fitable thing: and haue by my great care brought to passe, that I haue discharged hir from death, vpon an affection which God knowewth to be so pure and perfect, as of a lumpe of dead lothsome flefh he hath reuiued to fayre and frefhe as you fee: but to the intent you may more playnly vnderstand how it is come to passe, I will open the fame in few words.” And beginning at the day when he fell in loue with hir, he particularly told them, what had channed till that time, to the great maruell and admiration of them that heard him, and then added these woordes: “By meanes whereof, if your minde be not chaunged within this little time, and specially maister Nicholas, of good right she is my wife, and none by iuft title can clayme hir.” Whereunto none at all made anfwere, looking that he shoulde haue proceeded further. In the meane while Nicholas and the rest that were there, fell into earneft weepinge. But maister Gentil, rifting from the borde and taking in his armes the little childe, and the gentlewoman by the hand, went towards Nicholas, and sayd vnto him: “Rife vp fir goffip, I do not restore vnto thee thy Wife, whom thy friends and householde did caft into the Strete, but I will gene thee this Gentlewoman my Goffip, with the little childe, that is, as I am assured begotten of thee, for whom at the chriftening I made anfwere and promife, and called him Gentil, and do pray thee that she be no leffe esteemed of thee now (for being in my house almoft three moneths) than she was before. For I swore by the almighty God, who made me in loue with hir, (peraduenture that my loue might be the caufe of hir preseruation) that she never liued more honestly with hir father, mother, or with thee, than she hath done in company of my mother.” When he had sayd so, he returned towards the Gentlewoman, and sayd vnto hir: “Maiftresse, from this time forth, I discharget you of the promife which you haue made me, and leaue you to your husband franke and free.” And when he
had bestowed the gentlewoman, and the chylde in the fathers armes, he returned to his place agayne. Nicholas joyfully receyued his Wyfe and childe, for the whych so mutch the more he rejoysed, as hee was furthest of from hope of hir recoery, rendering inumerable thankes to the Knight and the rest, and moued with compas- 

fion hee wept for company, greatly praying maister Gentil for that act, who was commended of ech man that heard the reporte thereof. The Gentlewoman was receiued into hir houfe wyth maruellous ioye: And longe tyme after she was gazed vpon by the Citi-

zens of Bologna, as a thing to their great wonder reuied agayne. Afterwards Maister Gentil continued styll a friend vnto Nicholas, and vnto hys Wyfe and Chyl-
dren.
THE TWENTIETH NOUELL.

Saladine in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receyued into the house of mayster Thorello, who went over the Sea, in company of the Christians, and affigned a terme of his wyfe when she should mary agayne. He was taken, and caried to the Sovldan to be his Faulconer, who knowing him, and suffering himself to be knownen, did him great honour. Mayster Thorello fell sick, and by Magique Art, was caried in a night to Pavie, where he found his wyfe about to mary agayne, who knowinge him, returned home with him to his owne house.

Very comely it is (fayeth Cicero in the second booke of hys Offices,) that Noblemens houfes should styll be open to noble Gueftes and Straungers. A sayinge by the honourable and other Estates to be fixed in sere remembrance, and accordingly practi- fed: For hospitallity and houshold intertaynment, heaping vp double gayne and commodity. The Gueft it linketh and knitteth in fast band of perfect friendship, common familiarity, disporte of mynde and pleasant recreation, the poore and needy it feedeth, it cherisheth, it prouoketh in them deuout prayers, godly blessings, and feruice in tyme of neede. Hospitallity is a thing so diuine, as in law of Nature and Chryft, it was well and brotherly obserued. Lot disdayned not to receyue the Aungels, which were fraunners vnto him, and by reafon of hys common vfe thereof, and theyr frendly intertaynment, he and his houshold was delyuere from the daunger of the City, escaped temporal fire, and obtained heauenly rewarde. Abraham was a friendly hoft to fraungers, and therefore in his old dayes, and in the barrein age of his wyfe Sara, he begat Isaac. Ietro albeit he was an Ethnicke and vnbeleuyng man, yet lyberally entertained Moyfes, and maried him to Sephora, one of his Daughters. The poore widow of Sarepta interteined Helias, and Symon the Currior disdayned not Peter, nor Lydia the purple filke woman, Paule and his fellowes. Forget not Hospitallity, (faith the said Apoistle Paule,) for wyth the fame diuers haue pleased Aungels by receiuing them into theyr houses. If Paule
the true preacher of eternall Healthe, hath so commended kepyng of good Houfes which by the former terme we call Hospitallity, then it is a thing to bee vſed amonges thofe that bee able to main-teine the fame: who ought with liberall hand frankly to reach bread and victuals to their acquaintance, but specially to straungers, which wandering in forein places, be utterly vnable to helpe them-selves, and peraduenture in fuch neede, as without fuch curteſfe, do perifhe. For the further amplification of whych vertue, what fhall I neede to remember ftraunge and proffane Hiftories? as of Symon of Athens, who was fo famous in the fame, as the tyrant Crytias, when he wished for the ryches of Scopades and the victories of Ageſlaus, forgat not alfo to craue the liberality of Cimon. Pacuuius alfo, the Prynce of Campania, fo friendly entertained Annibal, as when his fonne to do the Romanes a good turne, would have killed him as he fat at supper, was ftaied by his fathers request (whom he made priuy of his intent before they fate downe.) Pacuuius had he not more regarded the office of hospitallity, than the safety of his countrey, might ful wel by that murder, have defended the fame from the deſtruction whereunto afterwaids it fel. Homere reporteth, that Menelaus fighting a combat with Paris of Troy made inuocation and prayer vnto the Gods, that he might be revenged vpon him for the rape of his wife Helena, to the intent the pofterity hearing of his punishmente, mighte feare to polute friendly housholde interteynment. Wherefore, fith hospita-lity hath bene thus put in vſe in elder tyme, praettyfed in all ages, and the poluters of the fame deteſted and accufed, and hath notorious commodities incident vnto it, I deeme it fo worthy to be frequented in noble men and all degrees, as theyr Palaces and great houſes shoule swarme wyth gueſts, and their gates luftring with whole multitudes of the poore to be satiſſed with relief. Sutch hath ben the sacred vſe and reuerent care of auncient tyme. Sutch hath bene the zealous loue of thofe whose fieldes and barnes, cloſets, and cheſtes have bene storėd and ſtuffed with worldely wealth, that comparing that golden age, glistering with piety and vertue, to thēse our worſte than copper days, cancred with all corruption, we shal find the match fo like, as darke and light, durt and Aungell golde. Ceasing then of further difcource hereof,
this history following shall elucidate and displace the mutual benevolence of two noble personages, the one a mighty Souldan, an enemy of God, but yet a friend to those that favored good entertainment and housekeeping: the other a Gentleman of Pauie, a rich and liberal merchant, and a friendly welcomer of strangers. The Souldan demanding the way to Pauie, somewhat digressing from the same, is not only honourably conveyed to Pauie, and feasted there, but also sumptuously chambered, banquetted, and rewarded by the said Marchant before his coming thither. The merchant man desirous to be one of the holy voyage intended by christian Princes, passed over the seas, who put to his shifts there through the aduerse fortune receyued by the Christians, became the Souldans Fawconer, and afterwars known unto him by certaine markes and signes, is with greater honor entertained of the Souldan, and more richly guerdoned, sent home againe by Magike Arte to anticipate the mariage of his wife, unto whom he had prefixed a certaine date and terme to marry againe if before that tyme, he did not returne. All which Noble entertainment, and the circumstances thereof, in this manner do begin. In the time of the Emperour Fredericke the first, the Chryftians to recouer the Holy Lande, made a generall voyage and passage over the Sea. Saladine a most vertuous Prince, then Souldan of Babylon, having intelligence thereof, a certayne time before, determined in his own person to see and espy the preparation which the Christian Princes made for that passage, the better to provide for his owne, and having put order for his affayres in Egypt, making as though he would go on Pilgrimage, tooke his journey in the apparel of a Merchant, accompanied only with two of his chiefest and wisest counsellers, and three seuaunts. And when he had searched and travelled many christian provinces, and riding through Lumbardy to passe over the Mountaynes, it chanced that betwene Millan and Pauie, somewhat late he met wyth a gentleman named maister Thorello de Istria of Pauie, who with his houfhoulde, his dogges and hawkes, for his pleasure went to foorne in one of his Manours, that was delectably placed upon the ryuer of Tefino. And when maister Thorello sawe them come, thinckinge that they were certayn Gentlemen strangers, he desired to do them honour. Wherefore
Saladine demanding of one of mayster Thorello his men, how
farre it was from thence to Pauie, and whether they might come
thither time enoufh to go in, maister Thorello would not suffer his
man to speake, but he himself made aunfwere, saying: "firs,
yee cannot get into Pauie in time, for that the Gates will be shut
before your comming." Than sayd Saladine: "tell us then wee
pray you, bicaufe we be ftraungers, where wee may lodge this
night." Maister Thorello sayd: "That will I willingly do, I was
about euen prefently to fend one of my men that be here, fo far
as Pauie, about certayne businesse, him wil I appoint to be your
guide to a place where you hall have very good lodging," and
callinge one of his wyfeft men vnto him, he gaue him charge of
that he had to do, and fent him with them, after whom he fol-
lowed: where incontynently in fo good order as he could, caused
to be made reby a fumptuous supper, and the tables to be couered
in a pleafant garden. Afterwards hee went himfelfe to enterentayne
them. The feraunt talking with the Gentlemen of many things,
conducted them at leyfure somwhat out of the way to protract the
time, to his maysters house: and fo soon as maister Thorello
espied them, he with liberall heart and bountifull mynde bad them
welcome. Saladine which was a very wyfe man, well perceyued that
the Gentleman doubted that they woulde not have come vnto hym
if he had invited them at their firft meetinge, and for that caufe,
to the intent they shoulde not refufe to lodge at his house, he had
pollitiuely them to be conducted thither, and aunfweringe
hys greeting, sayd: "Syr, if a man may quarrell with them that
be curteous, wee may complayne of you, who leauinge a part our
way which you have caufed somewhat to be lengthened, without
deferuings your good will, otherwife than by one onely falutation,
you haue confrayned vs to take and receyue this your fo great
curtefie." The wife and well spoken Knight, sayd: "Syr, thys
curtefie which you receyue of me, in refpect of that which belongeth
vnto you, as by your countenaunce I may wel conieecture, is very
small, but truely out of Pauie ye could haue got no lodging: that
had ben good: and therefore be not displeased I pray you to be
caried out of the way, to haue a little better intertaynement," and
saying fo, his men came forth to receyue thofe ftraungers, and
when they were lighted, their horses were taken and conveyed into the stables, and master Thorello carried the three Gentlemen to their chambers, which he had prepared for them, where their Bootes were pulled of, and excellent wyne brought forth, somewhat to refresh them before supper: then he held them with pleasant talk vntyll the house of supper was com. Saladine and they which were with him, could all speake Latine, and therefore well understood, and they lykewise understood eche man, by meanes whereof euer of them, thought that the Gentleman was the most curteous and best conditioned Personage, indue with the most eloquent talk that euer they sawe. On the other side it seemed to master Thorello, that they were the noblest and Princelike personages, and far more worthy of estimation then he thought before. Wherefore, he was very angry with himselfe, that he had no greater company and better intertaynement for them that night, which he purposed to recompence the next day at dinner. Wherefore he sent one of hys men to Pauie, being not far from thence, to his wife, that was a very wife and noble gentlewoman, and afterwards he brought them into the garden where he curteously demanded what they were. To whom Saladine answered: "we be marchants of Cypres trauailing to Paris, about our businesse." Then said master Thorello: "I would to God that this country brought forth such gentlemen as the land of Cypres maketh marchants," and so passed the time from one talk to another, vntyll supper time came: Wherefore to honour them the better caueth them to sit downe at the Table, euer of them according to his degree and place: And there they were exceedingely wel intreated and served in good order, their supper being farre more bountifull than they looked for. And they bene not longe after that the table was taken away, but master Thorello supposing them to be weary, caueth them to be lodged in gorgeous and costly beds: and he likewylfe within a while after went to bed. The seruaunt sent to Pauie, did the meffage to his mistrefse, who not like a woman wyth a womanish heart, but like one of Princely Mind, incontinently caueth many of her husband's frends and seruaunts to be sent for. Afterwards she made ready a great feast, and inuited the noblest and chiefest Citizens of the City: ap-
parelling hir house wyth clothe of gold and silke, tapistry and other furnitures, putting in order all that which hir husband had commanded. The next day in the morning the Gentleman rofe, with whom maister Thorello mounted on horfebacke, and carrying with him his Hawks, he brought them to the Ryuer, and shewed them diuers flightes. But Saladine demaunding where the beft lodging was in Pauie, maister Thorello sayd: "I will shew you my felfe, for that I haue occasion to go thither." They beleewing him, were contented, and rode on their way, and being about nine of the clock, arrivaed at the City, thinking they shoule haue ben brought to the beft Inne of the towne: but maister Thorello conueyed them to his owne house, where fiftie of the chiefeft Citizens ready to receiue them fodaynly appeared before them. Which Saladine, and they that were wyth him percyuing, coniecutured by and by what that dyd meane, and sayd: "Maister Thorello, this is not the request which wee demaund, your entertainment yefternight was to fumpitous and more then we defired, wherefore giue vs fleaf we praye you to departe." Whom maister Thorello answered: "My maisters, for that which ye receyued yefternight I wil giue thanks to Fortune, and not to you: for I overtaking you by the way, forced you in a maner to make your repayre vnto my homely house: but for thys morninge voyage, I haue my felfe prepared, and likewyfe the Gentlemen about you, with whom to refuse to dine, if you thincke it curtefs, doe as yee pleafe." Saladine and his companions vanquished wyth futch perfuation, lighted, and being receiued by the Gentlemen in lowing and curteous order, were conueied to their chambers, which were richly furnifhed for them, and hauing put of their riding apparel, and somwhat refreshed themselues, they came into the Hall, where all things were in redineffe in triumphant forte. Then Water was brought them to wafte, and they placed at the Table, were ferued wyth many delicate meats in magnificent and royal order, in futch wise, as if the Emperour himselfe had bene there coulde not haue bene better entertained. And albeit that Saladine and his companions were great Lordes, and accustomed to see marueyous thynge, yet they wondred very much at thys, considering the degree of the Knight, whom they knewe to bee but a Citizen
and no Prynce or great Lord. When dinner was done, and that they had talked a little together, the weather waxing very hot, the Gentlemen of Pance, (as it pleased mayster Thorello) went to take their rest, and he remayned wyth his three Guefts: with whom he went into a chamber, where to the intent that nothing which he had and loued might be vnscene, caused his honest Wyfe to be called forth: who being very beautiful and wel favoured, clothed in rich and costly array, accompanied with her two yong fonnes, which were like to Aungels, came before them, and gra-}

iously saluted them. When they saw her, they rofe vp, and reverently receiued hir, then they caufed hir to fit downe in the mids of them, sporting and dalving with hir two fayre fonnes. But after she had pleafantly entred in talk, she aufted them of whence they were, and whither they were going? To whom the Gentlemen made the fame aunswere that they had done before to maifter Thorello. Then the Gentlewoman fayd vnto them with smillinge cheere: "I perceyue then that mine aduice being a woman, is come well to passe. And therefore I pray you, that of your special grace you will do me this pleafure, as not to refufe or difdain the little prefent that I shall bring before you, but that you take it, in conideration that women according to their little ability, giue little things, and that yee regard more the affection of the perfon whych ofreth the gift, then the value of the giuen thing." And caufing to be brought before every of them two fayre Roabes, the one lined with filke, and the other with Manenayr, not in fasion of a Citizen, or of a Marchant, but Noblemanlike, and or. Turkey gownes with fleues of Taffata, lined with linnen cloth, she fayde vnto them: "Take I pray you these roabes, with the like whereof this day I appareled my husband, and the other things may alfo ferue your turns, although they be little worth, conidering that yee be farre from your Wyues, and the greatneffe of your iorne, which you haue taken, and haue yet to make, and alfo for that Marchantmen loue to be neat, and fine in things appertinent to their bodies." The Gentlemen mutch maruelled, and playnly knew that Maifter Thorello was disposed not to forget any one part of curtesy towards them, and doubted (by reaſon of the beauty and Richiefe of the roabes not Marchantlike,) that they
should not be knowne of mayster Thorello, notwithstandinge one of them aunswered her: "These be (Gentlewoman) very great gifts, and ought not lightly to be accepted, if your intreay did not contraine vs, against which no denial ought to be made." That done, when mayster Thorello returned into the chamber, the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue, and went hir way: and then shee furnished the servants with diuers other things necessary for them, and Mayster Thorello obtayned by earnest request, that they should tary all that day. Wherefore after they had rested themselues a while, they did put on their roabes, and walked forth on horsebacke into the Citty: and when supper tyme was come, they were bountifullly feafted in honorable company: and when bed time approched, went to rest. And so soone as it was day they rofe, and founde in steade of their weary Hackneyes, three fat and fayre Palfreyes, and also the like number of fresh and mighty hорsфѕ for their servaunts: Which Saladine seeing, turned towards his companions, and sayd vnto them: "I sweare by God that ther was never a more liberall Gentleman, more courtous or better conditioned than this is. And if Christian kings for their part be futch, I meane induced with futch kingly qualities as this Gentleman is, the Souldan of Babylон shall haue enouogh to do to deal with one, and not to attend for all those which we fee to be in preparation for invasion of his Country." But seeing that to refuse them or render them agayne, serued to no purpose, they thanked him very humbly, and got vpon their horfe. Mayster Thorello wyth many of his frends, accompanied them out of the Citty a great pece of the way: And albeit that it mutch greeued Saladine to depart from mayster Thorello (fo farre in he was already in loue with him) yet being constrayned to forgo his company, hee prayed him to returne, who although very loth to depart, sayd unto them: "Syr, I will be gone, fith it is your pleasure I shal to do, and yet I fay vnto you, that I know not what you be, ne yet demaund to know, but fo farre as pleafeth you. But what foeuer yee be, you shal not make me beleue at this tyme, that yee be marchauntes, and fo I bid you farewell." Saladine hauing taken his leaue of those that accompanied mayster Thorello, answered him: "Syr, it may come to paffe, that we may let you see
our marchaundifhe, the better to confirme your beleefe." And so departed. Saladine then hauing thus taken his leave, affuredly determined if he liued, and that the Warres he looked for did not let him, to do no leffe honor to mayster Thorello, then he had done to him, and fell into great talke with his companions of him, of his Wyfe and of his things, acts and deedses, greatly praying all his entertainyment. But after he had trauyled and vewed al the west parts, imbarkinge himselfe and his company, he returned to Alexandria, throughly informed of his enemies indevours, prepared for his defence. Mayster Thorello returned to Panie, and mused a long time what thefe three might be, but he coulde not so much as gaffe, what they were. When the tym of the appoynted passage for the Chryftians was come, and that great preparation generally was made, Mayster Thorello notwithstanding the teares and prayers of his Wyfe, was fully bent to go thither, and hauinge fet all things in order for that Voyage, and ready to get on horce-backe, he sayd vnto hir whom he perfectly loued: "Sweete Wyfe, I am goinge as thou feeest, this Journey, aswelf for myne honour fake, as for health of my foule: I recommende vnto you our goodes and honor: And bycaufe I am not so certaine of my retourne, for a thousand acydyntes that may chaunce, as I am sure to goe, I praye thee to doe mee thyse pleasure, that what so euer chaunceth of mee, ye thou haue no certaine newes of my life, that yet thou tarry one yeare, one Moneth, and one day, the same terme to begin at the day of my departure." The Gentlewoman whych betterly wept, anfwered: "I know not deare hufband how I shal be able to beare the sorrow wherein you leaue mee, if you goe awaye: But ye my Lyfe bee more stronge and sharpe, than sorrowe it selfe: and whether you lyue or dye, or what so euer come of you, I wyll lyue and dye the Wyfe of Mayster Thorello, and the onely fpoufe of his remembrance." Whereunto mayster Thorello sayde: "Sweete Wyfe, I am more than assured that touching your selfe, it wyll proue as you do promife: But you beyng a younge Woman, fayre, and well allied, and your Vertue greate and well knowne throughoute the Countrye, I am sure that many greate Personages and gentlemen (if any suchpyton bee conceyued of my Death) wyll make requestes to your brethren and Kindred, from whose purfute
(although he you be not disposed,) you can not defende your selfe, 
and it behoueth that of force, you please their wil, whych is the 
owne reason that moueth mee to demaunde that terme, and no 
longer tyme." The Gentlewoman sayd: "I wil doe what I can 
for fulfilling of my promyse: And albeit in the ende that I shall 
bee confrayned to doe contrary to my lykyng, be assured that I 
wyll obey the charge whych nowe you haue gyuen me: And I 
omste humbly thanke Almyghty God, that hee neuer brought vs 
into thes terme before this tyne." Theyr talke ended, the Gentle-
woman weepyng embraced maister Thorello, and drawyng a Ryng 
from hir Fynger, the gaue it hym, sayinge: "If it chaunce that I 
dye before I see you, remember me when you shal beholde the 
fame." He receiuinge the ring, got vp vpon his horse, and 
takinge his leaue, went on hys voyage, and arriued at Genoua 
shipped himself in a Galley, and toke his way, whereunto wind 
and weather fo fauored, as wythin fewe dayes he landed at Acres, 
and ioyned wyth the army of the Chryftians: wherein began a 
great mortalyte and Plague, duryng which infection (what so 
cuer was the caufe) eyther by the industrie or Fortune of Saladine 
the rest of the Chrifians that escaped were almoft taken and sur-
prised by him, without any fighte or blowe stricken. All which 
were imprifoned in many cities, and deuided into divers places, 
amongs which pryfoners maister Thorello was one, who was 
caryed captuye to Alexandria, where beyng not knowne, and 
fearyng to be knowne, forced of neceffitie, gaue him selfe to the 
keepyng of Hawkes, a qualitie wherein he had very good skyll, 
whereby in the ende hee grew to the acquaintance of the Souldan, 
who for that occaion (not knowing him that time) toke hym out 
of pryfon, and retayned him for his Fawconer. Maister Thorello 
which was called of the Souldan by none other name than 
Chryftian, whome hee neyther knewe, ne yet the Souldan him, 
had none other thing in his mynde and remembrance but Pauia, 
and manye tymes aylayed to escape and run away: But he neuer 
came to the poyn: Wherefore dyuers Ambaffadoures from Genoua 
being come to Saladine, to raunfome certayne of theyr Pryfoners, 
and being ready to returne, hee thought to wryte vnto his wyfe, to 
let hir know that he was alioe, and that hee would come home fo
foone as he coulde, praying hir to tarry his retourne: Which was the effecte of hys Letter: verye earnestly desiring one of the am-
bassadors of his acquayntance to doe so mutch for hym as safely
to deluyer those Letters to the Handes of the Abbot of S. Pietro in
ciel Doro, whych was hys Vncle. And Mayfter Thorello standing
vpon these termes, it chaunced vpon a day as Saladine was talking
with him of his Hawkes, Thorello began to smyle and to make a
lefture wyth hys mouth, whych Saladine beyng at his houfe at
Pauie did very well note, by which aet Saladine began to re-
member him, and earnestly to viewe hym, and thought that it
was he in deede. Wherefore leauing his former talke, he sayd:
"Tell me Chryftian of what countrey art thou in the Weft parts?"
"Sir" sayd Mayfter Thorello, "I am a Lombarde, of a City called
Pauie, a poore man and of meane eftate," So foone as Saladine
heard that, as assured wherof he doubted, faid to himself: "God
hath giuen me a tyme to let thys man know how thankfully I ac-
cepted his curtely that he vfed towards me, and without any more
words, hauing cauſed all his apparell in a chamber to be fet in
order, he broughte him into the fame and sayd: "Behold Christi-
AN, if amogges al these roabes, there be any one which thou
haft feene before. Maiſter Thorello began to looke vpon them,
and saw those which his wyfe had giuen to Saladine: but he
could not beleue that it was poffible that they shoule be the fame,
notwithstanding hee answered: "Sir, I knowe them not, albeit
my mind gieueth me that these twayne do refemble the roabes
which sometymes I ware, and cauſed them to be giuen to three
marchaunt men that were lodget at my houfe." Then Saladine
not able to forbear any longer, tenderly imbraced him, saying:
"You be maiſter Thorello de Iftria, and I am one of the three
Marchaunts to whom your wife gaue those roabes: and now the
time is come to make you certenly beleue what my marchandife
is, as I tolde you when I departed from you that it myght come
to paffe." Maiſter Thorello hearyng those wordes, began to be
both ioyfull and aſhamed, ioyfull for that he had entertained
futch a gueſt, and aſhamed that his fare and lodging was fo simple.
To whom Saladine sayd: maiſter Thorello, fith it hath pleased
god to fend you hither, thinke from henceforth that you be Lord
of this place and not I." and making great chere, and rejoyng
one wyth an other, he caufed him to be cloathed in royall veftures,
and brought him into the presence of al the Noble men of his
country: and after he had rehearfed many thinges of his valor
and commendation, commanded him to be honoured as his owne
perfon, of all those which desired to haue his fauor: Whiche
every Man dyd from that time forth: but aboue the rest, the two
Lords that were in company with Saladine at his hous. The
greatneffe of the fodayn glory wherein maifter Thorello fawe him-
felfe, did remove oute of his mind, his affayres of Lombardie, and
specially, bicaufe hee hoped that his letters shoulde trueftly be de-
liuered to the hands of his vncl. Now there was in the camp of
the Chriftians the daye wherein they were taken by Saladine, a
Gentleman of Province, which dyed and was buryed, called maifter
Thorello de Dignes, a man of great efimation: whereby (maifter
Thorello of Iftria known through out the whole army for his
nobility and proueffe) euery man that heard tell that maifter
Thorello was dead, beleued that it was mayster Thorello de Iftria,
and not he de Dignes, and by reaſon of his taking, the truth
whether of them was deade, was vnknown: Wherfore many
Italians returned with those newes, amongs whom som wer fo
presumptuoues, as they toke vpon them to faye and affyrme that
they faw him deade, and were at his burial: Whych known to his
wyse and his friends, was an occaſIon of very great and ineftri-
uable Sorrow, not onely to them: but to all other that knewe him.
Very long it were to tell what great forrow, heauinesse, and lamen-
tation his wife did vtter, who certain moneths after fhee had con-
tinually fo tormented hir felfe, (and when hir grief began to de-
creafe, being demaunded of many great perfonages of Lombardie)
was counfelled by hir brothers, and other of hir kin, to mary
again. Which thing after she had many times refufed, in very
great anguiſh and dolor, finally being constrained thereunto, the
yielded to the minds of hir parents: But yet vpon condicion, that
the nuptials should not be celebrate vntyll fuch tyme as she had
performed hir promife made to maifter Thorello. Whileſt the
affairies of this Gentlewoman were in those termes at Pauie, and
the time of hir appoyntment within eight dayes approched, it
chaunted that maister Thorello vpon a day espyed a man in Alexandria, (which hee had seene before in the company of the Ambassadors of Genoua,) going into the galley that was bound with them to Genoua, wherfore causings him to be called, he demaunded what voyage they had made, and asked him when they arrived at Genoua? To whom he sayd: "Sir the Galley made a very ill voyage as I hard say in Creta, where I remayned behynd them, for being neare the coaft of Sicilia there rofe a maruellous tempest, which drove the galley vpon the shoare of Barbarie, and not one of them within bord escaped, amongs whom two of my brethren were likewise drowned." Mayster Thorello giving credite to the words of this fellow, which were very true, and remembiring himselfe that the terme whych he had couenaunted with his Wyfe was almoast expired, and thinkinge that they could hardly come by the knowledge of any newes of hym or of his state, beleued verily that his Wyfe was maried agayne, for sorrow whereof he fell into futch melancholy, as he had no luft to eate or drinke, and laying him downe vpon his bed, determined to die: whych so soone as Saladine, (who greatly loued hym) did vnderstand, he came to visitte him, and after that he had (through instantaute requeste) knownen the ocasion of his heauinesse and diseafe, hee blamed him very muchte for that he did no sooner discloffte vnto him his conceipt: And afterwards prayed him to be of good cheere, affurting him if he would, so to prouide as he shoulde be at Pauie, iuft at the terme which he had affigned to his Wyfe: and declared vnto him the order how. Mayster Thorello geuinge credit to the words of Saladine, and hauinge many times hard say, that it was possible, and that the like had bene many times done, began to comfort himselfe, and to vse the company of Saladine, who determined fully vpon his voyage and returne to Pauie. Then Saladine commaunded one of his Nyromancers, (whose science already he had well experienced) that he shoulde deuise the meane how mayster Thorello might be borne to Pauie in one night, vpon a bed: Whereunto the Nyromancer answered that it shoulde be done, but that it behoued for the better doing thereof, that he shoulde be cast into a fleape: And when Saladine had geuen order thereunto, he returned to mayster Thorello, and finding him fully
purposed to be at Pauy if it were poffible at the terme which he had affigned, or if not, to die: sayd thus vnto hym: "Mayfter Thorello, if you do heartely loue your Wyfe and doubt leaft she be maried to an other, God forbid that I shoule stay you by any manner of meanes, bicaufe of all the Women that euer I saw, she is for maners, comely behauior, and decent order of apparell, (not remembering her beauty, which is but a fading flore) mee thyncke moft worthy to bee prayfed and loued. A gladsome thynge it woulde haue beene to mee (fith Fortune fent you hither) that the tyme which you and I haue to luye in this worlde, we myght haue spent together, and lued Lordes of the Kingdome which I poiffe, and if God be minded not to do me that grace, at leaft wyfe fith you be determined either to dye or to returne to Pauie, at the terme which you haue appointed, my great defire is, that I myght haue knownen the fame in tyme, to the intente you myghte haue bene conducted thither wyth futch honour and trayn as your Vertues do deferue: Which fith God wyl not that it bee brought to passe, and that you wyll neades be there frendely, I wyll fende you as I can in manner before expresed." Whereunto maifter Thorello said: "Sir, the effect (bifides your wordes) hath don me suffycient knowledge of your good wyll, which I neuer deferred, and that whysch you told me, I cannot beleue, fo long as Lyfe is in me, and therefore am moft certayne to dye: But fith I am fo determinned, I bafeche you to do that which you haue promifed out of hand, bicaufe to morrow is the laft day of the appoyntment assigned to my wyfe." Saladine said, that for a truth the fame shoule be don: And the next day the Souldan purposing to fende hym the nyght following, he caufed to be made ready in a great hall a very fayre and rych bed, all quilted according to their manner (wyth vlyuet and clothe of gold), and caufed to be layed ouer the fame, a Couerlet wroughte ouer with borders of very great pearles, and rich precious stomes: which euer afterwardes was deemed to be an infinite treasure, and two pillowes fute like vnto that bed: that don, he commaunded that they shoule inuef maifter Thorello, (who now was luftie) with a Sarazine roabe, the richeft and fairest thing that euer anie Man saw, and vpon his head one of his longeft bands, wreathen according to theyr
::

AND SALADINE.

377

manner, and being already late in theEuenyng, hee and diners of
his Barons went into the Chamber wher Mayfter Thorello was, and
being fet down befides him, in weeping wife hee began to fay
" Maifter Thorello, the time of our feparation doth now approche,

and bicaufe that

I

am

not able to accompany you, ne caufe you

to be waited vpon, for the qualitie of the
pafle, I

muft take

am come

my

way which you haue

to

leaue here in this chamber, for which pur-

Wherefore before

byd you farewel, I
betwene vs, that you
do remember me if it be poffible before our dayes do end, after
you haue giuen order to your afFayres in Lombardie, to come
agayne to fee me before I dye, to the end that I beyng reioyced
with your fecond vifitation, may be fatiffied of the pleafure which
I lofe this day for your vntimely haft
and trufting that it fhall
come to paffe, I pray you let it not be tedious vnto you to vifite
me wyth your letters, and to require me in thynges wherein it
may lyke you to commaund, which afluredly I fhall accomplifh
more frankely for you, than for any other liuing man." Maifter
Thorello was not able to retaine teares wherefore to ftaye the
fame, he anfwered him in few woordes, that it was impoflible that
euer hee fhoulde forget his benefites, and his worthy friendfhip
extended vpon him, and that without default he would accomplifli
what he had commaunded, if God did lend him life and leyfure.
Then Saladine louingly imbracing and kiffing him, pouring forth
many teares, bad him farewell, and fo went oute of the chamber
And all the other Noble men afterwards tooke theyr leaue likewife
of him, and departed with Saladine into the hal wher he had
prepared the bed, but being already late, and the Necromancer atpofe I

hither

:

pray you for the loue and friendfhip that

I

is

:

:

tending, and hafting his difpatch, a Phifitian broughte

him a

and ftrengthen
drinke, and made him
him
to
drinke
the
fame:
which being
him in his iorney, caufing
done within a while after he fell a fleepe, and fo fleeping was
borne by the commaundment of Saladine, and layd vpon the fayre
bed, whereupon he placed a rich and goodly crowne of paffinge
pryce and valor, vpon the which he had ingrauen fo plaine an infcription, as afterwards it was knowne that the fame was fent by
beleue that

it

would

Saladine to the wife of maifter Thorello.

fortifie

After that he put a


OF MAISTER THORELLO

ring vpon his finger whych was beset wyth a Diamonde, so thining, as it seeme like a flamyngge Torche, the Value whereof was hard to bee esteemed. Then he caused to bee girte aboute hym, a Sowarde, the furniture and garniishing whereof could not easily be valued: and besides all thys, hee honge vpon hys Necke a Tablet or Brooche so beset wyth Stones, and Pearles, as the lyke was neuer seene. And afterwards he placed on either of hys sides, two exceeding great Golden basens, full of double Ducates, and many cordes of Pearles and rings, girdels, and other things to tedious to reherfe, wherewith he bedecked the place about him. Which done, he kissed him againe, and wylled the Necromancer to make haft. Wherfore incontinently Maister Thorello, and the bed, in the presence of Saladine was caried out of sight and Saladine taried stil, deuing and talkyng of hym amongs his Barons. Maister Thorello being now laid in S. Peter Churche at Panie, according to his requet, with all his Jewels and habilliments aforefayd about him, and yet fast a slepe, the Sexten to ring to Mattens, entred the Church with light in his hand: and chauncing sodenly to efpy the rych Bed, dyd notonlye maruel thereat, but also ran away in great feare. And when the Abbot and the Monkes saw that hee made futch haft away, they were abashed, and aksed the caufe why he ranne so fast? The Sexten tolde them the matter: "Why how now?" sayde the Abbot, "Thou art not futch a Babe, ne yet so newle come vnto the Church, as thou oughtest so lightly to be afrade. But let vs goe and see what bug hath so terribly frayed thee." And then they lighted many Torches: And when the Abbot and his Monkes were entred the Church, they saw that wonderfull rich bed, and the Gentleman sleeping vpon the fame. And as they were in this doubte and feere, beholding the goodly Jewels, and durst not goe neare the bed, it chaunched that maister Thorello awaked, fetchyng a gret fighe. The Monkes so foone as they saw that, and the Abbot with them, ran all away crying out, "God helpe vs, our Lord haue mercy vpon vs." Maister Thorello opened his eyes, and playnly knew by lokyng round about him, that he was in the place where he demaunded to be of Saladine whereof he was very glad, and rising vp, and viewing particularly, what he had about him, albeit he knew before the magnificence of Saladine, now he
thoughte it greater, and better vnderstood the fame than before. But feeynge the Monkes run away, and knowyng the caufe where-
fore, he began to call the Abbot by his name, and intreated hym
not to bee affrayde: For he was Mayster Thorello his Nephew.
The Abbot hearyng that was dryuen into a greater feare, bicause
he was accompted to bee dead diuers moneths before: but after-
wards by diuers arguments, affered that hee was maister Thorello,
and so often called by his name (making a signe of the Croffe) he
went vnto him. To whom maister Thorello sayd: “Whereof be
you a frayd good father? I am alие I thanke God, and from
beyond the Sea returned hyther.” The Abbot (although he had a
great beard, and appareld after the guife of Arabic) croffed hym-
selxe agayne, and was wel affered that it was he. Then hee tooke
hym by the hande, and sayde vnto hym as followeth: “My Sonne
thou art welcome home, and maruell not, that wee were afrayd:
For there is none in all thys Citty, but doth certaynly beleuue that
thou art dead. In so mutch as madame Adalietta thy Wyfe, van-
quishèd with the prayers and threates of hir frinds and kin, agaynʃ
hir will is betrouthed agayne, and this day the espoufals shal be
done. For the mariage, and all the preparation neceʃsary for the
feaʃt, is ready.” Mayʃter Thorello riʃinge out of the rich Bed, and
reiʃyng wyth the Abbot and all his Monks, praied euery of them
not to speake one word of his comminge home, vntill he had done
what he was diʃposèd. Afterwards placing al his rich Jewels in
surety and fauegard, hee diʃcourʃed vnto his vnclę what had
chaunced vnto hym till that time. The Abbot iʃoyfull for his for-
tune, gaue thanks to God. Then mayʃter Thorello demaunʃed
of his vnclę, what he was that was betrouathed to hys Wyfe. The
Abbot toʃłe hym: To whom maʃter Thorello sayd: “Before my
returne be knowen, I am deʃrous to see what Countenaunce my
Wyfe wyl make at the mariage. And therefore, albeiʃt that the
religious doe not vʃe to repayre to fŭch Feaʃtes, yet I praʃ you
for my sake take payne to go thither.” The Abbot aunʃwered that
he would willingly doe so. And so soone as it was Daye, hee
ʃente woorde to the Brydegrome, that he, and a Frenʃe of hys,
woulde bee at the mariage: whereunto the Gentleman aunʃwered,
that he was very glade thereof. When dinner tyme was come, mayster Thorello in the habite and apparel wherein he was, went with the Lord Abbot to the weddinge dinner, where euer of them that saw him, did maruellously beholde hym, but no man knew him, bicaufe the Abbot aunswered them that inquired, that he was a Sarazene, sent Ambaffador from the Souldan to the French Kinge. Mayster Thorello was then placed at a table which was right ouer agaynft his Wyfe, whom he beheld with great pleasure and delight, and perceyued very wel by hir face that she was not well content with that mariage. She likewise beheld him sometimes, not for any knowledge she had of hym, for his great beard and straunge attire, the firme credite and generall opinion also that hee was deade, chiefly hindred it. But when mayster Thorello thought tyme to prove whether she had any remembraunce of him, he secretly conuayed into hys hande, the ring which she gaue him at hys departure, and called a little Boy that wayted vpon hir, and sayd vnto hym: "Go tell the Bryde in my behalfe, that the custome of my countrey is, that when any Straunger (as I am here) is bydden by any new maried woman (as she is now,) for a token of his welcome, she fendeth vnto him the cup wherein she drinketh full of Wyne, whereof after the straunger hath dronke what pleaseth him, he couereth the cup agayne, and fendeth the fame to the Bryde, who drinketh the rest that remayneth." The Page did his message vnto the Bryde, who like a wife Gentlewoman wel brought vp, thinking he had ben some great personage, to declare that he was welcome, commaunded a great cup all gilt, standing before hir, to be washed cleane, and to be filled ful of Wyne, and caried to the Gentleman, which accordingly was don. Mayster Thorello hauing put into hys mouthe the aforesayd ring, secretly let fall the fame into the Cup as he was drinking, not perceyued of any man, to the intent that she drinking the latter draught, might espy the ringe. When he had dronke, he returned the cup vnto the Bryde, who thankfully receyued the fame. And for that the manner of his countrey might be accomplisshed, when the cup was deliuered vnto hir, she vncouered the fame, and pleading the rest of the Wyne, beheld the ring, and without speaking any word, wel
viewed the same, and knowing that it was the very Ring which she
had receyued to maister Thorello, when he departed, tooke it out.
And stedfastly did marke and looke vpnon him, whom she suppos'd
to be a straunger, and already knowinge him, cryed out as though
she had bene draught of hir wittes, throwing downe the Table
before hir: "This is my Lord and husband, this is of trouth Maister
Thorello." And runnynge to the table without respect to hys appa-
rell of Cloth of Gold, or to any thinge that was vpnon the table,
preffinge fo neere him as she could, imbraced him very heard, not
able to remoue hir handes from about his Necke for any thinge that
could bee fayd or done by the company that was there, vntill
mayfter Thorello required hir to forbear for that presenct, for fo
mutch as she shoulde haue leyfure inough to vfe hir further imbrace-
ments. Then shee left him, and contented hir felfe for the tyme:
but the brydale and mariage was wholly troubled and appalled for
that sodayne chaunce, and the most part of the Guefts excedingly
reioyced for the returne of that Noble knight. Then the company
beinge intreated to sit and not to remoue, Maister Thorello re-
heard in open audience what had chaunced vnto him from the
day of his departure vntill that tyme, concludinge with a petition
to the Bridegrome, that had newly espoufed his Wyfe, that he
woulde not be displeased if he tooke hir agayne. The new maried
Gentleman, albeit it greeued hym very fore, and thought himselfe
to be mocked, aunswered liberally and like a Frelde, that it was in
hys power to do wyth hys owne what hee thought beft. The
Gentlewoman drawinge of the Rings and Garland which shee had
receyued of hir newe Husbande, did put vpon hir finger the Ring
which shee founde within the Cup, and likewyse the Crowne that was
sent vnto hir by Saladine: And the whole troupe and assemblie leav-
ing the house where they were, went home with mayster Thorello
and his wyse, and there the kin and frends, and all the Citizens
which haunted the fame, and regarded it for a myracle, were with
long feastinge and great cheare in great ioy and triumph. Mayster
Thorello departing some of his precious Jewels to him that had bene
at the cost of the marriage, likewise to the Lord Abbot and diuers
others, and hauing done Saladine to vnderstand hys happy repayre
home to his Countrey, recommending himselfe for euer to his commandement, liued with his Wyfe afterwards many prosperous yeaeres, v'ing the vertue of curtesie more than euer hee did before. Such was the ende of the troubles of maister Thorello, and hys wel beloued Wyfe, and the recompence of their franke and honest curtesies.
THE TWENTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentleman of meane callinge and reputation, doth fall in loue with Anne, the Queene of Hungarie, whom shee very royally requited.

Following the preceding arguments treated in certayne of the former Nouelles, I wyll now discouer the princely kindnesse and curtefy done to a poore Gentleman, by a Lady of later dayes, Anne the Queene of Hungary. whych Gentleman, though beyonde hys reache to catch what hee aspired, fell in loue with that bountifull and vertuous Gentlewoman, thinkinge (by like) that she in end woulde haue abased her Maiestie, to recline to hys vayne and dotting tranayle. But she like a Queene, not despifinge the poore mans loue, vouchsafed by familiar speche to poure some drops of comfort into his louinge minde, and once to proue, on whom he fixed his fanfie, reached him a Nofegay, and prayed him to bestowe it vpon whom hee liked best. All which familiar dealings she vied, to kepe the poore pacient from despayre, that so highly had placed hym selfe. But in end perceyuinge his continuance, would not reiect and geue hym ouer, or with Scornes and Flouts contemne the Amorous Gentleman: and that longe loue myght gayne some deferred guerdon, shee never left hym vntyll she had preferred him to a Noble office in Spayne. The noble disposition of this chaft and gentle Queene, I thought good to adioyn next to that of maister Thorella and Saladine: who for curtefy and passinge mutuall kindnesse, are worthy of remembrance. And for you noble Dames for a Christall to sharpen your sightes, and viewe the recom pense of loue, done by a Queene of passinge beauty, and yet most chaft and vertuous, that it might somewhat touch your squeymifh stomackes and haughty hearts, and lenifie that corrosive humor, which with frowning face, forceth you to ouerperke your humble suppliants. A helpinge preferuative I hope this Hystory shalbe to imbolden you, in futes and petitions to their prince and soueraygne: An incouragement (I hope) to be mediators for futch, as by seruice and warfare haue confirmed their faythfull
ANNE QUEENE OF HUNGARIE.

deuoirs for defence of their Countrey. Remember the care the Romane matrones had for those that deferred well of their Common wealth: as how they mourned for Lucius Brutus one whole yeres space, for his good reuenge ouer the rauifhers of Lucrece: and for Martius Coriolanus, for hys piety and mothers fake, discharging his Countrey from the enemies siege. Let mistress Paolina of the priuy Chamber to this Queene Anne, render example for preferment of futch as be worthy to be cherifhed and efeemed. O how Liberality befemeth a Queene, no leffe (as one maketh comparifon) than the bright beames of the Sunne, or the twinkling starres in the Firmament. Oh how diligence in Gentlewomen, aduaunced to Princes Chambers, no leffe than the greene leaves to braunched Trees, or dyuers coloured Floures in Nofegayes. So flourishing be the fruities that bud from liberality, and freshe the benefits that succeede of the payneful travaayles sustayned in the futes of serviceable Gentlemen. This Philippo whom the Queene preferred, and liberally rewarded, was a meane Gentleman, but yet learned and well furnisheth with commendable qualities. His deferred aduauncement may stirre vp ech Gentle heart, to merite and ferue in Common wealth. His warninge and other vertues may awake the sluggisWH thinges vnfeemely: His diligence also reuiue the blockish sprites of some that rout their tyme in sluggis sleepe, or waste the day in harlotrie and other filthy exercife. Whole example yf they practife, or imitate futch commendable life as becommeth their eftates, then glory will followe their deeds, as the shadowe doeth the body. Then welfare and liuelihoode abundantly shal bee mynistrd to supply want of patrimonie or defect of parents portion. And thus the Hyftory doth begin. Not long aftereth Queene Anne, the fister of Lewes, that was king of Hungarie, and wife to Ferdinando Archduke of Aufriche, (which at this day is parcel of the kingdome of Hungary and Boeme,) together with the Lady Mary daughter of Philip kynge of Spayne, and wife of the sayd Lewes, went to keepe hir abode, and foiorne in Hifpurge, a Countrey among the Dutch very famous, where many tymes the Court of the Hungarian Prynces longe space remayned. These two Noble Queenes remained within the Palace of king
Maximilian, Emperour at that time elected, which Palace is so neare adjoyning to the Cathedrall Church, as without sight of the people at their pleasure they mighte by a secrete Gallerie passe to the Church to heare divine seruice accustomedly celebrated there. Which use they daily observed with theyr Ladies and Gentlewomen, and other Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court. In which church was made and erected a high place in manner of a Closet gorgeously wrought, and in royall manner apparelled of futch amplitude as it was hable to receyue the whole trayn and company attendent upon the Persons of the two Queens. Now it came to passe that a Gentleman of Cremona in Italy called Philippo di Nicuoli, whiche in those dayes by reason of the recovery of the Duchie of Milane, by the Frenche, departed Lombardie, and went to Hifpurge, and was Secretarie to Signa Andrea Borgo, because he was well learned, and could wryte very faire, and therewithall a proper and very hauingsome man. This yong Gentleman very much frequenting the Church, and feeing the beauty of Queene Anne, to excelle all the rest of the Ladies, adorned and garnished with princely behauior and Queenelyke qualityes, not foreseeeyng (when he beheld hir) the nature of loue, whiche once being possessed, never leaueth the pacient til it hath infedled his state lyke the quality of poyfon, distillinge through the vaynes, euen to the heart. Which louing venim this Gentleman did drinke with the looks of his eyes, to satisfye and content his desired minde by vewinge and intentifie considering hir wonderful beauty, that rapt beyond measure, he was myserably intangled wyth the snares of blind and deceitfull loue, wherewith he was so cruelly inflamed, as he was lyke to sorte out of the bounds of reason and Wyte. And the more he did beholde the hyghnesse of hir Maiesty, and the excellency of so great a Lady, and therewithall did weigh and consider hys base degree and Lignage, and the poore state wherunto frowarde fortune that tyme had brought him, the more he thought hymselfe frustrate and voyde of hope, and the more the perillous flames of loue did aflayle and fire his amorous heart, kindlinge hys inward partes with loue so deeply ingrafted, as it was impossible to be rooted out. Mayster Philippo then in this manner (as you haue heard) knotted and intrapped within the
fillets and laces of love, supposing all labour which hee should impoy to be lost and consumed, thoroughly bent himselfe with all care and diligence to atchieue this hygh and honorable enterpryse, whatsoeuer should come of it: whych effectually he pursed. For alwayes when the Queenes were at church to heare divine service, he Fayled not to bee there. And hauing done his duety-full reverence, whych very comely he could do, he vfed to bestow himselfe dyrectly ouer agaynst hir: where delitinge in the beauty of the Queene whych dayly more and more inflamed his heart, would not depart from thence tyll the Queenes were difposfed to goe. And if perchaunce for some occasion, the Queenes went not to Church, maifter Philippo for all that (were his busineffe neuer fo great and needefull) would vouchsafe at leaft wife to visthe the place, where he was wont to fee his Lady. Sutch is the ordinary force of love that although liberty of fight and talke be depayred from the pacient, yet it doeth hym good to treade in the Steps of that Ground where his Miftrefse doth vffually haunt, or to fee the place vpon whych the eafed hir tender corps, or leaned hir delicate elbowes. Thys young man bayted, and fed in amorous Toyes and Deuyfes, now armed wyth hope, and by and by difarmed by defpayre, reueloued in hys mynde a thoufand thoughts and cogitations. And although he knew that his Ladder had not steps inow to clyme fo hygh, yet from his determined purpose hee was not able to remoue: but rather the more difficult and daungerous hys enterpryse seemed to bee, the more grew defire to prolecture and obieft hymselfe to all daungers. If peraduenture the Queenes for their diport and pastyme were difposfed to walke into the fieldes or gardens of the Citty of Hifpurge, he Fayled not in company of other Courtiers to make one of the troupe, beinge no houre at rest and quiet if he were not in the flight of Queene Anne, or neere the place where shee was. At that time there were many Gentlemen departed from Lumbardy to Hifpurge, which for the moft part followed the Lord Francisco Sforza the second, by whom they hoped when the Duchy of Mylane was recouered, to be re-stored to their countrey. There was alfo Chamberlayne to the sayd Lorde Francisco, one maister Giolamo Borgo of Verona betwene whom and maister Philippo, was very neere frendship and
familiarity. And because it chaunseth very feldome, that fervent louse, can be kept so secrete and couert, but in some part it will discouer it selfe, mayster Borgo easly did perceyue the passion wherewith mayster Philippo was inflamed. And one mayster Philippo Baldo many times being in the company of mayster Borgo and Philippo, did marke and perceiue his louse, and yet was ignorant of the truth, or voyde of coniecture with what Gentlewoman he was inamored. But seeing him contrary to wonted cuftome altered, and from vical mirth transported, fetching many sighes and strayninges from his stomake, and marking how many times he would steale from the company he was in, and withdraw himfelfe alone, to mufe vppon his thoughts, brought thereby into a melancholy and meane estate, haung lost his sleepe, and stomach of eating meate: iudged that the amorous Wormes of louse did bitterly gnaw and teare his heart with the nebs of their forked heades. They three then being vppon a time together, debatinge of diuers thinges amonges themselues, chaunced to fall in argument of louse, and maifter Baldo, and Borgo, the other Gentlemen, sayd to mayster Philippo, how they were wel assured that he was straungly attached with that passion, by marking and considering that new life, which lately he led contrary to former use, intreating him very earnestly, that he would manifeft his louse to them, that were his deere and faythfull frends, tellinge him that as in weighty matters otherwise he was already sure what they were, even so in this he might hardly repose his hope and confidence, promifinge hym all their helpe and favour, if therein their indeuour and travaule might minifter ayde and comfort. Hee then like one rayfed from a trance, or lately reuied from an extaifie, after he had compoied his Countenaunce and Gesture, wyth teares and multitude of sobbes, began to say these woordes: "My wel-beloued freendes, and trufty companions, being right well affured that yee (whose fidelity I haue already proued, and whose secret mouthes be recommended amongs the wife and vertuous), will keepe close and couert the thinges which you shall heare me ytter, as of such importaunce, that if the yong Romane Gentleman Papyrus had been here, for all his silence of graue matters required by hys Mother, I woulde vnnethes haue dyfclofed the fame vnto
hym. Indeede I cannot deny, but must needs confesse that I am in loue, and that very ardently, which I cannot in futch wyse conceale, but that the blinde must needs clearlye and euydently perceyue. And although my mouth would fayne keepe clofe, in what plight my paffions do constrayne my inward affections, yet my face and straung maner of life, which for a certayne tyme and place I haue led, doe witnesse, that I am not the man I was wont to bee. So that if shortly I doe not amend, I truft to arriue to that ende wherunto euer Creature is borne, and that my bitter and paynful life shall take ende, if I may call it a lyfe, and not rather a lyning death: I was resolued and throughly determined, neuer to discouer to any man the caufe of my cruell torment, being not able to manifeft the fame to hir, whom I doe only loue, thinking better by concealinge it through loue, to make humble fute to Lady Atropos, that shee woulde cut of the thred of my dolorous lyfe. Neuerthelesse to you, from whom I ought to keepe nothynge secrete, I wyll dyfgarboyle and vnlace the very Secretes of my Minde, not for that I hope to finde comfort and reliefe, or that my paffions by declaration of them, will lesfon and diminifhe, but that yee, knowinge the occacion of my death, may make report thereof to hir, that is the only mistresse of my life, that shee understandinge the extreme panges of the truest louer that euer liued, may mourne and wayle hys loffe: which thinge if my feely Ghoft may knowe, no doubt where foeuer it do wander, shall receyue great joy and comfort. Be it known vnto you therefore, the first day that myne Eyes behelde the divine beauty and incomparable favor of that superexcellent Lady Queene Anne of Hungary, and that I (more than wyfedom required) did meditate, and consider the singuler behauour and notable curtesie and other innumerable giftses wherewith shee is indued, the fame beyond meaure did fo inflame my heart, that impossible it was for me to quench the feruent loue, or extinguish the leaft parte of my conceyved torment. I haue done what I can to macerate and mortesie my vnbridled desire, but all in vayne: My force and puissance is weake to match with fo mighty an aduerfary. Alas fyres, I knowe what yee will obieeffe agaynfft mee: yee will fay that mine ignobility, my byrth and Stocke be no meete
matches for sutch a perfonage, and that my loue is to highly placed, to sucke reliefe: And the same I do confesse fo wel as you. I do acknowledge my condition and state to base, I confesse that my loue (nay rather I may terme it folly) doth presume beyond the bounds of order: For the first tyme that I felt my selffe wrapped in those Snares, I knewe her to beare the Port amonges the chyefest Queens, and to bee the peereleffe Prynceffe of Chrystendome. Agayne, I knew my selffe the poorest Gentleman of the Worlde, and the moft myserable exile: I thought moreover it to be very unseemly for me to direct my mynde vpon a wight fo honorable, and of so great estate: But who can rayne the Bridle, or prefiue lawes to loue? What is he that in loue hath free wil and choyfe? Truely I beleue no man, bicaufe loue the more it doth seeme to accord in pleasure and delight, the further from the mark he shooteth his bolte, hauing no respect to degree or state. Haue not many excellent and worthy perfonages, yea Dukes, Emperours and Kingses, bin inflamed with the loue of Ladies, and Women of base and vile degree? Haue not moft honorable dames, and Women of greatest renoume despiied the honor of their states, abandoned the company of their husbands, and negleected the loue of their Chyldren, for the ardent loue that they haue borne to men of inferiour sort? All Hiftories be full of examples of that purpofe: The memoryes of our ancenftors be yet in fresh remembrance, whereof if they were ignorant vnto you that be of great experience, I could adouche asfiured teftimony: Yet thus sutch I lay vnto you, that it seeme no newe thing for a man to be ouercome by his owne affectyon: It is not the Nobility of hir state, or for that shee is a Queene, it is not the consideration of one parte or other, that moved me first hereunto: But loue it is, that is of greater force then we our felues bee of, which many tymes maketh that to seeme lawfull, which altogether is vnlawfull, and by subdueing reason maketh the great potentate lorde tributarie to his wyl and pleasure, whose force is farre greater then the lawes of Nature. And albeit that I neuer hope to attayne to prosperous end of this magnifike and stately loue, whych more and more doth seeme infortunate, yet I can not for my Lyfe else where apply the same, or alter it to other place: And confumyng still
through faithful and fervent loure borne to the Queene, I have forced and constrained my self by all possible means to gyue ouer that fond and foolish enterprife, and to place my mynd else where: but mine endeavoure and all my labour and resistance is employed in vayne: Yea and if it were not for feare of eternall damnation, and the losse of my poor afflicted foule (which God forbid) myne owne Handes before this time had ended my desires. I am therefore determined (sith that I can attaine no successe of Loue, and that God doth suffer me to be inspired wyth that most honourable and curteous Lady, beyond all order and effimation) to content my selfe with the sight of those hir fayre and gliftring eyes, farre excelling the sparling glimpse of the Diamonde or Saphire, and to ferue, loure and honour hir, fo long as life doth laft within this feeble corpes: Vpon whole radiant and excelling beautie, my hope shal continually feede: and yet I am not fo far vnoyed of vnderstandinge, but that I do most evidently know none other to be the guide of thys vnmeasurable loure, but folly most extreme.” Vpon the end of those words he let fall many teares, and being flaid with fobbs and sighes he was able to speake no more. And in very deede he that had seene him, would have thought that his heart had bene tormented with most bitter and painfull passions. Now they being very attentive to his pytiful oration, were attached with incredible sorrow, thinking that they had ben in a dreame by hearing of this discours, and ftole by all a while one looke vpon an other, without speaking word: Afterwards comming to themselues, distraughte almoost, for the grete admiration and wonder to heare him speake those words, mayster Girolamo and Baldo, with fauible arguments went about to counsel him to withdraw his fonde and foolishe mind, praying him to place the same elsewher, shewing him the impossibility of hys enterpryse, and the great peril that might succede thereof. But they spake to a man that seemed to be deaf, who replied, that hee neither coulde or would giue over his loue, that had already made fo depe impression, what so euer came of it: Notwythstandyng they ceased not still with sharpe admonitions to beate into his head, the fonde beginnyng of his foolish loue: and not onely at that tyme, but continually when they were together, they dyd theyr
beft by oft repetition of his vayne conceipt, to let him vnder-
stande his manyfeft error: but their labour and friendly leffons
were to no purpose: Wherefore mayster Borgo, determined to
gieue him ouer, and to attende what would succede therof. Mayster
Philippo continuing his pursufe, never fayling to be at church
when he knew the Queues to be ther, at length it chanced that
they began to efpy his loue, for that both of them did mark his
order, gesture and demeanure, and did note his oft frequention
of the places where they continually haunted and his manner in
placyng himselfe at the church directly ouer agaynft them, and
his common vfe in beholding and loking vpon their faces, iudg-
yng thereby that without doubt he was in loue with one of them,
or at leaft with some Gentlewoman of their trayne whereof the
two Queues began to vfe some talk, although not certain vpon
whom his loue was bent. Neuertheleffe they wer defrous to know
the troth, and expected opportunitie somtime to difpolue that doubt.
In the meane while maifter Philippo thought by gazing on their
beauty, to remoue the fire that miserably did consume the fuck
and marow of his bones, feking comfort and relief for his afflicted
heart, the more I say he foughed for cafe, the greater he felt his
payn: And truely all they that ferenly do loue, afpire to that,
which otherwife they would eschue, by figh of them whom
they do loue, not remembering that the more they doe contemplate
the beloued beauty, the more increafeth defire, and with defire
extreme and bitter smart. Maifter Philippo then loft no oc-
casion or time stil to behold Madame the Queene, were it in the
church or courte, or were the dispofed for difport and recreation to
walke abrode. It chaunced now while things wer at this poynct,
the ladies very defrous to know vpon whom maifter Philippo did
expend his loue, that fortune opened vnto them a meane to vnder-
stande the fame: It was then about that time of the yere, where-
in al floures and rofes were by Titans force constringed to adorne
and decke ech gardens and place of pleafure, and with their frag-
rant fnells and odors, to fent the fame in the moneth of May: it
was when the Twinnes were dispozed to fhoud themfelves amongs
the hawthorn boughs and honyfuckles that yeld to euery wyght
greateft flore of delignts, at what time rofes and other floures at
theyr first budding be very rare and scant, sauing in Kings Courtes and prynces Palaces, where futch varieties by art and industrie be most abundant, and all men haue delight to present futch novelties to the principall ladies. Vpon a day Queene Anne had in her hands certayne floures in due order couched in a Nofegay, and for her disport walked vp and down a very fayre and glorious garden, in the company of Queene Mary, and other Ladies and gentlewomen, about that tyme of the day the Sun wareie of trauaille, went to hide him self in the back side of the western mountains, wher amongs other of the Courte was maister Philippo. Queene Anne when she had espyed him, determined to make proufe with what Lady amongs them all, mayster Philippo was in loue, and sporting hir self with softe and pretie walkes vp and downe the garden, pleafantly lefteing with diuerfe there attendant, (as the maner is of like Ladies) with trimme and pleafant talk, at length happed vpone maister Philippo, who although he was in communication with certain Italian Gentlemen, neuertheleff his mynde and eyes were fixed vpone the Queene, that whensoever she appeared before him his eyes and face were so firmely bent vpone hir, as the beholder might easly perceiue, that the Vysage of the Queene was the vndoubted harbourough of his thought. Philippo, feeing the Queene come toward him, did honor hir wyth gentle and dutifull reuerence, in futch humble wife, as hee seemed at hir hands pitifullly to craue mercy. And truely whossoever doth loue with secret and perfect heart, feemeth to vttre more words to his Lady with his eies, than he is able to speake wyth his tongue. The Queene being come vnto him with a grace right graue and demure, sayd vnto him: "Ye Gentleman of Lombardie, yf these floures which we haue in our hands were giuen vnto you liberally to vs at your pleasure, and required to make some curteous prezent of the name to one of vs the ladies here that liked you best, tell mee I pray you, to whether of vs would you giue the name, or what would you do or say? Speake frankly we pray you, and tell youre mynde without respect: for thereby you shal doe to vs very great pleasure, and we shal know to whether of vs you beare your chiefeit loue. For it is not to be supposed, that you being a young man, can spende your time without loue, being a naturall quality in every creature."
When mayster Philippo felt the swete voyce of the Queene plentifully to pierce his eares, and hearde that he was commanded the loue of hir that he loued, not onely to tell whome he louedbest and most intierly, but also hir whom he worshipped and fer in heart, was almost besides hymselfe, such was the tickly ioylitie that he felt in hys heart, whose face was taynted with a thousand colors and what for superfluous loue and ioy, where the like he never tastted before, fell into an extasie, not able render answere. But when he had recovered stomack, so well he coulde with soft and trembling voice, he answered the Queene in this wise: "Sith your maiestie (to whom I yelde myne hum thanks for that curtesie) hath vouchfaced to commaund me (besi the infinite pleaure and honour, for which eternally I shal stare bound to your highnesse) I am ready sincerely and truely to d cloe my mind, being promised by your maiestie in opening of fame, to defere great thanks: Wherfore your pleaure be such I do say then, with all due reuerence, that not onely here thyts tyme, but at al times and places wher it shal please god appoint me, being not able to bestow them in other fort than the be, but wer they more precious and fayre, the more ioyfull I shor bee of them. These floures I say shall of me right humbly presented to your maiestie, not bicaufe you be a Queene and a royal Race (whych notwythstondinge is a great vertue) bicaufe you bee a Phoenix, a rare Lady, and of all the troupe fayref, garnished with infinit gifts, and passinge vertues, for your merites worthy to be honoured wyth farr more excellent gi than thefe simple floures be, as the that (aboue all other Ladh that line at this day) is the honour and onely glory of all wom hoode of our age, as thee that is the Paragon peerelle of vniuerfal worlde." when he had sayd those words, he held peace. The Queene with great delight hearing the ready answere of the yong Gentleman, sayd vnto hym: "And we do you thanks for the great honor and commendation done vs." When she had sayd so, without further talke, she went for vying pleasant talke and sport with diuers that wayted vpon vs. Queene Anne now vnderstode, and so likewise Queene Mary, wh of them the yong Lumbard Gentleman did accept for his fouerai
Lady, whose loue she disdayned not, but in her mynde rather commended, esteming him better than euer she did before: and lyke a discreet and wyfe Lady gaue him infinite prayse. She did not now as other women wont to do, who when they fee themselues of birth more noble, or of degree more ample than their louers be (whych gift they receyue through the faver of the heauens) do not only despife them, but mock them, and their faythfull service, and many tymes with fayned countenance and difsembled words do extol them and fet them vp aloft, and by and by almost with one breath, exchanging their fayned prayse into rebuke, they thrust them downe headlong from the tipe of hope and comfort, to the bottomlesse pit of defpayre: and the fuller she is of floutes, the finer Girle esfeemed. But farre better is she to be regarded, that not findinge in her hart to loue hir futer, will frankly tell him at the firit, that she cannot like hym, nor fashion hir mynde to loue him, and requiring him not to feede his minde with vayne hope, or contrive the tyme with words and lookes, and pray him to feake fome other that can better fansy his perfon than she: And although perchance a man do very fereuently loue a woman, and that it wer great forrow and grief vnto him to bee caft of, and receiue fuch refufall, yet in myne opinion it were leffe griefe openly to receiue that repulfe, than to be fawned vppon, and flattered with fained talke, and for the time choaked with the baite of vayne hope, and afterwards become ridiculou, and gired by the fcorneful. I am affured, that the woman which giueth hir feruant fuch repulfe, shall bee counted mutch more cruel, than MaiftrefTe Helena was to the scholler of Paris, after he was returned from the vnuerfitie to Florence, written by Boccaccio in his Decamerone, and hereafter in place describ'd. But let vs retourne to maifter Philippo, who although hee coulde not imagine ne conceiue the intent, wherfore Queene Anne made that demaund, yet the fame was very deare and acceptable vnto him, vppon the which he neuer thought, but felt great contentation in his mynd, and was more iocund and pleasanter than he was wont to be before. On the other fide the Queene, which was very difcrete and wyfe, when she saw maifter Philippo at the church or other place to make obeyfance vnto hir, very curteously requited the fame, bowing hir head to hir agayn,
(which she neuer vfed but to Barons and Knights of great reputation) declaryng thereby how wel in worth she regarded his reuerence made vnfo hir: Whereat he receiued maruellous pleasure and delight, hoping for none other recompence at hir handes, than continuance of futch curtesies and honourable entertaynement. Amongs certayne Italians that were vppon a Day assembled in the presence chamber of Queene Anne, waiting there vpnon Madonna Barbara the wyfe of Maifter Pietro Martire Stampa, who wyth hir two daughters were gone to salute the two Queenes that were that time together: There was alfo maifter Philippo, with whom Borgo and Baldo reafoned of diuerse matters: And as they wer in talke, both the Queenes came forth, which was the occasion, that al the lords and Gentlemen attended, vppon whose approch, ech man rofe vp, and bareheaded expected whither the Queenes would goe. Queene Anne perceyuing a company of Italians together, left Queene Marie, and went freignt to them, and very gently inquyred of diuerse of the Gentlemen, their names, and of what partes of Italy they were, then she came to the place where they III. were standyng together, and curteously asked firft maifter Girolamo, what his name was, of what countrey, whether he were a Gentleman? To whom reuerently he saide: "that his name was Girolamo Borgo, a Gentleman of Verona." Maifter Baldo likewise being demaunded the same, answered so well as he coulde: "that he was a Gentleman borne, of an auncient houfe in Milane, and that his name was Philippo Baldo." When she had receiued theyr answere with cheerful and smyling countenance she returned to maifter Philippo, inquyryng of him alfo his name and countrey, and whether he were a Gentleman or not? Whom maifter Philippo after his duety done reuerently answered: "Madame, my souerain Lady and only mistrefse, I am a Gentleman, and am called by the name of Philippo dei Nicuoli, of Cremona." The Queene making no further demaundes of any of the other Gentlemen, sayd to Mayster Philippo: "You say true sir, I dare warrant you to be a Gentleman in deede, and see that sayd the contrary, shoule declare himselfe to be voyd of Iudgement what a Gentleman is." She sayde no more, but from thence with Queene Mary and the whole trayne she went to Church. All they that hard the Queene speake thofe
words, dyd wonder, and could not deuife what shee meant by them, notwithstanding each man thought that the Queene bare to maister Philippo singuler good will and fauour. He (as it was his custome) full of diuerfe cogitations, whose head was building of great cities, went to church, bestowing himselfe in his wonted place, reueluing in hys mind the Queene’s words spoken vnto him. And although he could not perceiue to what end that honorable lady had spoken them, yet hee thought that hir maiestie had done him great honour. And verily the humanity and curtsey of a Lady, so excellent and noble is worthy to be extolled with infinite prayes, who being of high estate and lineage, and the wife of a Prince that proceded of the fhirpe Imperial, not only did not difdaine to be beloved of a man of fo base degree, and banished from his own Country, but also with great care and diligence did deuife, and in effect declare that she was the fame whome the Italian yong gentleman did loue as partly it was evidently to bee perceiued, not for other purpose doubtleffe, but to do some Noble deede couenable for the greatneffe of hir estate, and incident to the fervent loue of the amorous yong Gentleman, which afterwaordes in very dede shee accomplisht.

But howe many be there in these dayes, I doe not speake of Queenes and Prynceffes, but of simple and priuate Gentlewomen, that beyng of meane worship, indued with some shew of beautie, be without good conditions and vertue, who seeyng themselves beloved of some Gentlemen, not so enriched with the goods of Fortune as they be, do scorue and mocke them, thynking themselves to good to be loked vpon, or to be once moued of vertuous loue, scorfully calling their face at one side, as though the futers were vnworthy their company? Howe many likewyle be posseffed and ouerwhelmed with pryde by reason Nature more propicious Vnto them then other, be descended of some great parentage, that will accompt a great iniurie done vnto them, if any gentleman except he be rych, do make fute to loue them? Again a great number of women (I speake of them whose minds do not so mutch aspire to fame or honour as they seake their delights and brauerie to be mainteined) bee of this trampe, that they care not whether theyr louers bee discrete, well condicioned, vertuous and gentle, so that
theyr purfles be full of money, or theyr shapes amiable, not waying the valour and good condicions of the minde, ne yet a thousand other qualities that ought to garni fh a Gentleman, whereby all vertuous Gentlemen dayly do growe beautiful, and be enriched wyth greater perfections. Some there be that fixe their minds vpon those, that be of goodly personage, although void of good behauour, louing rather a piece of flesh with two eyes, than an honest man well furnished with vertue. Thynk not yet for all thys, that herein men ordinarily bee more wyfe than women, although they ought to bee accomplisht with greater witte: but to fay the truth, they all be spotted with one kind of pitch, that warfare here in the large campe of this prefent worlde: whereof it commeth to paffe, that light loue as we fee to beare no good foundation, and to haue no longe continuance, euen so the end and conclusion to confume like the beauty of the flooure. And therupon many times it chaunceth, that when loue is not grounded but vpon tranctorie beauty, which doth dissolue like a windy cloude, the little heat thereof doth not wax more hote, but rather congealeth to frost, and many times converseth into hatred and mischiefe moft cruel. A worfe thing yet than this is in common praftice: There be many that wyll needes bee counted and called gentlemen, bycaufe they come of Auncient and Noble race, and being growen vp to man's state, doe appeare in shapes of men, but are altogether without approved manneres, utterly ignorant what the nature of Gentle is, accompltyng themselues to be ioly fellowes, when in company of other as bigge beasts as them selues, they contribue theire time and make their bragges, vaunting that Sutch a woman is at my commaundment, and sutch a man's wyfe I do keepe, sutch a one is my companion's frende: whereby they bryng many women, yea and of the best fort, into flaunder and infamie. Diuerfe Gentlewomen also bee fo fond, and of fo simple diferetion, that although they know and clearely perceyue thys to be true, yet allured with the personages and beauty of sutch Roifters, paffe not to giue the rayne to their vnbridled Iades, not foreseeing lyke ignorant Woodcokes) that in fewe dayes through their own temerity, they incur the common shame of the vulgar people, being pointed at in the fireates as they goe: where sutch as be wyfe and discrete, doe
dayly feare the leaft sulsition that may be conceiued. There is
no woman that is wyfe, but so neare as she can, wil shunne and
auoyde all occacion whereby flaunder may ariye, and will close
vnto hir amongs a number, futch one as can beft pleafe hir fanse,
and as with whome for hys vertue and honefly the purposeth to
match hir felfe in maryage, which is the final ende of all honefly
loue. Howe be it Nature hath not framed euery creature of one
metall, ne yet Minervia infused lyke brayne into euery head. And
truely this our age dothe breede many fayre and worthie Women,
whose condicions bee good and honefly, adorned with comely qua-
lities, the Generofitie, floutneffe and Valoure of whose myndes doe
defere syngular prayle and eflymatyon. And what is hie, chaun-
cyng vpon a curteous and Vertuous Dame, that wyll not gyue
ouer the Loue of all other, to honour and loue hir for euer? But
wee haue digreffed too long from our Hystorye, and therefore,
returnning to the fame agayne, I fay, that Fortune the guide of
maifter Philippo, was fully determined to beftow hir favor vpon
him: For besides that the Queene dearely efteemed his loue, it
seemed that all thyngs wer vnyted and agreed to fort his enterpryfe
to happy succes. The Queene had to her Gouerneffe Madonna
Paola dei Canali, a Gentlewoman of Verona, very aucient and
graue (adauanced to the callying, by Madonna Bianca Maria
Sforza the wyfe of the Emperour Maximilian) whom Queene Anne
requyred dylygently to procure for hir, futch Rithmes in the
Thuufcane language and other Italian workes, as were to be found,
bicaufe hir dyfpoffition was to be conuerfant and familiar in that
tongue, and employed great diligence to learne and exercife the
saine, wherein shes attained futch perfection, as all Italians coulde
very well vnderftande her. Now (as the good lucke of mayfter
Philippo woulde haue it) he that day went to the Courte alone,
continuallye denuifinge if it were poiffible, at al tymes to be in
preffence of the Queene: Whome fo soone as Madonna Paola efpyped,
bicaufe she familiarly knew him went vnto him, and fayd: "My
webloued friend maifter Philippo, bicaufe the Queene hath great
delight to learn our tongue, and therein already hath some
towardneffe, as by hir common speaking of the same you may
perceyue, this mornyng at hir vprifing shee gaue me a great
charge to procure for hir, certayne Italian Rithmes, who besides those bookes in that tongue already prynted, gladly desireth to see some trymme deuises of diuerse learned men that make in oure Daies. specially hir mind is earneftly disposed vpon Rithmes cunningly compoased, whereof I think you have some store by reason of your delight in that exercife: Wherefore I thought good to repayre vnto you, and doe heartily pray you, to make hir Maiefty pertaker of futch as you haue, wherein you shal do hir great and grateful servise, and I shal remain continually bound vnto you: besides that I doe purpose when I present them vnto hir, to make hir priuie that I receyued them at your hands, which bicause of the loue shie beareth to our Natyon, she wyl fauorably accept, and the fame no doubte when opportunitye serueth, liberally reward." Maifter Philippo in curteous wife thanked the gentlewoman, and said, that he was forry he was not able better to satisfie hir request, bicause in that countrey he had small store of futch defired things, neuertheless he would make diligent search, to get so many as were possible to be found, either amongs the Gentlemen that followed the Court, or else where they were to be gotten. In the meane time, he sayd, that he would deliuer thos few hee had, and bring them vnto hir that night, praying hir to commend hym to the good grace, and fauour of hir maiefty. And so he tooke hys leave, and went strayght to hys Lodging, where diligenty he began to search among his writings (the gladdeft man in the Worlde for that occasion offered) and fouunde amonges the fame diuers rithmes which hee thought vnworthy to passe into the handes of so great a Lady, sauing the third Rithme or Chapter, as we commonly call it, made by a notable Doctor of the lawes, and excellent Poet called M. Niccolo Amanio, of Crema, who no doubt for making of vulgar rithmes, thereby expreffing the amorous affections of Louers, was in our time without comparifon. And bicause the fame was so apt for the purpose of mayster Philippo his loue, as could be defired, he wrote the fame fayre (being in deede a very fayre sheete of Paper,) which foundeth to this effect.
ANNE QUEENE OF HUNGARIE.

Quanto piu cresce (Amor) Paspro tormento, &c.
The more (O Loue) thy bitter pangs augment,
Melting by times my fad accented fpreete,
The more to burne I feele my felfe content:
And though ech day a thousande times I fleete
Twixt hope and dreade, all dolour yet and fmart
My glorious proofe of enterprife makes fweete.
The fire fo high which kindled hath myne hart,
As by loue's flames none euer had (I know)
So lofty source of heat in any part,
Sweete then my torments are, sweete is my woe,
Sweete eke of loue the light, sweete the conceyte
From fo high beames, fallen in my breaf, groe.
Sutch power of porte, sutch maiefty moft gret
I tremble to beholde, and do confeffe
My lot to bafe, fo worthy a bliffe to get.
But will herein my Reafon doth fuppreffe,
And thofe fayre eyes, where loue himfelfe ny lies,
Armed with lookes of ioy and gentlenesse,
Lookes that upliftes my foule aboue the Skies,
And in each coafl al clouds expelling cleane,
Do teach ten thousande pathes to Paradife.
My Goddefle braue, Angelicall Sirene,
Fayreneffe it felfe, Dame Beautie's sacred heire:
What mounts of ioy may match my happy paine,
Whofe scaling hope how fo enfue difpeire,
Leues vaunt of thoughts, which once fo highly flew
As honour, all that earth besides doth beare,
Comparde to this, but baggage were to vew.

When Mayfter Philippo had written out thefe verfes, immediately he returned to the court, and caufed Madona Paolo, to be called vnto him by one of the Gromes of the Chamber, to whom he fayd: "Mayftrefle Paola, I haue brought you a ditty, that is very trim and prety, which I pray you deliuer to the Queene, and I will do what I can to get other." Maiftrefle Paola tooke them, and went into the chamber, and findinge the Queene alone, fayd to hir: "Madame, this morninge yee commaunded me to get you some
Italian Rithmes, and vpon inquirie I haue receyued thef few
verse of mayfter Philippo, secretary to the Lord Andrea Borgo,
who hath promisèd to bring me other." The Queene hearing hir
speake thef words, s̆milinge receiued the Paper, and read the
fame: the fenfe whereof she liked very well, thinking that may-
fter Philippo had bene the compositor of the fame, and that
of purpose he had made them for hir, whereby shee was out
of doubt that it was shee that mayster Philippo so fervently
loued, and the better hir opinion was confirmed, becaufe some
of the words tended to the state of hir perfonage. And
considering the valor of hys minde, she prayèd Nature, for
that in a man so basely borne shee had sowne the seeds of a
gentlemanlike and noble heart, greatly to hir self commendynge
the yong man. Then she conferred the whole matter wyth hir
Coozin Queene Marie: which was a wyfe and comely Ladye, and
vpon that loue they vfed many discourses, more and more hauing
in regard the behaviour of that yong Gentleman. Queene Anne
determined, when conueniently shee might, to rendre to mayster
Philippo, for his great loue condigne rewarde: and studying
fīll how to requite his curteſie, ever when shee maister Phi-
ippo, shee vfed him with her wonted chere and grateful salu-
tation (which thinge onely euery honest gentleman ought to expect
that is indued wyth reaſon at the hands of a pryncesse so noble and
worthy, as a rewarde sufficent, the inequality of the parties con-
sidered.) Whereof mayster Philippo was the best contented man
of the world, and durft not hope for greater guerdon, continuing
his wonted lyfe fed hym self fil̄l with that beloved fight, in futch
wyfe as many Gentlemen enuied the favor borne vnto hime by the
Queene, who for none other caufe did vs̆e that curtefie, but for that
shee him to be Vertuous and well learned: continually eteem-
yng futch as wyth learning or other gyftes of the mynd were
indewd: and when occasion chaunced, shee voucheſafed to be-
towe vpon them curteous intertainment and lyberall rewardes.
It fortuned about that time that the Emperor Maximilian died,
Charles his nephew (which was the Emperor Charles, the fifth,) then byeng in Spayne, by reaſon of whose death the Lord Andrea
Borgo, purpoſed to send one of hys Gentlemen to kyng Charles,
for the confirmation of that lyuing he enjoyed, giuen vnto him for his long and faithfull seruyce by the said Maximilian. Amongst al he chose this maister Philippo, for his wisdome and experience in such affayres. Which don, he went to the Queenes, and gave them to vnderstand that shortly he would send his Secretary into Spayne, and told them the cause, humbly praying them both, that they would write their favorable letters in his behalf. The Queenes knowing what payne and travaell hee had sustayned in the servise of Maximilian, and what daungers he had passed, were very willing therunto. Now Queene Anne remembred that she had convenient time to recompence maister Philippo for hys long loue born vnto hir: and because she was the moft curteous Lady of the world, and therwithal moft bountifull and liberal, and not onely with comely talke and gesture: but also in effecte willing to do them good, whome she honoured in minde, concluded what to do, requiring the Lord Andrea to send his Secretary vnto hir, when he was ready to depart, for that besides Letters, she would by mouth commit certain businesse for hir to do in the Courte of Spayne. When the Lord Andrea was gone, Queene Anne began to devise with the other Queene what she mighte doe for maister Philippo, who prayed Queene Anne, after she had commended him in letters, to suffer hir to make the ende and conclusion of the same. Whereupon both the Queenes wrote many letters into Spayne, to king Charles, and to the Lord Chancellour and other Noble men, whome they thought to bee apte and mete ministers to bring the effect of their letters to passe. When the Lord Andrea had put all thinges in order for that dispatch, he sayd to maister Philippo, (which was now furnisshed with all thyngs necessary and apertinent for that long voyage:) "Philippo, remembre this day that you goe to Queene Anne, and tell her, that I require you to come vnto hir, to know if she would commaund you any seruice to the Catholike Kynge, where you shall humbly offer your seruice, in what it pleafeth hir to commaunde: you shall also tel hir what things I haue giuen vnto you in charge by speciall commission." Neuer could more pleasant talke found into the eares of maister Philippo, than this, who for that he shoule bothe see and speake vnto his Lady before his
departure, and for that she would commit vnto him the doing of hir affayres in Spayne, was the gladdeste and best contented man of the world. The houre come when he thought good to repayre to the Queene, he went vnto hir, and gaue hir to vnderstand by one of the priuy Chamber, that he was attendant there to know hir pleafure. The Queene certifyed of his readiness to depart, by and by toke order that he should come into hir chamber, who entring the fame with trembling heart, and after he had done hys humble reverence, with great feare and bashfulnesse, said: "Pleafeth your Maieftie, that my Lorde Borgo, being about to addreffe mee hys Secretarie into Spayne, to the Catholike King there, hath com- manded me to wayte vpon your hyghnesse, to knowe your pleasure for certain affayres to be don for your maiesty: Wherfore may it pleafe the fame to employ mee, your humble fervante, I shall thinke my selfe the happiest man of the world: A thing so bleffed and joyfull vnto me, as no benefite or commoditie can render vnto me greater felicitie." Then he dyfclosed vnto her the rest of his meffage, which was committed vnto hym by his lord and maifter. The Queene beholding hym wyth mery countenaunce gently sayd vnto hym: "And we for the trust we haue in you to do our me- ssage and other affayres in Spayne, haue requyred you to come hither: And bycaufe we knowyng you to be a Gentleman, and affured that you wyll gladly do your endeuour in any thing that may do vs pleafure, haue chofen you aboue any other. Our wyl and commaundement is, that fyrfst you delayuer thefe letters, con- taining matters of great importance to the hands of the catholike King, and that you do our humble commendations to his maiesty. Then al the rest accordingly as they be directed, which principally aboue other things we pray you to dispatch vpon your arriuall: And if we bee able to do you any pleafure, eyther for your prefer- ment, or for other commodity, spare not to write vnto vs your mynd, and (we doe affure you) the same shalbe eefctually accom- plyshed, to the uttermoft of our endeuour, whch we do of our owne motion frankly offfe vnto you, in consideration of the fidelitie, worthinesse, and honefte behauour alwayes knowne to be in you." Mayfter Philippo hearynge thefe wordes was replenyshed with futch ioy, as he thought hymselfe rapt into
the heauens, and his heart felt sutch pleasure, as it seemed to flote in some depe fea of delights: and after the best maner he coulde, thanked hir for hir curtefe: and albeit (he sayd) that hee knew hymselfe vnworthy of that favor, yet he dedicated the same to hir commandement, surrendering hymselfe as a flane and faythful servant to hir majeftye. Then vppon his knees, to his great contentation he kissed hir hands, which of hir felfe she offered vnto him, and then reuerently he toke his leave. When hee was gone oute of the chamber, he met with the Queene's Coferer, that attended for him, who taking him afide, did put into his hand a purse with 500. crowns, and the maister of the horffe prefented vnto him a very goodly and beautifull horffe, wherewith maister Philippo was so well pleaed, as he was like to leape out of his skin for ioy. Then he toke his iorney and arrived at the Courte in Spayne, where at oportunity, he deliuered his Letters to King Charles, and accomplisshed other buines and meffage prescribed vnto him by Queene Annew: And when he had dispatchted the Queene's other letters, he attended the buinesse of his Lord Andrea Borgo. The king purufed the Contentes of the letters sent vnto him by his fiftier and kynfwoman, fo did the Lord Chaunceellour, (which at that time was the Lord Mercurino Gattinara,) and other, to whom the Queenes had written: whereby the king was solicited to f tand good Lord, to the Lorde Andrea Borgo, and likewise exhorted him to be beneficall to mayster Phylippo, whom for his good condicions and experience they had sent vnto him in the ambaflage. Vpon a day the king mowed by the Lorde Chancellor, caufed maister Philippo to come before him, to whom kneeling before his majefty, the king faid thofe words: "The testimony and report fo honorably made of you by the two Queenes, from whom you brought vs letters, and the hope which we haue to find you a faithful and profitable fevant, and to be correpondent in effeete to the tenor of those letters, moueth vs to accepte you into the nombre of one of our Secretaries, wherein before our preface you shal sweare vnto vs to be faithfull and true." Mai-fter Philippo that expected for no sutch dignite, maruellde at the Kyng's wordes, and there by oth ministred vnto hym by the Lorde Chauncellour was receyued into his fervice, and exercyfed that
office, in singular favor of the King, to the great satisfaction of all men. And after that King Charles was elected Emperor, knowing the experience that maister Philippo had in the affairs of Italy, and specially in Lombardie, he commytted vnto hym all matters touchyng the state of the region, which so happily came to passe to maister Philippo, as besides the ornaments of vertue and wisdom, he acquyred greate riches, and yet he continually servued and worshipped the Queene as his noble patronesse and worthy mystrefe. Tel me now ye faire Ladies and Gentlewomen! What shall we say of the princely behauoir and noble disposition of this Queene? Truly in my judgment, she deferueth that prayse and commendation that may be attributed to the moste excellente Ladye of the Worlde, who neuer gau over her faythful seruant tyl she had bountifully with her owne hands and commendation, rendred vnto hym a most Pryncefully rewarde. And as the sunne in beautye and bryghtneffe doeth furmounte the other furniture of the Skies, euen so Magnyfycence, and liberality in eeh Lady doth excell all other vertues, specially in those personages, that kepe the state of Princes. But to conclude, mete and requisite it is, that yee beautify this most curtuous and liberall Queene wyth due prayses: For surely in my judgement, if all Women would confer theyr heades and Witteds together, and deuise Hymnes and Sonnets of Liberality, they can neuer sufficiently be able to celebrate the prayle and glory of thys Queene.
THE TWENTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The gentle and just act of Alexander de Medices Duke of Florence, upon a Gentleman whom he favoured, who having ravished the Daughter of a poore Myller, caused him to marry hir, for the greater honour and celebration whereof, he appoynted hir a rich and honourable Dowry.

If the Force of Vertue were apparant at the sight of eye, it would be deemed to be of leffe value than the greatnesse thereof deserueth (for sundry causes rising in the mindes of men) and that by performinge the little which rest for th'entier perfection of hir whole united glory. Now because that hir effects be diuerse, and that dyuerfly they be vfed, the examples also of futch diversitie, do variate and make diuerse the affections of men: some to follow that quality and other that part, proceeding from the whole and perfect body of vertue, which hath caused some to win the price of modesty and temperance in their deedes, other full of magnanimity (not familliar to many) have resifted the assaults of fortune. Many other haue embraced that only honor which is the nourice of ech good act, whereby they haue either wel ruled the state of free citties, or guided the armies of mighty Monarchs. And futch whilom the cities of Rome, Athenes, Sparta, and the auncient Monarchs of the Medes, Persians, and the Assyrians did see. I wil omit a good company of the sagne and wyse, which haue appayfed the troubles of Citties, the inquietations of Palaces, the cries of Judgement feates, the diffimulation and deceptfull flatteries of Courts, the carefull griefs which the householder by gouernment of his house and family doth sustaine and feele, of purpose more frankly to retire to the study of sapience, which alone is able to make a man happy, and worthy to be partaker of the diuinity. But aboue al, I wil prayse him which not subject to the law lyueth neverthelesse like him that is most thrall thereunto, or without respect of bloude or frendship shall exercise iustice vpon his dearest and best beloued: as in olde time Manlius and Torquatus at Rome, the people of Athenes towards
one Timagoras, who beyond the duty of the Ambassador of a frank city, fell down on his knees and worshipped the Persian king. And in our time the Marquize of Ferrara, by doing to death his own son for adultery committed with his mother in Law. And yet Justice may favour of some cruelty, which rather turneth to shame than praise: as Ihon Maria Visconte Duke of Milan, when he caused a covetous priest to be buried quick with the corps of him whom he had refused to bury without money, the history whereof is hereafter remembred. So as mediocrity of punishment ought to be yoked with the rigor of law, for the mitigation thereof. And beholde, wherefore the great Dictator Iulius Cæsar lovd better to gayn the heart of his enemies with mercy, than vanquish and bring them to obedience with maffy manacles and guies of Iron. Moreover in our age Alphonfus of Aragon (the true Sampler of a Just and Righteous Prynce) dyd not hee esteeme (when hee stragyhtly besieged Gaïette) the Victory to be more Glorious and better gotten, which is done by composition and gentleness, than the bloody conquest, colored wyth teares and bloud of a poore simeple people? And truly princes, and great lordes, specially they which newly (without succession receyued from their ancestors) arrive to the government of some commonwealth, ought continually to have before their eies, an honest seuerity for the holines of the law, and a graues mildnesse, to moderat the rigour of their dutie: For by that meanes right is maintained, the heart of man is won, so well as by violence: and the state of government taketh fo good footing, as the winde of no sedition afterwards can remove the same, beinge founded vpon a fure stone, and framed vpon a rock durable for a long tyme. Whereof wee have an example of fresh memory of a kinde act, full both of wyfedome and of gentle seuerity, in a prynce of our time, who wythout effusion of bloud punished with rigor enough, a trespasse committed, and sweetely remitted the payne vpon him, which merited grieuous, nay mortall punishment, as at large you shall see by the discourse that followeth. Alexander de Medices, favoured by the Church of Rome, (and armed with the Papall standard) was hee that first with great actiuity and Wisedome inued the Seniory of Florence, immediatly vfurping the name, title, and prerogatiue of Duke. The same
albeit upon the prime face he was odious to the people of Florence, wroth for losing of their ancient liberty, and displeasant to the Senatours and potentates, to see them seules deprived of the soueraignty of Iustice, and of the authority they had to command over all the Citizens, yet for all that was he indued wyth so good qualities, and gouerned so wel his principality, as that which at the beginning was termed Tyranny, was receyued as iust domination, and that which was supposed to be abused by force, seemed to be done as it were by lawfull succesion. And they counted themselves happy (when they saw their lucke to bee fuch as their common wealth must needs obey the advice and pleasure of one Prince alone) to have a soueraygn lord, so wife, so vertuous and so ful of curtefie: and albeit in all other things he shewed himselfe prayfe worthy, noble, and of gentle kinde, yet in this he vanquished himselfe in himselfe, by that indifferent justice, which made him wonderful, denying the fame to none, and in no one iote shewed himselfe parcial to any, which thought by hym to bee supported in their follies: And that which is more to bee wondered in him, and doth augment the prayfe of his integrity in judgement, was, that he punished in another the thynge, which hee ought to have pardoned and remitted, hee hymselfe beinge attaynted wyth that dyseafe. But this good Duke applied to Reason, to tyme, and to the Graunity of the fact and quality of the offended perfones: For where the greatnesse of a deede surpassteth all occasion of pardon and mercy, there the Prynce, Judge, or Magistrate ought to dispoyle and put of his sweeteft affections, to apparell himselfe with rigor, whereby reacheth the knyfe into the hand of the Ruler, of purpose that pryuate familiaritie, do not in ende rayfe in the subiec'ts hearte a contempte of superiours, and unbryled licence, lawlesse to lync at their pleasure. Now the thing which I meane to tell, consifteth in the profe of a rare and exquisit Prynce, which seldome or neuer harboureth in yong age, the heates whereof can not but with greate difficultie, feel the coldnesse and correction of reason: And likewise the caufes from whence woldome's force procede, do rest in longe experience of things, whereof men waxe olde in ripeneffe of witte, and ther deeds become worthy of prayfe. This Duke Alexander ordred so wel his estates, and
kept such a goodly and plentiful Court, as the same gave place to no Prynce of Italy, how great or rich so euer it was, which noble court he kept as well for his owne garde and honor as to shew the naturall stoutnesse of his corage, not vffing for all that any insolencie or vnfeemely dealing agaynst the haynous and auncient enemies of his familie. Amongs his gallant troupe of Courtiers, which ordinarily attended, there was a Florentine gentleman, very neare the Duke, and the beste beeloud of them all. This yong Gentleman had a Manor hard by Florence, where he was very well and stately lodged, which caused him many times to forfake the City, wyth two of his companions, to recreate himself in that pleasant place. It chaunced vpon a time, he being in his fieldish house, besides the which there was a Myll, the maister of the sayd Myll had a passing fayre daughter, whom thys Gentleman did well marke and beholde, and with hir beauty became straungely in loue, in whom also appeared some Noble port, that exceed the bloud and race whereof she came. But what? The heauens be not to spare distributers of theyr gifts, but sometimes they diuide them with the leaft measure, and at some other times in equall weight or greatest heape, to them that be of the basest forte and popular degree, so wel, as to the greatest and of most noble race. Rome somtimes hath seen a bondman and slave, somtimes a Runnegate's sonne, for his wit and Courage to beare the Scepter in his hand, and to decide the caufes of that lofty people, who by fleyghts and practifes aspired the Empyre of the whole worlde. And he that within our Fathers remembrance desyreth to knowe what great Timberlane of Tartarie was, the afnonishment and ruine of all the Eaft partes, shall well perceyue that his originall forted from the vulgar forte, and from the lowest degree that was amongst all estates: whereby must be confessed, that the goodnesse of nature is futch and so great, as she will helpe hir nourice children (whatsoeuer they be,) the best she can: Not that I meane to infer hereby, but that the bloud of Predecessors, with the institution of their Posterity, must augmenth the force of the spirit, and accomplishe that more sincerely whereunto nature hath giuen a beginninge. Now to com to our purpose, this yong Courtier, taken and chayned in the bands of loue, fettred and
clogged wyth the Beauty and good grace of that Countrey wench, forethought the meanes how he myght inioy the thyng after which hee hoped. To loue hir he deemed it vnworthy of his degree: And yet he knew hir to be futch (by report of many) as had a very good Wit, tongue at wyll, and which is more esteemed, a Paragon and mirror of chaste life and modesty. Which tormented this amorous Mounfier beyond measure, and yet changd not his affection, affuring himfelfe that at length he should atayne th' end of his desires, and glut that his vnfaatile hunger, which preffed him from day to day to gather the foote and fauorous frute which Louers fo egerly fue for at maydens handes of semblable age, who then was betweene xvi. and xvii. yeares. This Louer dyd to vnderftand to hys companions his griefe and frensie, who for the fame, afayed by all meanes, to make him forget it, telling hym that it was unfaeemely for a Gentleman of his accompt, to make himfelfe a faule to the people, which woulde come to paft if they knew how vnfaicretely hee had placed hys loue: and that there were a number of fayre and honest gentlewomen more to whom besides conuenably and with greater contenation he might addrefs the fame. But he which mutch leffe faw, than blind loue himfelfe that was his guid, and he that was more bare of reafon and advice than the Poets fayne Cupido to be naked of apparell, would not harken to the good counsel, which his companions gaue him, but rather fayd that it was loft time for them to vte futch fpech, for he had rather dy, and endure all the mocks and fcoffs of the world, than lofe the moft delicate pray (in his mynde,) that could chaunce into the hands of man, adding moreouer, that the homelyneffe and rudenes of the country, had not fo mutch anoyd his new beloued, but she deferued for hir beauty to be compared with the greatest Minion and faieft attyred gentlewoman of the City: For this mayden had but the ornament and mynionneffe which nature had enlarged, where other artificially force by trumperies, to vfurpe that which the heauens deny them. "Touching her vertue let that paft in filence, fithens that she" (quod he fighinge) "is to chaft and vertuous for one whom I would chooe to daly withal: My defire is not to make hir a Lucrece, or some of thofe auncient Matrones, which in elder yeres builded
the temple of woman’s Fortune at Rome.’” The companions of this lover seeing how he was bent, promised him what they were able to doe, for accomplishment of his will, for which he thanked them very heartely, offering like duty, where fortune should prepare the profe of their affection and neede of his amorous service: In the mean time, conceiving in his minde some new devises, which so soone as he had found out was not able to be brought to passe; and knowing that the duke feldome would haue him out of his fight, began to invent lyes, doing hym to understand that he had necessary occasion, for a certain time, to remain and be at his country house. The duke which loued him, and who thought that either he had som secret sicknes, or els som wench which he was loth to discouer before his companions, gave him leave for a month, which so pleased this amorous Gentleman, as he kept for ioye, and was not able to rest one hour before he had found out his frends and companions, to mount on horfback to visit hir that had vnder hir power and obeifance the best portion of him, which was his hart and his moft secret thought. When he was come to his Countrey house, hee began to falkke abrode, and daunce a round about the Mill, where his beloued did dwell, who was not fo foolish, but by and by suspected whereunto those goings and comings of the Pilgrim tended, and for what pray he led his Dogs in leafe, and caused so many Nets and Cords to be displayed by hunders of every age and fex, who to discouer the Countrey, aflayde by beating the Bushes, to take the Beaffe at forme: For which cause she alfo for hir part, began to fly the snares of those Byrders, and the raunging of the Dogs that vented after hir, strayinge not from the house of the good man hir Father: whereof this poore lover conceyued great dispayre, not knowinge by what meanes he might roufe the Game after which he hunted, ne finde the meanes to do hir vnderstand his playnts and vnmeaured griefe of heart, the firme loue, and sincere mynde wherewith he was fo earneftly bent, both to obay and loue hir aboue all other: And that which moft of all increas’d his payne, was that of fo great a troupe of messages whych he had fent, with giftes and promiffes the better to atchieue his purpose, no one was able to take place or force (neuer fo little) the chaftity of that sober and modest mayde. It
chaunced one day as this Gentleman was walking a long a wode fide newly felled, hard adjoyning to his houfe, by whych there was a cleare and goodly fountayne shadowed betweene two thick and lofty Maple trees, the Myller's Daughter went thither for water, and as she had set downe hir payles vpon the fountaine brink, hir Louer came vnto hir, little thinking of futch a joyful meeting, which hewel declared by these words: "Prayfed be God, that when I hoped leaft of this good hap, he hath fent me hither, to fee the onely substauence of my ioy." Then turninge his face towards the mayden, sayd vnto her: "Is it true that thou art heere (or do I dreame) and fo neare to him that moft defyre to gratyfie thee in any thynge wherewyth it may plesafe thee to commaunde him? Wilt thou not haue pity vpon the paynes and griefs which continually I indure for the extreme Ioue I beare thee?" And sayinge fo, he would haue imbraced hir. But the mayde, which cared no more for his flatteries, than before she did for his prefents and meffages seeing the fame to tend to nothing else but to hir ruine and great dishonor, wyth f stout countenaunce, and by hir lively colour declaring the chaft and vertuous motion of her bloud, sayd to this valiant Gentleman: "How now, syr, do you thinke that the vileneffe of myne apparell, holdeth leffe vertue, than is vnder the rich and fumptuous Ornaments of greatest Ladies? Do you suppose that my bringing vp hath bred in me fuch grofe bloud, as for your only pleafure, I shoulde corrupt the perfection of my minde, and blot the honour which hitherto fo carefully I haue kept and religiously preferued? Be sure that sooner death shall separate the foule from my body, than willingly I would suffer the ouerthrow and violation of my virginity. It is not the part of fuch a Gentleman as you be, thus to espy and subtily purfue vs poore Countrey maydens to charme vs with your fleights and guiltfull talke: It is not the duety of a Gentleman to subborne fuch vaunte currors to difcouer and put in perill, the honour of chaft maydens and honest Wyues, as heretofore you haue done to me. It ought to suffice, that you haue recayed shame by repulfe of your meffengers, and not to come your felfe to bee partaker of their Confusion." "And that is it, that ought to move you sweete heart" (aunfwered he) "to take pitty vpon my grieue, fo playnly seeing that vnfaynedly I doe
loue you, and that my loue is so well planted, as rather had I suffer death, than occasion the least offence that may displeafe you: Only I beleeche you, not to shew your selfe so cruel vnto him, who disdaining all other, hath made you so frank an offer both of himselfe and of al that he hath to commaund." The maide not greatly trusting his words, feared that he prolonged time to make hir stay till hys servants came to steale hir away: And therefore without further answer, the taking vp hir payles, and half running till hir came at the Myll, escaped his hands, telling hir father no part of that talk betwene them: who began already to doubt the treason, deuided by the Gentleman, agaynft the pudicicy of his daughter, vnto whom he never disclofed his suspicion, were it that he knew hir to be vertuous enongh, and constant to refust the luring assaults of loue, or confidred the imbecillity of our flesh, and the malice of the same, which dayly afpieth things thereunto defended, and by lawes limitted and prefcribed, which lawes it ought not to excede, and yet thereof it witheth the abolishment. The Gentleman seeing that the mayden had forfaken hym, and little esteemed hys amorous onseft, outraged for loue, and chaufd wyth choler, spake these wordes to hymselfe: "Ah foolish and daftard louer, what didst thou meane when thou hadst hir fo neere thee, in place fo commodious, where shee durst not gaynesay thee that thou didst no better pursu ehir? And what knowest thou if shee came of purpose to ease thy payne and to finish thy troublesome travels? Sutely I suppose she did so, but that shame and dutty forced hir to use those wordes, to make mee thinke, that lyghtly shee would not bee overcome by persuasions: And put the case that it were not so, who could haue let mee to take by force that, whereunto willingly shee would not accorde: But what is shee to be revenged of such an injury? She is for conclusion the daughter of a Miller, and may make hir vaunte, that she hath mocked a Gentleman, who beinge alone wyth hir, and burning wyth loue, durst not staunche hys thirst (although full dry) fo neere the fountayne: And by God (sayd he rising from a greene banke neere the fountayne's side) if I dy therefore, I wyll haue it eyther by loue or force." In this wicked and tyrannicall mynde, hie returned to hys place, where his com-
companions seeing him so out of quiet, sayd vnto him: "Is thys the guife of a gentle minde, to abafe it selfe to the purfute of so simple a Wench? Doe not you know the malice of that fexe, and the guiles wherewith thole Serpents poyfon men? Care you so little for a woman as he doth for you, and then wyll she imbrace you and make mutch of you, whose only fudy is (which I beleewe) to frame hirfelfe agaynst all that, for which humble fute is made: But admit, that women hath some qualities to draw men to loue them, to honour and ferue them, which if it fo be truely that office and dutifull deuoyre ought to be imployed in feruice of them, that be honourable and in spirite and judgement of gentle kinde, which no doubt wil counteruayle the merite of futch a futer: And certeifie I am of opinion that a man may vayneuely con-fume a yere or two in purfute and feruice of this mealy Countrey wench, so well as adrecffe his loue in the obedience of some fayre and honest Gentlewoman: which courteously and with some fauour wyll recompence, the trauayles of hir fernaunt, where that rude and fottifh gyrle, by pryde will vaunt and looke a loft, at the honor done vnto hir, despite them whose worthynesse the knoweth not, and whom neyther she nor the beft of her feede, be worthy to ferue in any refpect: will you know then what I thinke beft for you to do? myne aduice is then, that one of these eueninges, she be truffed vp in a Maile and brought hither, or in some place els where you thinke good, that you may enjoy at pleafure the beauty of hir whom you do praife and wonder at fo mutch: And afterwards let hir disembre if she luft, and make a Jewel of hir chas-tity when she hath not to triumph ouer you, by bearing away the victory of your purfutes." "Ah my good friend," aunfwered the desperate louer, "how rightly you touch the moft daungerous place of al my wound, and how foweraygne a falue and plaifter you apply thereunto: I had thought truly to intreate you of that, whereof euen now you haue made the ouerture, but fearing to offend you, or to mutch vfurpe vpon your friendship, rather had I suffer a death continual, than rayfe one point of offence, or dis-contentation in them, which fo frankly haue offred to doe me pleafure, whereof (by God's affiftaunce) I hope to be acquitted with all duety and office of frendfhip. Now refeth it, to put in
proofe, the effect of your deuife, and that so shortly as I can: In like manner you see that the terme of my heere abode, will shortly expire, and if wee be once at the Courte, impossible it is for me to recover so good occasion, and peraduenture she will be maried, or some other shall cary away the pray after which I haue beaten the Bunfh.” The plot then of this mayden’s rape, was resouled vpon, and the first efpied occasion taken: But the lover which feared least this heat of his companions would coole, follicited them so much, as the execution was ordayned the following night: which they did, not so much for the pleurs of their frend, to whom in such adventurues they ought to deny all helpe, (fith friendship ought not to passe, Sed usq; ad aras, as Pericles the Athenian sayd, so far as was sufferable by the lawes of God) as for that they wer of nature of the self fame tramp, which their passionate companion was, and would haue made no conscience to enterpryse the fame for themselues, although the other had not tolde them his affections: These bee the Fruicthes of vnruled Youth, wherein onely the Verdure and greenesse of the Age beareth greatest way, the wyll whereof reason can not restrayne, which sooner reclineth to the carnall part, than to that which tendeth to the honest repaft and contentment of the mynd. The next night, they three accompanied with v. or vi. seruauntes (so honest as theyr maifters) gaue the onset in armure and weapons well appointed to defende and hurt, if any resistance were made, they might be able to repell their aduerfaries. Thus about two of the cocke in the night they came to the Mil, the Heauens hauyng throwne their mantell ouer the vaporeus earthe, and dymmed hir Face with theyr vayle obscure and darke, and yet not such, but that the ayre was cloudye cleere: and when no man doubted of so great offence, and of such vnhappy rape, they brake into the poore Miller’s House, beatwene whose armes they toke away his daughter deare, and almost dead for feare, piteously began to cry for help, defending herself so well as she could from those Theeues and Murderers. The defolate father raging with no leffe fury then the Hircanian Tigre, when bir Faucons be kyld or taken away, ran first to one, and then to another, to stay them from carying of hir away, for whom they came. In the end the amorous rauisher of
his daughter sayd vnto hym: "Father, Father, I aduyfe thee to get thee hence if thou loue thy lyfe, for thy force is too weake to reftt fo many, the leaft of whome is able to coole this thy foolish heart and choler, for the whych I would be forie, for the great Loue I bære vnto thy daughter, who (I hope) before the depart my company, shal haue wherewith to be contented: and thou caufe to pacifye this thine immoderate rage, which in vayne thou yalteft forth agaynst this troupe." "Ah falfe Knaue and theefe," (sayd the honest pore man) "it is thou then, which by thine infamous filthinesse and infaciable knauery, doest dishonor the commendable fame of my daughter, and by like meanes shortnest the hoped yeres of me hir poore vnhappy father, looinge through thy wickednesse, the staffe and stay of myne olde aged life? Thynkeft thou Traytor, that liuing till this day (for all my pouertye) in reputation of an honest Man, in myne olde Dayes will become an vnshamefaft and yle Minifter and Chapman of my daughter's maidenhoode and virginity? No knaue thinke not that I forget the wrong receiued of thee, for which by some meanes or other, I wyll purchase iuif reuenge vpon thee or thyne?" The Gentleman caryng little or nothing for the old man's wordes, hauyng in his hand his defired spoyle, commanded his Men to marche before with the Mayden, leaving behind the poore olde Man which thundred against them a thoufand bitter cursifes, threatening and reuyling them, by all the termes he could deuife, deſirous (as I think) to haue them turne backe to kyll him. But thereunto they gane fo little heede, as when he wyllde them to leauue his daughter behynde them: to whome the amorous courtier addressing himselfe, began to kylle hir, and affaued by all meanes with pleaufant Woorde and many sweete promiffes to comfort hir: but the poore Wenche knowyng full well, that they wente about to play the Butchers wyth her Chaftitye, and to commyt Murder wyth the floure of hir Virginity, began to cry fo piteouſly with dolorous voice, as she would haue moued to compaitson the hardeft Harte that euer were, excepte the Harte of hym which craued nothyng more than the spoyle of that his sweeteft Enimy. When the poore Wenche law hir Vertue ready to be spoyled by one, who (not in Maryage ioyned) wente aboute to vyolate and posſee the
fame, and knewe that afterwa^es he woulde vaunte hymselffe
for the Victoye of such a precious prysce: “Alas (quod she) is it
poissible that the Souerayne Iustycye of God can abyde a Myfchye
fo greate and cursed, and that the Voyce of a poore Wretche
afflicted Mayde cannot be heard in the presence of the Myghty
Lord aboue? Why may not I nowe rather suffer Death, than
the Infamy whych I see to wander before myne Eyes? O the
good olde Man my deare and louing Father, how farre better had
it bene for thee to have layne mee wyth thy Dagger, bethene
the Handes of these most wycked Theuces, than to let mee goe
to bee the praye of those my Foes that seeke the spoyle of Vertue,
and the blotte of thy reputation. O happy a hundred hundred
tymes bee yee, whych haue already passed the inequitable tract
of Death when ye were in cradle, and I poore vnhappy Wench
no leffe bleffed had I bene if pertaker of your Ioy, where now
I reft alyue to feele the smarte and Anguih of that Death
more egre to support, than that whych deuydeth the body and
foule.” The Gentleman offended with those complaunts, beganne
to threaten, that bee woulde make hir forget hir disordered
behauiour, sayinge that shee must change an other tune, and
that hir plaints were to no purpofe amongst them which cared
not, nor yet were bent to stay vpon hir Womanlye teares,
Lamentations and cries. The poore Mayden hearinge there resolu-
tion, and seeing that shee vaynely dysparckled hir Voyce into the
Ayre, began to holde hir peace, whych caused the Louer to speake
vnto hir thse worde: “And what my Wench? Doft thou thinke
it firauenge, that for the heate of loue I beare to thee that I should
force such violence? Alas it is not malyce nor euill wyll that
caueth me to doe the fame, it is loue whych cannot bee inclosed,
but muft needes breake forth to manye fte his force. Ah that thou
hadeft felt, what I doe suffer and indure for loue of thee. I beleue
then thou wouldest not bee fo hard hearted, but haue pitty vpon
the grieve whereof thou shouuldest have proued the vehement.”
Whereunto the mayde aunswered nothinge but Tearing and Syghes,
wringing hir Armes and Handes, and sometymes makinge Warre
vpon hir fayre Hayre. But all these Feminine Waylinges nothinge
mooued thys Gallant, and leffe Remooued hys former defire to haue
VOL. II.
hir, which hee atchieued in disposed of hir Teeth, so foone as hee arryued at his owne House. The remnaunt of the Night they lay together, where hee vied hir wyth all futch kynde of flatteringe and louinge Speech, as a Louer (of longe tyme) a Suter could deuife to do to hir, whom at length he dyd Poffiefe. Now all these flatteringe Follies tended onely to make hir his owne, to keepe hir in hys Countrey Houfe for hys Pleasure. Shee that for hir Age (as before is sayd) was of condition Sage, and of gentle mynde, began subtilely to difemble and fayne to take Pleasure in that which was to hir more bitter than any Aloes or Woode of Myrrha, and more agaynst hir heart than remembrance of Death, whych fyll hir wyfhed for remedy of hir gryefe, and Voluntaryly woulde haue killed her felse lyke a Lucrece, if the feare of God, and dreadfull losse of Body and Soule, had not turned hir mynde, and alfo hoped in God that the Rauyfher should repayre the fault whych he committed, and beare the penaunce for his temerity, whereof shee was no whit deceyued, as yee shall perceyue, by that which presently doth follow. Now whilst the Rauyfher tooke his pleasure wyth his Rape, the miserable father made the Ayre to found with his complaints, accusing fortune for letting the Whoriff vvarlet fo to passe, wythout doing him to feele the lustinesse of hys age, and the force that yet reafted in his furrowed face, and corpse withered with length of yeares. In the end knowing that his playnts, curfes, and defire were throwne forth in vayne, perceiuing alfo his force vnequal to deale with futch an Ennimy, and to get agayne by violence hys fholne Daughter, or to recouer hir by that means whereby she was taken away, he determined the next day to go and complaine to the Duke: and vpon that determination he layd him downe to fpeepe vnder the trees, which ioyned to the fountayne, where sometimes the Courtier had communed with his daughter. And seeing that the Element began to to shewe some splendent hue Interpaled with coulours of White, Yealow, and Red, Signes proceedinge the risinge of fresh Aurora, started from his fleepe and tooke his way to Florence, whither he came, vpon the openinge of the Citty Gates. Then going to the Palace of the Duke, he tarried vntill he saw the Prynce goe forth to feruice. The good man seeing him of whom he attended to receyue succour, fauour, and iustice, began to treat,
DUKE OF FLORENCE.

and rage for remembrance of his receyued wronge, and was ashamed to see himself in place not accustomed: and although it grieved his heart wyth hardy speach to prehume in presence of so many, yet the iuft anger and desire of vengeance emboldened hym to mutch, as kneelinge vpon his knees before the Maiefty of the Duke, aloud he speake thefe woordes: “Alas (my Soueraygne Lord) if euer your grace had pity vpon a defolate man, full of dispayre, I humbly befeech the fame that now you do regard the mifery which on euer fide affayleth me. Haue pity vpon the poyeury of that vnfortunate olde man agaynft whom one bath done futch wrong, as I hope by force of your vertue and accustomed iustice, you wil not leaue a fin fo detestable without delerued punishment, for refpeft of mifchiefes that may infue where futch wickedneffe shalbe diffembled without due correction.” Sayinge fo, the great teares ran downe his hory Bearde, and by reafon of his interrupted fighes and continual foibles, the panting of his stomack might easily haue bene perceiued all riueld for age, and Sunneburned with heate and continual Countrey tramaile: and that which moved most the flanders by, was the ruefull loke of the good old man, who caffing his lookes heare and there, beheld eche one with his holowe and dolorous Eyes, in futch wife as if he had not spoken any word, his countenance would haue moued the Lords to haue compassion vpon his mifery, and his teares were of futch force, as the Duke which was a wyfe man, and who meafured thinges by reafon’s guide, prouided with wifedome, and foreseeinge not without timely iudgement, would know the caufe whych made that man fo to make his plaint, and notwithstanding affailed (with what fupfition I know not) would not haue him openly to tel his tale, but leading him aside, he fayd vnto him: “My frend, albeit that greeuous faultes of great importance, ought grieuously and openly to be corrected, yet it chaunceth oftentimes, that he which in a heate and choler doth execution for the guylt (although that iufly after he hath difgeofted his rage, at leaffure hee repenteth his rigor and ouer fodaine feuerite,) offence being naturall in man, may sometyme (where flaunder is not evident) by mild and mercyfull meanes forget the fame without infringing or violating the holy and ciuial confitutions of Lawmakers. I speake thus mutch bicaue
my heart doeth throbbe that some of my house haue don some filthy fault against thee or some of thine. Now I would not that they openlye should be flaundered, and yet leffe pretend I to leave their faultes vnpuished, specially stuch as by whole offensive cryme the common peace is molested, wherein I desyre, that my People shoule lyue. For which purpose God hath constituted Princes and Potestates as shepheardes and guides of hys flocke, to the ende that the Tyrannicall fury of the vitiuous, mighte not destroy, deuoure and scatter the impotente flock, of no valoure if it be forfaken and lefte forlorne by the mighty Armes of Pryncipalities and Monarchyes. A singuler modeitie doubtlesse, and an incredible example of Clemencye in hym, whome hys Cytyzens thoughte to be a Tyrant and vnjust usurper of a free Segnyorye, who so priuily and with stuch familiarity, as the Friend could with of his companion, hearkened to the cause of the poore Countrey man, and moreover hys modeitie so great, as hee would it not to bee knowne what fault it was, or elze that the offenders shoulde publiquely bee accused, offering for all that to be the reuenger of the wronge done vnto the poore, and the punisher of the injury exercised agaynst the defolate, a worke certainly worthy of a true Chryftian Prince, and which establiseth kinldomes decayed, conferueth those that be, rendring the Prynce to be beloued of God, and feared of his Subieets. The poore olde man seeing the Duke in so good mynde, and that accordingly hee demanded to know the wronge done vnto him, the Name of the factor, and that also he had promised him his help and ryghtfull correction due vnto the defuered fault, the good olde man I say conceiuing courage, recited from poynent to poynnte the whole discourse of the rape, and the violence done, vpon hys poore vertuous Daughter, declaring besides the name and surname of those which accompanied the Gentleman, the author of that conspiracy, who (as we haue already sayd) was one that was in greatest favor with the Duke: who notwithstanding the Loue that he bare to the accused, hearing the vnworthinesse of a deede so execrable, said: "As God liueth this is a detestable facte, and well desuereth a sharpe and cruell punishment: Notwithstanding freend, take good heede that thou doest not mistake the fame, by accusing one for an other, for the Gentleman whom thou hafte named
to be the rauisher of thy daughter, is of all men deemed to bee very honest, and doe well assure thee that if I finde thee a lyer, thy heade shall anfwere for example to eche falfe accufer and flaunderer in time to come. But if the matter be fo true as thou haft fayde, I promise thee by the faith I beare to God, fo wel to redrefs thy wrong, as thou shalt haue caufe to be thoroughly satif¬fiied with my iuftice.” To whom the good olde man thus anſwered: “My Lord the matter is fo true, as at this day hee keepeth my Daughter (like a common triumfet) in his house. And if it please your highneffe to fend thither, you fhall know that I do not falfeely accuse or vtter lying woordes before you, my Lord and Prynce, in prefence of whom as before the mynifter and Lyeuetenaunte of God, Man oughte not to fpeake but truely and relige¬ouſly,” “Sith it is fo,” fayd the Duke, “get thee home to thy house, where God willing, I will be this day at dinner, but take hede vpon thy life, thou fay nothing to any man what fo euer he be: for the reft let me alone, I will provide according to reaſon.” The good man almoft fo glad for his good exploit, as the day before he was frowful for his losſe, joyfully went home to his homely house and Countrye Cabane, whych he caufe to be made ready fo wel as hee could, attending the comming of his deliuerer, succor, support, and judge, who when he had heard fervice, commanded his Horfe to be made ready: “For (fayd he) I heare fay there is a wylye Boare haunting hereby, fo well lodged as is poſſible to fee: wee wyll goe thyther to wake hym from his fpeepe and eafe, and vtfe that paſtime til our dinner be ready.” So departing from Florence, he rode ftraight vnto the Mil wher his dinner was prepared by hys Seruauntes. There he dined very soberly, and vſing fewe woords vnto his company, fate fil al penſiue, mufing vpon that he had to doe: For on the one fide the grauitie of the faéte moued him rigorouſly to chaſtífe him which had committed the fame. On the other fide the loine which he bare him (mollifying his heart) made him change his minde, and to moderate his fentence. The Prynce’s minde, thus wandering beetwene loine and rigor, one brought him worde that the Dogs had rouside the greatest Hart that euer he fawe: which newes pleafeed him very mutch, for by that meanes he fent away the multitude of his Gentlemen to follow
the chase, retaining with him his most familiar friends, and those
that were of his privy and secrete counsell, whom he would to be
witnesses of that which he intended to doe, and causynge his hoast
to come before him, he sayd: "My friend, thou must brynge vs
to the place whereof thys Mornynge thou toldest me, that I may di-
charge my promyse." The Courtyers wondred at those Wordes.
ignoraunt whereunto the same were spoken: but the good Man
whole Heart leapt for joy, as already feelynge some greate Benefyte
at Hand, and Honoure prepared for the beautyfyinge of hys Houfe,
seeynge the Duke on Horfebacke, ran befides hym in steade of hys
Laiekey, wyth whome the Prynce held mutch pleafant talke all
along the way as they wente togethyer, but they had not gone farre,
but the Gentleman the Rauifher, wyth his Companyons, vnnder-
standing that the Duke hunted there aboutes, came to doe hym
reverence: and his Fortune was futch, as he nor any of his frends
perceyued the olde man, by meanes whereof they nothing sus-
petted what did infue. For that caufe the saide Rauifher fayd to his
prince: "My Lord, if fortune had fo mutch fauored me, as I mighte
have known of your commyng into these quarters, I would have
doon my dutie to entertaine you, not as appertayneth to the great-
nesse of your excellency, but according to the ability of the leaft,
and yet the most obedient of your fervants." To whom the Duke
difsembling his anger fayd: "Sir, I dined here hard by within
my tents, not knowing that your house was fo neare vs: but fith
that I haue met you vpon your owne Marches and Confines, I
wyll not goe hence before I fee your lodging: for fo farre as I can
judge by the outwarde parte of this goodly building, me thinkes
the workman hath not forgotten any thing that should serve for
the fettynge forth and ornament of this parte of the houfe, which
for the quantity is one of the fairest plottes that I haue feene." So
approching the Cafell the Duke lyghted to view the com-
modities of the place, and specially the image, for whych alone hee
was departed from his City, whereof the Mayfter of the Houfe
(dronke with the fodaine pleafure to fee the Duke there) thought
nothyng. So defcending into the bafe Court, they saw a Marble
fountaine that discharged the water in foure greate gutters, recei-
ued by foure naked Nimphes, and by them poured into Vefells,
richely wrought with Damafkyne, where was an armed Knyght, lying vnder an hyghe and broade tree, that ouershadowed the Fountaine: And hard by, they espied a lyttle doore which shewed the way into so singulare and well planted a Garden, as euer the delycious and pleafant Gardens were of Alcinoe: For in the fame (byfides the Artyfciall Workemanfhyppe, and ordinary Trauell of the Gardener) Nature produced foure Fountaynes in the foure Corners, makyng the Place and plaine of Garden equally parted in fouresquare forme. Now thefe fountaynes watered all the fayre knots of the fame, wythout any payne to the Gardener, except to open certayne little Conduicts, whereby the water fpange and ran to what part he thought it needfull. I will heere leave to speake of the Trees and fruictes deuided in fume forme order, the Laberynthes fubtilely and finely wrought, the sweete Herbers yelding fuch contenction to the eye, as if the Duke had not refpected the wrong done to the Miller's daughter, the gentlenesse of the mayor of the houfe, and the singularity of the place, perchaunce might haue made him forget himselfe within that little earthly Paradife. And to perforrne the excellency of that Garden, the workings hand and industry of man, holpen by the benefite of Nature, had formed within the Ground wherein were bestowed a number of Antiquities, and wherein the immortal voice of an Eccho anfwered their talke with a triple founde in that profound and earthly place: which mone the Duke to call the Gentleman vnto him, vnto whom he fayd: "If it bee fo, that the rest of the houfe doe match wyth that whych I haue already feene, I am out of doubt it is one of the fayrest and moft delectable houfes at thys day within the compaffe of all Italy. Wherefore my Frende, I pray thee that wee may fe the whole, both for the contenction of our Mindes, and alfo that I may make some vaunt that I haue feene the rarest and beft furnifhed little Houfe that is within the iurifdiction of Florence." The Gentleman bathed in eafe and full of pleafure, feeyng that the Duke lyked fo well his Houfe, brought hym from chamber to chamber, which was enryched eyther with flately tapiffarie of Turkey making, or with riche Tables diuinely wrought, vtenfils fo neate and fit, as the Duke coulde caft his eye vpon none of them, but he was driuen into
an admiration and Wonder. And the further he went, the greater hee faie the increase, and almost a Regeneration, or as I may say, a newe Byrth of rare thinges, which made the littleneffe of the Place more Stately and wonderfull: Wherefore hee greatly esteemed hym in his Mynde whych had deuyfed the Magnificence of futch a Furnyture. After then that hee had visited the Portals, Galleries, Parlers, Chambers, Garrets, Wardrobes, Clofets, and chiefeft Romes of that houfe, they came into a Gallerie, which had a direct prospect vpon the Garden, at the end wherof there was a chamber shut, ouer which fuch Antike and Imboffed worke, as it was maruell to behold, and vpon the garden fide in like workemanship, yee mighte haue viewed a troupe of Nympheis (a long the fide of a woode adjoyning vpon a great Riuier) flying from an hird of Satires, that made as though they would haue ouerrunne them: a pleasure it was to fee their gaping mouthes, their eyes fixed vpon the place where their clouen-footed pursuters were, and the countenance of them, which fo well expreffed theire feare, as there wanted nothing but speache. Moreover a better sight it was to beholde the Satire Bucks, with dyfplayed fide, and their fyngers pointings at the haft of thofe pore fearfull runawayes, as though they mocked theire fadaine flyghte. Within a while after ye might haue feene Hercules lyeinge a Bed with his wife, towards whom a Faunus came thinking to enjoy the beauty and embracements of the leaping dame: But fayrer it was to fee how that strong Amphitritonian gauie him the mocke, and ftrained him fo hard, as he thought his belly would burfte. The Duke beholding as he thought, the Fayrefh Chamber of the houfe fo shut, by and by fufpected the truth of the caufe: For the Gentleman knowing the comming of the Duke, had withdrawn his woman into the fame for that it was the moft secrete of his houfe, and the furdeft from all ordinary feruice. Vpon furmiſe the Duke demaunded wherefore that Chamber was not opened fo wel as the rest: "I fuppofe the fame to be your treaure houfe?" (quod hee) "and the florehoufe of your moft delicate things: We pray you let vs looke into it." "My Lord" (fayd the Gentleman) "the place is to farre out of order, at this time to fhou your grace: Moreover I knowe not where the Keyes be, for thys
morning the keeper of my house is gone into the city, and I can
not tell to whom he hath deluyered them." The Duke which
heard the end of his excuse, not accepting the same for the pryce
which the Courtier woulde and thoughte to haue folde it, was sure
then of that which before he did suspéct. Wherefore with furious
countenaunce he sayd vnto him: "Goe too, goe too, either with
the key, or without the Key, let this door be opened, that I may
see all thy secretes within." The rauifher seeing the Duke to be
earnest, could not tell at the first Face, of what Woode to make his
arrowes, stode stille astonned, and was furpryfed wyth a newe feare.
In the end notwythstanckyng, playinge the good fellowe, hee went
vynto the Duke, in whose eare smiylinge hee whispered (becaufe he
knew right well that the Duke was an indifferent good companion,
and loued so well his neighbor's Wyfe, as his owne:) and sayd:
"My Lord there is a pretie wench within, whome I do kepe, and
would not thewe hir to any lyuing man but to you." "That is
the caufe I ake" (sayd the duke) "let vs fee hir that I may gene
judgement of hir beauty, and tell you whither shee bee worth the
keeping or not." The mayster of the house opened the chamber
dore, thinking to haue gained mutch, and supposd to infinuate
himselfe the better into the fauer of the Duke, but immediately hee
faw himselfe farre deceued of his accomt. For the rauifhed and
shamefully maiden comming forth of the Chamber with hir hayre
about hir eyes, and hir garments berent and torne, hir stomake and
breast all naked and discouered, hir Face and Eyes all blubbered
wyth Teares, lyke a desperate woman threw hir felte at the Prince's
feete, crying out: "Ah (my lord) beholde heere and haue pity
vpon the mooste vnfortunate Wench of all most wretched caytyfe
Women, who shamefully and Trayterously hath bene abused and
defloured by him, whych impudently dareth to bryng you into the
place the wytnesse of hys abhominable and wycked Lyfe." The
Duke feeing this fight, and hauing compassion vpon the Maiden,
turned his face towards the Gentleman and bys Companyons
(which by chance wer come thither, as the Duke was entred into
the Gallerie) not with milde and pleafant countenaunce as hee fhwed
from the beginning, but with a looke so graue and feuere, as
the hardieft of the company could not tell what to do, or what an-
were to make hym. Upon them than began the ryghteous Prynce to vomit his dyspleasure, sayinge: "Is this the innobling of the Bloud whereof thou art descend, to raufhe thy Neyghbors and my subieçtes Daughters, that duetyfully lyue vnder myne obey lance and protection? Doest thou thus abuse the familiaritie whych hytherto I haue fhewed vnto thee? Thinkeft thou that the Lawes be peruerd together with the chaunge of the common Wealth of Florence? No, I affure thee, for fo long as the Soule shal abyde within my body, I will be he that shal pursue the wycked wyth all extremitie, and shall not indure the oppreffyon of the pore, enough afflicted with their own proper milery. O God could I haue thought that a Gentleman of my Houfe, woulde haue bene fo prodigall of his honour, as to foyle hys Hands fo fil thyly by raufhing of them which ought to be required, and to dishonour them in place where their Vertue ought to shine for generall example? I cannot tell what stayeth me from cutting thofe curfed Heads of yours from of your foulders like arrant Traytors and Theues as you be. Get ye hence, ye infamous villaynes and beaftly Ruffians, the troublers of your Neyghbors ref, and the fpoylers of the fame of hir, that is more worth than all ye together.” Then speaking to the Mayde hee fayd: “Rife vp my wench, and on me refofe thy comfort, for I promife the by the faith of a Gentleman, that I will do thee futch reafon, and vfe thee fo vprightly as bothe my Conscience shal be quieted, thou contented, and thine honour restored for the wrong and injury whych it hath receiued of thefe Gallantes.” And by and by he commanded the Miller to come before him, and all thofe whom he had brought wyth hym to afift his doings, before whom he caufed to be brought both the raufhed maiden, and the condemned of the rape: vnto whom he faid: “This is the pray my friends that I fought after, which I haue taken without toyles, nets, or chaunting of the Dogs. Beholde, I pray you the Honoure whych my Houfeholde Seruauntes doe vnto my Houfe, who ouerrunne the Symple Countrey People, and raufhe theyr Daughters betweene the Armes of theyr propre parentes, who breake, beate downe, and ouerthrowe the Doores of theyr Houfes, that under the Lawes of our City and ought to enioy lyke Pryuiledge of Lybertye and
Franchyze. If one respeche (whych I wyll not dyfclose) dyd not impeache and stay mee, I would doe futch cruell iustice vpon the offenders as the pofterity shoulde make report thereof. Notwithstanding it shal suffife that they receiue this shame before you all, by seeing themselfes vanquished of a crime, which for expiation and revenge, deferoseth most shamefull death, and to receeue of mee for proffe of mercy, an vndeferued pardon of their fault: with condition neuerthelesse that thou (speaking to the Gentleman Rauiuer) shalt take this mayden to Wyfe, for otherwyse thou art not able to repayre the honour thou haft taken from hir) and shalt loue hir fo dearely, as fondly heeretofore she was beloved of thee, to eseeeme and loue hir fo much, as if she were the very sister of me the Duke of Florence, who commaundeth thee for the raunome and redemption of thy head, presently to mary hir. I will moreouer, and ordayne by reaoun of hir father's pouerty, that for the wrong whiche he hath receyued of you three, that his daughter shall bee indowd wyth two thousand Crownes by him that marrieth hir, and with a thousand of eyther of the two other, to th' entent that if hir husband dy (wythout heire,) she haue wherewith honestly to mayntayne hir degree, and the honest port of hir honfe. And hereof I will that without delay a contract be made, and a publike instrument of good record inrolled, swearing once agayn before thee, that if I vnderstand, thou vfe her otherwise, than a Wyfe ought to bee of hir husband, I will deale futch punishment and correction ouer thee, as all men in time to come shal take example." The Gentleman which expected no better meede than death, ioyfull of that sentence, fell downe prostrate before the Duke in signe of confente, and the lyke did his Companions. But the ioy of the Miller and his daughter cannot be expreseed, who extolled the vertue and iustice of their Prynce vp into the heauens: to whom with futch humility they rendred theyr humble thanks, as he would doe that saw himselfe in so great calamity, and brought to futch dishonour as earst they were feene to be, by meanes of him that acknowledgew one of them for his sonne, and the other for hir lawfull Spoufe. Thus was the mariage consummat in presence of the Duke, with so great ioye, and content of all partes, as there was rage and trouble for the Rape of the
Bryde. The Duke being returned to Florence, the Brute of this act incontinently was disparkled almost throughout the Region of Italy, and this judgement no leffe prayfed, than the sentence which Kynge Solomon gaue vpon the Controuersie of the two Harlots for the liuing childe, which eyther of them claimed for hir owne. And for this caufe was hee extolled aboue any other Prynce or Lorde that in tymes past did commaund or rule the Common wealth wythin the Countrey of Thuftcan. In thys wyse that modesty made him worthy of the Principality, which almost against all ryght he had vfurt, and of a prayse whych shall no leffe continue, than the Memory of man is able to extende the fame from one generation to an other, and which those that be Couetous of the prayse of a Prince fo vertuous, iust and modeft, shal not cease to illustrate and gloriously aduaunce him in open eyudence, to the ende that hys like may exercife like things, or of greater confequence, by not sufferinge venemous and vnprouitable hearbs to grow within the Garden of their Common wealth. Wythin the which, a little mildew or vntimely rayne, is able to marre and corrupt all the good Seedes and Plantes sowen, and grifted there before: For commonly wicked Weedes and Baftard Impes take deeper roote than thofe that beare a good and fauorous fruict, for conservacion whereof, the diligent husbandman impoyeth his labour through-out all the Seafons of the yeare.

END OF VOL. II.